

C 4918
56479 SL

REPRODUCED FROM THE COPY IN THE
HENRY E. HUNTINGTON LIBRARY

FOR REFERENCE ONLY. NOT FOR REPRODUCTION

C 4918
56479 SL

REPRODUCED FROM THE COPY IN THE
HENRY E. HUNTINGTON LIBRARY

FOR REFERENCE ONLY. NOT FOR REPRODUCTION

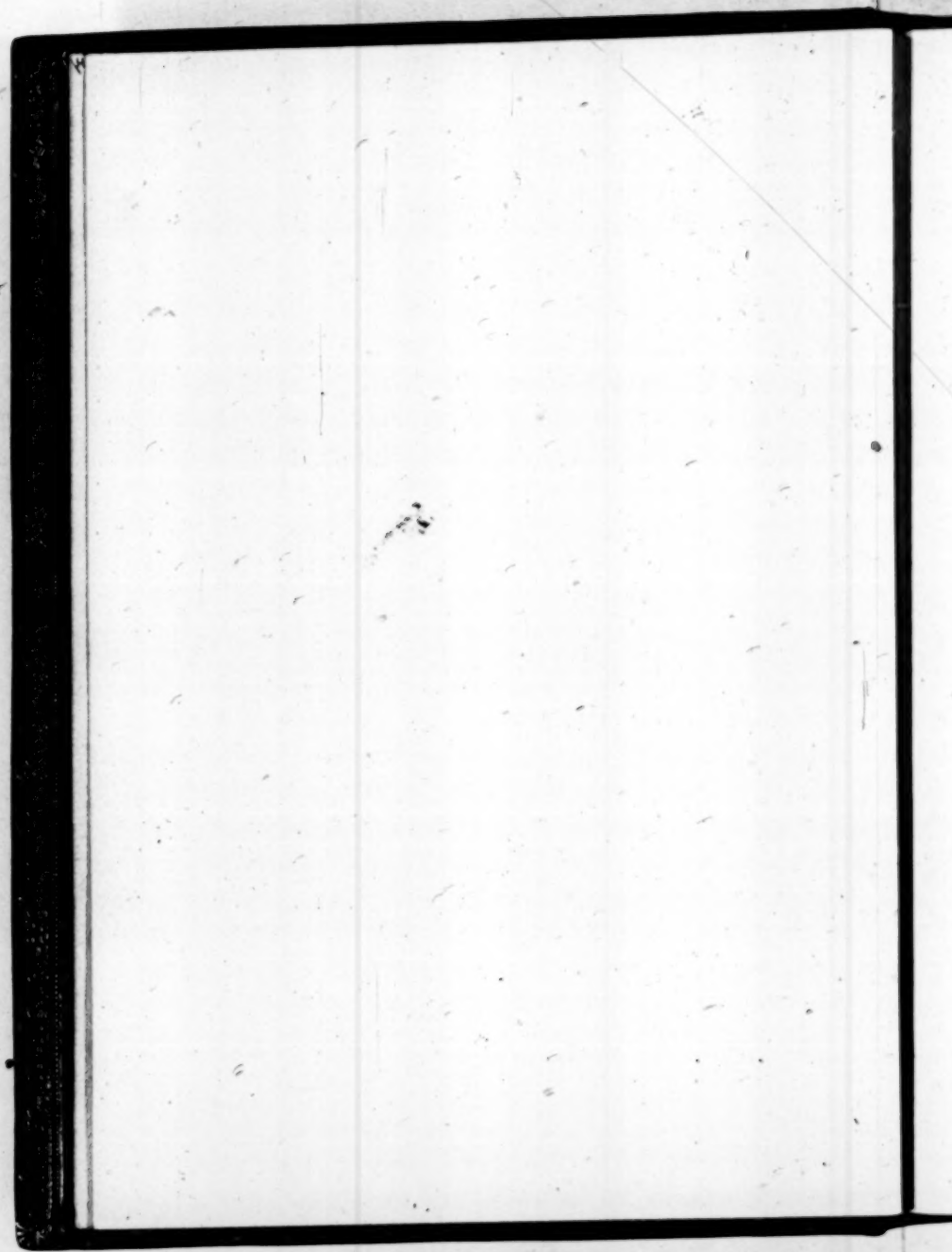
THE
TRAVELS
OF
PERSILES
AND
SIGISMUNDA.

A Northern History.

Wherein, amongst the variable
Fortunes of the Prince of *Thule*, and this
Princess of *Frisland*, are interlaced many
Witty Discourses, Morall, Politicall,
and Delightfull.

The first Copie, beeing written in Spanish ;
translated afterward into French ; and
now, last, into English.

LONDON,
Printed by *H. L.* for *M. L.* and are to be sold at
the signe of the Bishops head, in *Pauls*
Church-yard. 1619.





TRAVELS

2

1

10

10



TO THE RIGHT
HONOVABLE, AND
my singular good Lord, *Philip*,
Lord *Stanhope*, Baron of
Shelford.

Right Honourable:

THIS Translation falling into my hands by chance, not knowing whose labor hath brought it to light; as I thought it fittest for the Presse: so I did not thinke anie one more worthy, vnder the Patronage of
A. 3 whose

The Epistle Dedicatory.

whose Name it might passe securely, then your Honors: Vnto whom my humble, and dutifull loue obligeth mee, not alone to offer this vnto your Honours fauourable acceptance, but also all the indeuours of your humble seruant

ML.



To the Reader.

How hast here, Reader, the effects of Importunity & Idlenesse. For, I must confesse, Importunity could not preuaile alone, although I was much pressed. But, considering, that *Præstat nugas agere, quam nihil agere*, I haue giuen it birth in this language; not doubting, but the variety thereof may rob some houres from thy untimely sleep; and the seriousness of it, diuert Idlenesse from bringing-foorth worse effects. Neither is it altogether so light, but that thou maist sometimes play the Bee.

The Authour is a Spaniard; whose stile becomes him well, in his own mouth: and his Works of this kinde, haue rayed his name, and approued his spirit; not alone in his owne Country, but in others. If it any way please thee, thou hast it; but knowe, rather by a kinde of inforcement, then willingly.

Farewell.



THE
LIBRARY OF THE
MUSEUM OF NATURAL HISTORY
AND
ZOOLOGY
OF THE
CITY OF LONDON



THE HISTORIE
OF THE FORTVNES
and painefull aduentures of No-
ble *Perfiles* Prince of Thule, and of
the faire *Sigismunda* Princeffe of
Erieseland.

The first Booke.

CHAP. I.

*How Corcicurbo the Barbarian drawes, out of a deepe dun-
geon, a young man endued with extreame beauty, and after
suffers shipwracke.*



At the mouth of a deepe dungeon
(more aptly resembling a graue
where many bodies had beene bu-
ried alive, then a prison) *Corcicurbo*
the Barbarian called aloud: And al-
though the terrible sound of his
fearefull voyce was heard farre and
neere, yet none could vnderstand
his words, but the vnhappy *Clelia*, whom her misfor-
tunes had caused to be shut vp in this deepe Caue. *Clelia*,
said

(said the Barbarian) cause the young man which we deliuered vnto thee about two daies agoe, to come vp hither in bonds as he is, by the rope which I will immediately let downe; and looke if amongst the women last taken, there be any one worthy of our company. Vpon these speeches he let fall a great hempen rope, & shortly after foure Barbarians drew vp a yong man tied by the same vnder his armes, who shewed to be about nineteene or twenty yeares of age, apparelled in course cloth like a mariner, but more beautifull then could be well expressed. The first act of these Sauages, was to looke vpon the manacles and cords which he had on his hands; and then shaking his haire (that couered his head like small rings of fine gold) they made cleane his face, which likewise was full of dust: whereupon they discouered such an admirable beauty, that it mollified the hearts euen of the executioners themselues that led him vnto death. As for the yong man, he expressed no feeling of any affliction whatsoeuer: but contrarily with face lifted vp, looking vpon heauen, and with eyes in outward appearance full of cheerefulness, he thus spake with a cleere voyce; I giue you thanks, O pittifull heauens, for bringing me hither to die, in such a place where your brightnesse may behold my death, and not in such blacke dungeons where it shall bee concealed by darke shadowes; at the least because I am a Christian, I would not die desperately, albeit my misfortunes are so great, that they prouoke, & in a manner constrain me to desire it. These barbarians vnderstood not a word hereof, because he spake in a language differing from theirs: but laying a great stone on the mouth of the Caue, they took the young man without vnbinding him, and brought him to the Sea shore, where they had a Raft made of diuers beames of timber fastened together, seruing them in stead of a boate for to passe vnto another Ile, which one might descry to be about two or three miles from thence. They presently leaped

leaped vpon these timbers: and hauing caused the prisoner to sit downe in the middelt, one of them tooke a boaw lying vpon the Raft, which he quickly bent, and therein set an arrow whose head was of flint, placing himselfe ouer against the young man, at whom hee aimed as his white, and was ready to pearce his heart. The other Barbarians tooke three staues fashioned like oares, and one of them became the Pilot the other two forced forth the Raft towards the Ile. The faire young man, who euery minute expected death, shrunke vp his shoulders, shut his mouth, bent his browes, and in heart with profound silence intreated heaven, not to be deliuered from such cruell and imminent danger, but to be endued with courage to suffer it. Which the barbarous Archer perceiuing, (whose stony hart the yong mans beauty had already inclined to pittie) hee would not giue him a lingering death by holding his arrow drawn to the head, and ready to bee let flye against his breast; but throwing downe the boaw, he came vnto him; and by signes in the best manner he could, gaue him to vnderstand that hee would not kill him. Being vpon these tearmes, the Raft came into the middelt of the streight enclosing the two Iles; when such a flawe vnlooked for arose, that (whatsoeuer help these trimme sailers could afford) the beames of their Raft were vntied and seuered into parts; vpon one whereof consisting of sixe timbers or thereabouts, he fate, who a little before feared nothing lesse then drowning. The stormes made a growen sea, the windes and billowes wrestled together, the Barbarians were drowned, the timbers whereon the prisoner fate bound were carried into the maine sea; the waues raked ouer him, whereby he was not onely impeached to behold heaven, but was likewise deprived of means to pray that it would haue compassion of his mishaps. Neuerthelesse, the continued furie of the waters which couered him euery moment, beat him not off from the beames that they draue

with them, although that by reason his hands were bound at his backe, he could not catch or lay hold vpon any thing. In this manner floating vpon the Sea, that by this time was somewhat appeased, he doubled the point of a certaine Ile, whither the timbers approached, miraculously keeping him from wreck. There this poore yong man, tyred with two so different and perillous fortunes which he had vndergone, looked round about and descried a shippe not farre from him, which had there put in for shelter against the Sea, and anchored in this roade as in an haven of safety. They of the shippe also discovered the Raft, with the charge appearing thereon: wherein to be the better assured what it might bee, they let out their skiffe, wherewith they came to the timbers; and finding the young man no lesse faire then disfigured, they with diligence and compassion, conueyed him vnto the shippe, filling all that were there with admiration, for the nouelty of this encounter. Hee was holpe aboard: but being vnable to stand through feeblenesse, in that hee had remained three daies without sustenance, and beene so beaten with the waues, he fell with great noyse vpon the hatches. The Captaine with a noble and pittifull affection, commanded that he should be succoured; wherupon one went readily to vnbinde his hands, others to bring conferues and wines; by which remedies, the man fallen into a swoone, came againe to himselfe; as it were from death to life. And looking vpon the Captaine whose courtesie and rich attire drew his sight that way, hee spake vnto him in this manner. The mercifull heauens requite you for the good which it hath pleased you, pittifull Sir, to afford mee; for hardly can any man remoue the mindes heauinesse, without repairing the decayes of the body. My misfortunes haue taken sure hold vpon mee, that I am not able to recompence this your goodnesse, but by thanks onely: but if a poore afflicted man may be suffered to giue himselfe any praise, I know: that

that in gratefull remembrance, not any man living shall euer goe beyond me. In saying this, he would haue risen to kilfe his teer, but his weakenesse would not permit it; for thrise hee assayed, and thrise was constrained to fall downe againe. Which the captaine perceiuing, commanded him to be carried vnder the haife decke, his wet garments to bee taken off, and drier, and handsomer to bee put on his backe, and then that hee should rest a while. His commandements were accomplished, the yong man obeyed with silence. and the Captaines admiration encreased, when hee saw him on his feet with so braue and cheerefull disposition appearing in his person. Straight way he began to haue an earnest and longing affection to know of him what hee was, his name, and from what causes proceeded the effects of so great extremity, whereunto he was reduced. Yet because the Captaines curtesie surmounted his curiosity, hee was willing rather to relieue the strangers weakenesse, then he would giue satisfaction to his owne desire.

CHAP. II.

Taurisa, Auristella's Gentlewoman, relateth her misfortune to the faire Periander.

THE Officers of the shippe performed their Captaines command, leauing the young man to take his rest: but because a multitude of sad thoughts oppressed him, sleepe could neuer get possession of his senses, & much lesse would permit the grieuous sighes and pittifull mones which he heard, & seemed to him to issue fro betwixt the boords of a Cabbin adioyning vnto his, wherefore disposing himselfe to hearken attentiuely, hee heard these words. Alas that my Parents ingendred mee vnder an euill signe, and that my mother cast me headlong into the worlds light, vnder an vnhappy influence! I say,

cast me headlong ; for, a birth like mine, may rather bee called precipitation then a birth : I thought to haue enioyed the Suns brightnesse in freedome, but my thoughts haue beguiled me ; for I see my selfe vpon the point to be sold as a slaue, by such a misfortune as exceedeth any other whatsoever. O then whosoever thou be (said the yong man) if the common speech be true, that mishaps & troubles are wont to be mitigated by imparting them, declare vnto me for what cause thou fighst thus within these boards, and assure thy selfe if I cannot ease them, at the least I will afford them compassion. Heare mee then said one, and I will relate vnto thee vwhat iniury I haue receiued by Fortune, as briefly as I can : but first I would know to whom I shall declare the same. Tell mee if perhaps thou be that young man late found halte dead vpon the Rafter, vvhich they said serue in stead of Barques for the Barbarians of this Isle, whither we haue arriued vnder couert from the Tempest. I am the very same, said the young man. Tell mee then who thou art, said the person that spake. I would shew thee answered the other, but that I desire thou shouldest oblige me first in recounting thy fortune ; for I iudge by the words which thou spakest but now, that it is not so good as thou wouldest. Answer was made vnto him, Giue eare then, and I will open mine euils vnto thee in two words.

The Captaine and Lord of this shippe is called *Araulds*, the King of Denmarke his sonne and heire: into whose power by strange accidents and reuolutions came a gentlewoman which vvas my mistresse, & such exquisite beauty, that in my iudgement shee not onely surpassed all others living in the vworld, but likewise vvhatsouever the most subtil vvitte could describe in the strongest imagination of man: her discretion matched her beauty, and her misfortunes her discretion: her name is *Auristela*, her parents vv ere very rich, and of Royall blood. This same, for vv hose perfections all praises are too

too little, saw her selfe sold, and was bought by *Arnaldo*, vvho hath loued her so sincerely, & as yet so passionately loues her, that albeit she be his slaue, yet he would a thousand times make her his mistresse, and take her to wife in lawfull matrimony; whereunto his Father consented, vvho iudged that the rare vertues and perfections of *Auristela* deserued a greater matter then to be a Queen. But shee hath said alwayes, that shee cannot breake the vow vvhich she made, to continue a Virgin all her life time, vse vvhat promises or threatnings they could. Yet *Arnaldo* amongst his doubtfull imaginations entertained hope; sometimes relying on the alteration of time, sometimes on the mutable conditions of women; vntill it happened that *Auristela* one day walking by the sea side, not like a slaue, but as a Queene, certaine barkes of Pyrates tooke and carried her away no man knowes vvither. The Prince *Arnaldo* thought that these were the same Pirates which had formerly sold her vnto him, and who range all these Seas, Ilands, and shores, buying or taking by force the fairest maides they can finde, to bring them into this Ile where we are, which is inhabited by salvage & cruell Barbarians, vvho through the perswasion of the Diuell, or some olde Sorcerer, doe beleeue that a King shall issue from amongst them, who shall conquer the greatest part of the world. They be ignorant who the king shall bee vvhich they expect: but more assuredly to know it, this Sorcerer hath appointed them to sacrifice all the men that shall arriue in their Ile, whose hearts they must reduce into powder, giuing the same to drinke to their chiefeest personages; vvith this charge, that he who shal swallow it down without altering his countenance, or shewing any token of the least feare, shall bee chosen King: although it be not he that shal conquer the world, but a sonne of his. He further commanded them to bring into this Ile, all the maides whom they could buy or steale, vvhereof the fairest should bee giuen innmediately

vnto their King. These maides are vuell vsed, wherein onely they shew that they are not barbarous. And those whom they buy at a very high rate, they pay for them in pieces of vncoynd gold, and in precious pearles, which are plentiful on the shores of this Ile. Hereupon it cometh to passe, that many amongst them haue made themselves Pyrates, or Merchants, for the great gaine vvhich they reape in this traffique. *Arnaldo* then (whos as before I told you) imagining that *Auristela* may bee in this Ile, hath resolved to sell mee to these Barbarians, that hee may be cleared of this suspicion, to this end; that abiding amongst them, I may serue him as a spye to know what hee desireth: and his delay is nothing else, but that the seas may be calme to take land, and conclude my sale. Consider now if I complaine for good cause or not, seeing the fortune I looke for, is to continue all my life amongst these Barbarians: for I cannot presume so much of my beauty that I shall be Queen, especially if any hard chance hath brought hither the incomparable *Auristela*. These are the grounds of the sighes which you haue heard, and from this feare proceed the complaints wherewith I am tormented.

Hauing thus said, shee held her peace, and the young man remained silent for a time, holding his mouth close to these boords, which he moistned vvith great plenty of tears, feeling as it were, a nooze ouerthwart his throat. In the end after a vvhile, he asked her if she had any inkling that *Arnaldo* had obtained his pleasure of *Auristela*, or if *Auristela* being else-where in loue, disdained *Arnaldo*, refusing so great a gift as a kingdome; for that hee thought the lawes of pleasure had greater power then those of Religion. Whereunto shee answered: that happily in her conceit, the times past might haue giuen some cause to *Auristela* to loue one *Periander* a noble Knight, whose good parts made him highly esteemed of all that knew him, and this was hee that had drawne her from her

Coun-

Country; yet she had neuer heard him named amidst the continuall plaints vvhich she made of her misfortunes, nor in any other sort whatsoeuer. Then he demanded if she knew this *Periander* of vvhom she spake. I know him not said she, onely I haue heard that this vvas hee vvhose carried away my mistresse, into whose seruice I came shortly after *Periander* had left her by a strange accident.

They were in this discourse when they heard *Taurisa* called, for so was her name, who now had concluded the discourse of her mishappes. Who hearing her selfe asked for: without doubt, said shee, the seas are quiet, and the tempest appeased, because they call me, that I may be so vnluckily deliuered to these Barbarians. Farewell who-soeuer thou be, and heauen keepe thee from falling into their hands, that the powder of thine heart may not witnesse the vanitie of their foolish prophecie. They departed, *Taurisa* went vnto the decke, the young man remained pensiue and asked for clothes to rise. They brought him a suite of greene damaske, cut after the fashion of that which he wore of cloth. He came vp, *Arnaldo* receiued him with a merry countenance, and made him sit by him. They richly attired *Taurisa* like nymphes of the sea, or of the woods. Whilest this was adoeing, to the great admiration of the young man, *Arnaldo* told him his loue and his intentions, asking his counsell of that which he was purposed to doe, praying him to declare if he liked well of the meanes which he would vse to learne newes of *Auristela*. The young man, which aswell by the speeches of *Taurisa* as of *Arnaldo* himselfe, had his soule filled with a thousand suspicious imaginations, discoursing in his minde what might happen, if by aduenture *Auristela* were found amongst these Barbarians; made him this answere.

My Lord, I am not of so ripe yeeres to bee capable of giuing you counsell: But I am carried with an extreame desire

vnto their King. These maides are vwell vsed, wherein onely they shew that they are not barbarous. And those whom they buy at a very high rate, they pay for them in pieces of vncoyned gold, and in precious pearles, which are plentifull on the shores of this Ile. Hereupon it cometh to passe, that many amongst them haue made themselves Pyrates, or Merchants, for the great gaine vvhich they reape in this traffique. *Arnaldo* then (who as before I told you) imagining that *Auristela* may bee in this Ile, hath resolved to sell mee to these Barbarians, that hee may be cleared of this suspicion, to this end; that abiding amongst them, I may serue him as a spye to know what hee delireth: and his delay is nothing else, but that the seas may be calme to take land, and conclude my sale. Consider now if I complaine for good cause or not, seeing the fortune I looke for, is to continue all my life amongst these Barbarians: for I cannot presume so much of my beauty that I shall be Queen, especially if any hard chance hath brought hither the incomparable *Auristela*. These are the grounds of the sighes which you haue heard, and from this feare proceed the complaints wherewith I am tormented.

Hauiug thus said, shee held her peace, and the young man remained silent for a time, holding his mouth close to these boords, which he moistned vvith great plenty of tears, feeling as it were, a nooze ouerthwart his throat. In the end after a vvhile, he asked her if she had any inking that *Arnaldo* had obtained his pleasure of *Aurestela*, or if *Auristela* being else-where in loue, disdained *Arnaldo*, refusing so great a gift as a kingdome; for that hee thought the lawes of pleasure had greater power then those of Religion. Whereunto shee answered: that happely in her conceit, the times past might haue giuen some cause to *Auristela* to loue one *Periander* a noble Knight, whose good parts made him highly esteemed of all that knew him, and this was hee that had drawne her from her

Coun-

Country; yet she had neuer heard him named amidst the continuall plaints vvhich she made of her misfortunes, nor in any other sort whatsoeuer. Then he demanded if she knew this *Periander* of vvhom she spake. I know him not said she, onely I haue heard that this vvas hee vvhom carried away my mistresse, into whose seruice I came shortly after *Periander* had left her by a strange accident.

They were in this discourse when they heard *Taurisa* called, for so was her name, who now had concluded the discourse of her mishappes. Who hearing her selfe asked for: without doubt, said shee, the seas are quiet, and the tempest appeased, because they call me, that I may be so vnluckily deliuered to these Barbarians. Farewell who-soeuer thou be, and heauen keepe thee from falling into their hands, that the powder of thine heart may not witness the vanitie of their foolish prophecie. They departed, *Taurisa* went vnto the decke, the young man remained peniue and asked for clothes to rise. They brought him a suite of greene damaske, cut after the fashion of that which he wore of cloth. He came vp, *Arnaldo* receiued him with a merry countenance, and made him sit by him. They richly attired *Taurisa* like nymphes of the sea, or of the woods. Whilest this was adoeing, to the great admiration of the young man, *Arnaldo* told him his loue and his intentions, asking his counsell of that which he was purposed to doe, praying him to declare if he liked well of the meanes which he would vse to learne newes of *Auristela*. The young man, which aswell by the speeches of *Taurisa* as of *Arnaldo* himselfe, had his soule filled with a thousand suspicious imaginations, discoursing in his minde what might happen, if by aduventure *Auristela* were found amongst these Barbarians; made him this answer.

My Lord, I am not of so ripe yeeres to bee capable of giuing you counsell: But I am carried with an extreame desire

desire to serue you. For, the life which you haue giuen me, the entertainment and fauours which you haue afforded mee, oblige me to employ all that I can possible for you. My name is *Periander*, I was borne of worthie Parents, and my nobilitie is equall to my misfortunes, which here cannot be declared vnto you. This *Auristela*, whom you search, is my sister, whom also I seeke; and we lost her by diuers strange accidents about a yeere agoe. By her name and beautie which you commend so much, I am assured that it is she; and I would willingly giue the life which I possesse, for the contentment I should receiue in finding her. Wherefore, as hauing interest in this businesse, I haue chosen this meane which amongst others I haue deuised in my phantasie, which although it be more perillous, yet it shall be more certaine, and more short. You, my Lord, are determined to sell this gentlewoman to the Barbarians, to the end that being in their power, she may see if *Auristela* be also there. VVhereof you may be informed, in making a second sale of another maid vnto the same Barbarians; and in the meane while that the bargain is a making, *Taurisa* shall haue meanes to tell you, or at the least giue you a token, if *Auristela* be with the residue, whom they buy and keepe with so great care. It is true, said *Arnaldo*, and I haue chosen *Taurisa*, before any other of the foure, which are in this ship for the like effect, for that she hath been her maid and knowes her better then any of them. All this hath been well deuised, said *Periander*: yet I am of the minde that none can performe this better then my selfe, in regard that my age, my countenance, my particular interest, together with the knowledge which I haue of *Auristela* moue and perswade me to take this enterprize vpon me. Consider, my Lord, if this aduice like you, and doe not deferre it: for in things difficult, counsell and execution must goe together.

The reasons of *Periander* fitted so vvell *Arnaldes* humour,

mour, that without staying vpon any inconueniences vvvhich presented themselves before him, hee effected it, and attired young *Periander* vvith many rich clothes vvhereof he had made good prouision for *Auristela*, if by aduenture he should find her, who seemed to be the fairest woman that euer *Arnaldo* had set eye vpon, except the beauty of *Auristela*, for none other could match him. Those of the shippe vvondered, *Taurisa* was astonished, and the Prince confounded: vvho if he had not thought this had bene *Auristela*s brother, the consideration of his sexe had pearced his heart vvith a thousand prickes of ielousie. Finally, vvhen *Periander* was thus disguised, they lanchcd a little further into the Sea, to the end the Barbarians might descry them. The haste which *Arnaldo* made to know newes of *Auristela*, permitted him not first of all to informe himselfe of *Periander*s and of his sisters estate, although in reason this curiosity ought to goe before the confidence which he reposed in him. But because it is a peculiar quality of louers, rather to employ their thoughts to seek meanes how to effect their desires, then about any other thing; hee had no leysure to inquire of him that which had bene profitable for him to know, and which after ward hee knew when it was for him altogether vnbehoofefull.

Being then a little further from the Ile, they adorned their shippe with flags and streamers: which shaking the ayre, and kissing the waters, made a gallant sight. The calme sea, the cleere skye, the noyse of hautboyes and other instruments of peace and warre put their hearts in suspense. especially the Barbarians, who seeing them somewhat nye, came to the sea side armed, with their bowes and arrowes. The shippe was somewhat lesse then a mile from the shore when they shot off all their Ordinance, which were in great number, and great peeces; and letting downe and lanching their Cock-boat, into which only entred *Arnaldo*, *Taurisa*, and *Periander*, with
fixe

sixe Mariners, they put a white cloth in the toppe of a launce, in signe of peace; which custome is obserued almost by all nations of the world. That which ensued shalbe told you in another Chapter.

CHAP. III.

*Periander is sold to the Barbarians, for a Mayd,
and why.*

As the boate approached to the Hauen, the Barbarians also came together, each one desiring to be first that should see what was within. And for a toke that they receiued thē in peace, they erected diuers white clothes, making them waue in the ayre, and shot an infinite company of arrows in the winde; & some of them leaped hither & thither with an incredible agility. The boat could not come fully to land, because it was lowe water; for the Sea ebbes & flowes in those quarters, as it doth with vs. But the Barbarians entred the sands on foot, to the number of twentie, comming so nigh that they might almost touch them with their hands. They carried on their shoulders a Barbarian woman, but yet of great beautie, who before any other spake vnto them in the Polonian tongue. Our Gouvernour demands who you are, wherefore you come, and what you seeke. If perhaps you haue any Mayd to sell, you shall be well paid for her: but if it be any other Marchandise, wee know not whar to doe therewith, for that thanks be to God we haue in this Ile, whatsoeuer is necessary for mans life; neither haue we any need to go from hence and seek it elsewhere. *Arnaldo* vnderstood her very well, and asked her if she were a Barbarian, by birth, or one of those who had been bought in that Iland. Vnto whom she sayd: Answer first to what I aske, for my masters take no pleasure that I should enter into other discourse, then that which

which directly concerneth our affaires. Which *Arnaldo* hearing, he answered :

We are by birth, of the kingdome Danemarke, executing the office of Marchants and Pirats, changing what we can, and selling what we can buy or steale. Now amongst other prizes which we haue taken, this Mayd is one (said he, in shewing *Periander*) who because shee is one of the fairest; or to speake more truly, the beautifullest of the world, we bring her hither to be sold; wee knowing already the cause wherefore they are bought in this Ile. And if it be so that your wise mens presages be true, you may well imagine how faire and valiant children this incomparable beautie will beare you. Hauing heard thus much, one of the Barbarians demanded of the woman, what *Arnaldo* said: which hauing expounded vnto them, foure of them departed immediatly to certifie the gouernour. In the meane while, *Arnaldo* informed himselfe of this woman, if amongst those of that Ile, there were any of so great beautie as shee whom hee would sell. No, said shee, and although here be many, not one of them is equall vnto mee: for I am one of those accursed, ready to vndergoe the fortune to bee Queene of those Barbarians, which should be the greatest misfortune that could possible befall mee. Those which were gone to land returned backe, and with them the Gouernour himselfe, who might well be knowne by his rich apparell. *Periander* had couered his face with a transparent and fine vaile, thereby to cast vnawares, as it were, a flash of lightning from the brightnesse of her eies in the sight of these Barbarians, who beheld her attentielie. The Gouernour spake to this barbarous woman, who thereupon said to *Arnaldo*, that her Master prayed him to take off his Gentlewomans Vaile. This was done, *Periander* arose, discovered his face, lift his eyes to heauen, shewed sorrow for his hard fortune, and darted the beames of his two sunnes here and there; which

which meeting with those of the barbarous Captaine, bore him to the earth: at the least hee gaue him to conceiue so much, by adoring vpon his knees, this faire image whom hee belieued to be a woman; and speaking with his barbarous interpreter, the price was agreed vpon in five words, and without loauing and bidding, he gaue whatsoeuer *Arnaldo* demanded. All the Barbarians went into the Ile, and instantly returned with an infinite number of gold pieces, and long strings of fine pearles, which they gaue by heapes without tale vnto *Arnaldo*: who taking *Periander* by the hand, deliuered her vnto the Barbarian; willing the interpreter to certifie him, that within a few daies he would returne and sell him another maide, if not so faire, yet at least such a one as should be worthy of buying. *Periander* embraced all those in the Barke, with his eyes full of teares, not proceeding from an effeminate courage, but vpon consideration of the distresses which he had endured. *Arnaldo* made a signe to those of the shippe, that they should discharge their Artillery; and the Gouvernour to those of the Ile, to sound their instruments. And in one instant the Canons thundred on the one side, the musicke of the Barbarians filled the ayre with many confused and different sounds on the other. With this reioicing *Periander* was brought to land on the shoulders of these Barbarians; *Arnaldo* and his company returned to the ship, first hauing agreed with *Periander* that vnlesse the winde enforced him, he should not goe farre from the Ile, but as necessity should require to auoid discouery, and that he should returne to sell *Tauris* if need should require, because that by signes which *Periander* would give him, he should know whether *Auristela* were found or not; and if shee were not in the Ile, hee would not faile to finde meanes to recouer *Periander*, in making open warres against them with all his forces, and those of his friends.

CHAP.

CHAP. IIII.

*The meeting of Periander and Auristela, and of the strife
tha fell among the Barbarians.*

AMongst those that accompanied the Gouvernour in bargaining for the Gentlewoman, there was a Barbarian whose name was *Bradamire*, one of the most valiant and chiefeſt of the Ile; a contemner of all Law, proud euen aboue pride, and as hardy as himſelte: for none could bee found vnto whom he might be compared. This man then, as ſoone as he ſaw *Periander*, beleeuing like the reſt, that he was a woman, caſt in his minde to chooſe her for his owne, without ſtaying till the conditions of the Prophecie were tried or accompliſhed. Now when *Periander* was come into the Ile, many Barbarians took him vpon their ſhoulders in emulation one of another and with demonſtration of much mirth, carried her to a great tent erected in a pleaſant & delightfull meadow; ſituate in the middeſt of many others of leſſe bignelle, all couered with the ſkinnes of wilde and tame beaſts. The barbarous woman who had ſerued for an interpreter at the bargaine & ſale, went not from his company, but comforted him with words and reaſons which he vnderſtood not. Shortly after this, the Gouvernour appointed ſome to paſſe into the Ile of the priſon, and to bring from thence a young man, if there were any, to make a triall of his deceitfull hope. They readily obeyed, and withall ſpread vpon the ground certaine ſkinnes of beaſts, made in leather, and ſhapen to ſerue as table-cloathes, vpon which they caſt without ranke and order, diuers kindes of dry fruite; and certaine of their principals being ſet. they began to eate, inuiting *Periander* by ſignes to doe the like. *Bradamire* alone ſtood on his feet, leaning on his boaw, with his eyes faſtned on him who
he

he tooke to be a woman. The Gouvernour prayed him to sit downe, which hee would not, but contrariwise turning his backe, went out of the Tent, giuing a great sigh. Then came a Barbarian which said to the Gouvernour, that when he and 3. others went to the prison, there was a Raft already vpon the Sea, bringing with them a prisoner, and the woman that kept the prison. Vpon these newes they made an end of dinner, and the Gouvernour and all the rest went downe ouer against the Raft to see it come, and *Periander* would beare him company, vvhewith hee vvas well pleased. When they came to the sea shore, the prisoner and his keeper were already on the land. *Periander* looked earnestly to see if perhaps he might know that vn lucky person, who by destiny was reduced to the same extremity wherein himselfe had beene before: yet hee could not discerne his face, for that hee held downe his head; and this it seemed vvas of set purpose, that no man might see his countenance. But hee tooke notice of the prisoners keeper, whose sight and knowledge brought his minde into a quandary, and troubled his senses, perceiuing plainly that this was *Clelia*, the nurse of his deare Mistresse. O how gladly would hee haue spoken vnto her, but he durst not: vvhewerefore smothering his desires vwith in his lippes, hee kept silence, vwaiting what might be the finall end of this chance. The Gouvernour with an extreame importunate desire to hasten his hopes, and enioy the happy company of *Periander*, commanded the young man immediately to be sacrificed, and his heart brought to powder, to serue in this deceitfull and ridiculous experiment. Instantly many Barbarians laid hold vpon him, and without further ceremony, except to tye a cloth before his eyes, and his hands at his backe, they made him kneele downe: where like a Lambe, vwithout speaking a word, he attended the stroke of death. Which the ancient *Clelia* seeing, she lift vp her voyce, and vwith more courage then could be hoped for in one of that age,
 shee

shee began to say : Take heede O Gouvernour what thou doest ; for this party vvhom thou art about to sacrifice, is no man, and consequently cannot serue thy turne , because she is a woman, and the fairest that can be imagined. Speake beautipus *Auristela*, permit them not to take away thy life, neither be so borne down vvith the streame of thy misfortunes, as to distrust the prouidence of heauen, which is able to preferue thee , and giue thee a ioyfull and happy estate. Vpon these words the Barbarians refrained the blowe, euen when the kniues shadow had already marked the throat of the Patient. The Gouvernor commanded her to be vnbound, and that her hands loosed, they should also restore light to her eyes.

Then looking vpon her attentiuely, hee thought hee saw the fairest face of a woman that euer his eye beheld, iudging that (except *Periander*) none in the world vvvas able to match her. What tongue might expresse, or pen set downe, the motions which *Periander* felt when hee knew that shee who was iudged to die, and after freed, was *Auristela*? His sight and breath failed, which as soon as he had recouered, with a weake and staggering pace, he ranne to embrace that faire one, whom he held in his armes, and said vnto her. O deare halfe of my soule, pillar of my hopes, and a pledge which I cannot say I haue found by my good or bad fortune ; albeit it cannot but be for my good , because no euill can proceed from thy sight : see here thy brother *Periander*. This last word was softly vttered, least any might heare. Then hee continued, saying; Liue my sister, and reioyce, for in this Ile death is not appointed for women; be not more cruell to thy selfe then the Islanders: put thy trust in heauen, which hauing deliuered thee vntill this present from so many perils which thou shouldest haue vndergone , will defend thee also from those which may be feared heereafter. O brother, brother, answered *Auristela*, alas, I dread much that this distresse wherein we finde our selues, shall not be

last which we ought to feare. Happy hath bin my fortune to find you, but vnhappy to find you in such a place, & in such a manner. In speaking these words they both wept; which the barbarous *Bradamire* perceiued: and beleeuing that *Periander* shed tears of grieve, because such a one shuld die whom he had loued or knowne, resolued whatsoeuer it should cost him, to deliuer her. So comming to them twaine, with one hand he held *Auristela*, and the other *Periander*; and with a threatning & proud countenance, he spake aloud in this manner: Let none bee so hardy to touch so much as one haire of these two, if he make neuer so little account of his life. This maide is for my selfe, because I loue her: and this man ought to be free, because she will haue it so. Scarcely had hee ended these words, when the Gournour, moued by disdain and wrathfull impatience, put a great shaft in his boaw, and going back so farre as he might hold out his left arme, hee drew the string vvith the other to his right eare, and then let flye with so direct a violence, that the arrow hit *Bradamire* in the mouth, taking from him the motiõ of his tongue, tother with his life, which filled all them that stood by with astonishment and maruell. Neuerthelesse, this bold and certaine stroke, fell not out so well for the Gournours profit, but that hee did as readily receiue painment for his hardinesse: for a sonne of the same *Corseurbo*, who was drowned when hee would haue transported *Periander*, trusting more in the agility of his feete, then his assured shooting, at two leapes was vpon the Gournour, and lifting vp his arme, sheathed a poignard in his breast: which being of stone, was yet more strong and cutting, then if it had beene forged of Steele. The vnhappy Gournour closing his eyes with an endlesse night by his own death, reuenged the death of *Bradamire*; and in a moment, fury troubling the mindes of their kinsfolkes, and vrging them to vengeance, put weapons into their hands: whereupon the arrowes began to flye on eyther part, which in
the

the end were all spent, but not their hands and poignards; wherewith they stoutly rushed one against another, in such sort, that the sonne had no respect of his father, nor the brother his brother: but as though they had euer beene mortall enemies for wrongs that were past amends, they rent vvith their nayles, and killed ech other vvith stabbes of poignards, there being none vvho could endeavour to set them at peace.

Amongst the arrowes, vvounds, and dead men, the old *Clelia*, the Damosell interpreter, *Periander*, and *Auristela* were close together in very much feare and confusion. But in the heate of this fury, certaine Barbarians vvho should haue beene partakers vvith *Bradamire*, departed from the fight, going to set on fire a Forrest belonging to the Gouvernour: the trees beganne to burne, the vvinde fauoured their anger, & it seemed that all of them could not choose but be eyther blinded vvith smoake, or burnt vvith flame. The obscurity of the night, the sightes of such as lay a dying, the clamors of them that threatened, nor the noyse of the fire, could not any whit terrise the hearts of these Barbarians, because they were wholly set vpon wrath and vengeance: only the mindes of these vnhappy persons were feared. who thronging close one to another, knew not what to doe, nor vvhat might become of them. Yet heauen forgot not to succour them in so troublesome a time, and that by such a nevv and strange meanes, that for iust cause they esteemed it as a myracle.

The night was close, obscure, and dreadfull, none other light being to be discerned, but only that of the burning Forrest; when a young Barbarian came to *Periander* and spake to him in the Castilian tongue, which he well vnderstood. Follow me faire maid, you and your company: for by Gods assistance, I vvill put you in a place of surety. *Periander* hereto replied not a word, but took order, that *Auristela*, *Clelia*, the interpreter himself, marched

forward. And so passing ouer the weapons and the dead bodies, they followed the young Barbarian conducting them, hauing the flames of the burning Forrest at their backs, which was in stead of a winde to driue them from thence vvith greater speed. But neyther the olde age of *Clelia*, nor the tender yeares of *Auristela* would permit them to keepe pase vvith their guide: which vvhen the strong Barbarian perceiued, hee tooke vp *Clelia* on his shouldders, *Periander* did the like with *Auristela*. The Interpreter, least delicate, & of better heart, followed with a manly courage. In this manner after many falls, they came to the Sea: and hauing gone about a mile on the North side, the Barbarian entred into a large Caue, where went out and in the waters of the Sea ebbing and flowing; where turning sometimes on one side, sometimes on the other, now creeping on the earth, then standing on their feet, they seemed at length to come out into a smooth field, in which their guide told them they might march without danger of stumbling: for the darkenesse of the night hindered them to see their way, and the light of the wood on fire which burned more forceably then before, could not extend thither. God be praised (said the Barbarian in the Spanish tongue) who hath brought vs into this place, where though some perill may be feared, at the least it shall not be death. In speaking these words, they saw a light like a Comete, vvhich came towards them, much like the mouing of an exhalation, which had put them in fear if the Barbarian had not said vnto them: This is my Father vvho comes to receiue mee. *Periander*, although he could not well speake Spanish, said vnto him. The heauens reward thee thou Angell in mans likenesse, for the good thou hast done vs: for although it be nothing but to delay our death, we hold it as a singular benefit. In the meane time the light approched, which a Barbarian man in appearance did carry, seeming to be somewhat aboute the age of fifty years. Comming to them, he pitched

pitched his light on the ground, which was a great staffe of burning Pine. He ranne to embrace his sonne, asking him in the same Castilian tongue, what chance had befallen him, that he came with such company. Father, answered the young man, let vs goe to our quarter, for I haue many things to say, and more to thinke vpon. The Ile is on fire, almost all the inhabitants are burnt to ashes; that little remainder which you see, by heauens inspiration I haue caught from the flames, the sharpe poygnards, and pearcing arrowes of the Barbarians. Let vs goe fir, as I haue said into our quarter, to the end the charity of my mother and sister may be employed in welcomming these poore weary guests. The father was their conductor, they all followed, *Clelia* tooke courage and walked a foot. *Periander* would not leaue the faire burden which he bore, for he could not be troubled possibly by this only good vvhich hee had in the world. Short time after, they came to an high rocke, at the foot whereof, they discovered a large Caue, vvhetherunto the same rocke serued for valls and roose, out of which came two women vvith lighted torches in their hands, attired after the Barbarian fashion; one was young, aged about 15. yeares, & the other thirty. This last vv as of comely proportion, but the former exceeding faire. One of them said, O Father, O Brother; the other, nothing, but Sonne thou art welcome. The interpreter maruelled much to hear them speake in another language then was vsed in that Ile, vnto the women who seemed to be Barbarians. And being about to demand the cause, the father willed them to dreisse the Caue round about with skinned, which hindered the mother & daughter to resolute her doubt. Then leaning their torches against the wals, they brought the skins of goates, sheepe, and other beasts out of another Caue, wherewith instantly they covered the ground, and abated the cold which began to molest them.

CHAP. V.

*Wherein the Spanish Barbarian declareth the story of himselfe
to his new guests.*

THe Supper was quicke and short: yet the vnwonted rest, and the pleasure to take repast without disquiet, seemed delicate vnto them. They lighted new staues, and although their chamber were a little smokie, yet at least it was warme. The vessell wherein they vvere serued, was neyther siluer nor pewter: but the hands of the Barbarians were the platters, & the barks of trees, a little handsomer then corks, serued for cups. *Candir* and his wines vwere farre from thence, in stead whereof they drank the cleere and fresh water as in vvinter. *Celia* fell asleepe, vvwhose vvearinesse & olde age were more friends to sleep then company. The hostesse brought her into another chamber, and made her a bed of skins, and as many mattresses as might couer her, and so returned and sate down with the rest, vnto whom the Spaniard began to speake in this manner:

Although it were agreeable to reason I should first know the successe of your affaires, before I make relation of mine; yet that shall not hinder me to make declaration; thereby to oblige you not to be silent as concerning yours. I was borne in Spaine, as my destinies would haue it: my parents were meanelly noble, and brought me vp as those that were wealthy: I arriued at the gates of Grãmer, whereby an entrance is made into other Sciences. My starre gaue mee a strong inclination to learning, but more violent vnto armes: following the course vvherof, I left my Country, and was at the Warre with *Charles* the fift, made against certaine Princes of Almaine. I was fauoured of *Mars*, honoured of the Emperour, and besides many friends, got the reputation of a braue Souldier.

dier. Aboue all things I learned to bee liberall, and of good behauiour; for, these two vertues more then the rest might be learned in this Princes schoole. I returned into my Country, well furnished with riches & honour, with an intent there to remaine certaine daies, to see my Parents yet living, and my friends which there expected my comming. But shee that is called Fortune, enuying my tranquillity, by turning her wheele threw me downe from the height wherein I thought to be, vnto the centre of that misery vyhetein I am; choosing for the instrument of her despite, the second sonne of a Marquesse, whose house was next neighbour vnto mine.

This man then came one day vnto the Parish, in the Country where I dwelt, to see a Race which should there be runne, by diuers Knights, whereof I was one: and turning towards me, with a gesture full of scoffing and arrogance, he sayd thus. I see well, braue Lord *Anthony*, thou hast handled thy matters gallantly in Flanders and Italy. I answered him (being that *Anthony* of whom I speake vnto you) I kisse your Lordships hands a thousand times, for the honour you doe mee; which is as you ought in honouring your countrymen and seruants: But I would willingly giue you to vnderstand, that I carried this brauery out of my countrie into Flanders, and that good education hath alwaies followed my birth. And herewithall, such as I am, your Lordship may command, beseeching you to loue mee, as the desire which I haue to doe you seruice shall merit. A Gentleman, my friend, standing next me, spake in mine eare; but not so softly but the other might heare him. Take heede how you speake, Sir *Anthony*, for wee doe not here call this Knight Lord. To whom the other answered, before I had taken the word;

The Lord *Anthony* speakes well, for he vseth me according to the fashion of Italy, where they say Lordship instead of Worship. I know well, said I, the customes and

ceremonies which these two Nations obserue, and I haue not giuen you the title of Lordship after the Italian manner; but because I beleue that hee which presumeth to tutor me in Spaine, ought to be a great Lord. Yet I also beleue, that being of noble Parentage, and such as I am, I deserue, that any great Lord, whatsoever he be, should call me Worshipfull. And who dares say the contrary? And with these words, I set hand to my sword, and gaue him two great cuts on the head, which so troubled him, that he knew not how this chance had befallen him, neither did any thing which could repaire the iniurie. But after this amazement was past, he drew his sword, endeavouring to reuenge himselfe with much courage and hardinesse: But the blood running downe his eyes, and my selfe abiding him with my drawn sword in my hand, would not permit him to effect his honourable resolution. The standers by were all stirred against mee: I withdrew my selfe to my Parents, declaring to them the accident befallen me. They hauing notice of my danger, provided me meanes, and counselled me to looke to my safetie, for that I had procured vnto my selfe, many great and powerfull enemies. I did so, and two daies after, trauelled to the borders of *Aragon*: where I began to haue some time of breathing after so vrgent haste of my iourney.

Finally, with more leasure, I went into *Almaigne*, and entred againe into the Emperours seruice. There I was vvarned that mine enemy with diuers other in his companie sought for mee, with an intent to kill me. I apprehended the danger, as reason was I should, and returned into Spaine, because there is no better sanctuary, then hard by the house of a mans enemy. I visited my Parents in the night, who gaue me more mony & iewels, wherwith I conueyed my selfe to Lisbone. There I went aboard a ship vvhich had set saile for England, vvherein vvere English Knights, vvhoo for curiosities sake
had

had come to see Spaine; and hauing so done; were now returning into their Country. There it chanced, that I fell a scuffling vpon a matter of small importance, vvith an English Mariner, vvho prouoked mee to giue him a cusse.

This blowe mooued all the Mariners to choler against me: all the Saylers were vpon my iacke, and threw at me whatsoever came next to hand. I withdrevv me to the Castle a bath, vvhere I found an English Knight, whom I made my buckler, and stood at his backe: which thing onely saued my life. The other Knights appeased the tumult: yet with this condition, either that I should bee thrown into the Sea, or that they would giue mee their ship-boate to returne into Spaine, or vvither it should please God. This was effected: they gaue me the Skiffe, furnished with two barrells of water, one of Butter, and some quantity of Biscuite. I gaue thanks to my defenders for the fauor which they had afforded me, entering into the boate onely with two Oares. The shippe went farre off, the night came; I found my selfe alone in the middest of this bottomlesse gulfe of waters, taking none other course then the winds and waues would permit me. I lift vp mine eyes to heauen with good heart, committing my selfe to God, with the greatest deuotion possible. I looked on the North, whereby I discerned which way I went, yet could I not know vvhere I vvvas, nor what course I kept.

In this manner I draue sixe dayes, and sixe nights, reposing more confidence in the goodnesse of Heauen, then in the strength of mine armes: vvlich being now tired, and vvithout vigour, by meanes of the incessant labour, I laid by the Oares in the boate, to serue my turne, when the Sea and my forces would permit. I stretched my selfe all my length vpon my backe, shut mine eyes against the perill, and there was not a Saint in Heauen, vvwhose helpe I did not implore from the bottome of my heart.

heart. In the height of this extreame distresse, an heauie sleepe locked vp my senses, which is scarce to bee beleeued. But in this sleepe, my phantasie presented vnto me a thousand kinds of terrible deaths, and all in the water. In some, me thought I was eaten with Wolues, and torne in peeces with other wild Beasts; so that whether sleeping or vvaking, my life vvvas nothing els but a lingring death.

From this vnquiet sleepe, vpon a sodaine, a furious wauie awaked me, which broke ouer the boate and filled it vvith vvater. I knew well the danger, and cast the Sea into the Sea, the best I could, returning to vse helpe of mine Oares, vvhen else nothing auailed mee. I saw the Sea more and more enraged, because it was tossed and beaten with a South-west wind, which bloweth with greater violence there abouts, then in other Seas. I sawe it was folly to oppose my weake boate against the furie thereof, and my feeble and decayed forces, so vvithstand such violence. Wherefore, againe I forsooke mine Oares, and let the Skiffe runne whither the windes and waues would carrie it. I renewed my prayers, adioined promises, and increased the vvaters of the Sea, by those I shed from mine eyes, not for feare of death which shewed it selfe so nigh, but of the punishment which my sinnes deserued.

Finally, I know not how many daies and nights I passed floating on the Sea, vvwhich alwaies grew more vnquiet and troubled, vntill at last I came to a desert Ile, voyd of people, but full of Wolues vvwhich vvalked together in troopes. I put my selfe in couert vnder a great Rocke, not daring to leape on land for feare of the beasts which I saw. I did eate biscuit soked in water: for necessity and hunger haue not respect of any thing. Night came, but not so darke as before: it seemed the Seas vvvere appeased, and promised more safety the day following. I looked on the heauen and saw the starres, whose aspect declared repose of the ayre, and smoothnesse of the water. Then me thought

thought by the vncertaine brightnesse of the night, that the rocke vvhich serued me in stead of a Hauen, vvas all couered vvith Wolues, as indeed the truth was, and that one of them spake vnto me vvith an humane and intelligible voyce; yea more, in mine owne language: Spaniard, forsake this shore, and seeke thy fortune else-vvhere, if thou yvilt not be rent and torne in pieces with our teeth: and doe not aske vvho it is that giues thee vvarning, but thanke God who hath made thee finde pittie amongst sauage beasts. I leaue you to imagine vvwhether I were astonished or not: yet this amazement hindred me not to execute the counsell giuen me. I tooke the oares, inforced mine armes, and went againe into the maine Sea. But because misfortune and afflictions trouble the memory of those that suffer them: I know not how many dayes I droue vpon these Seas, drawing after mee a thousand deaths; till at length my Barke, driuen with an horrible tempest, I lighted on this Ile, at that place where the Caves mouth is, whereby you entred. The boate passed into the Caeue, but the ebbe made it as soone come out againe. Which vvhen I saw, I leaped into the water: and taking hold of the sand with my nailes, I impeached the best I could that the ebbe might not carry me backe againe into the open Sea with my boate. And although in loosing it I lost all hope of life, yet I reioiced to change my kinde of death, and abide on the land.

Hitherto the Spanish Barbarian had continued his discourse (for his attire so intituled him) when they heard fobblings and sighes in the chamber where they had left *Cleia*. Instantly *Anrifesta*, *Periander* and all the other, hasted to see what the matter was, and found that this was thee her selfe, who sate vpon the skinner wherewith her bed vvas made, leaning her backe against the Rocke, her eyes lifted towards heauen, which were almost out of her head. *Anrifesta* came to her, and vvith a complaining and sorrowfull voice, spake in this manner;

VVhat

What meane you nurse? Is it possible that you will leaue mee in this discomfort, and at such a time when I haue most need of your counsell? At this word *Clelia* lift vp her selfe a little, and taking *Auriscela* by the hand, said thus vnto her. You see daughter how your case standeth, I would willingly haue desired the prolonging of my life til yours had obtained such rest as your worth deserueth: But heauen will not permit it, and for mine owne part, I conform my will thereunto, offering vnto you the best heart I haue. That which I request you my deare mistress, is; that when it shall please God you recouer your estate, you certifie my parents, if they be yet liuing, that I die in the faith of Iesus Christ, & of his Church, which is none other but Romane. Hauing so said, shee died in pronouncing the name of Iesus. At the sight heereof, *Auriscela* fell in a swoone. *Periander* and al the rest wept, yet ranne to succour *Auriscela*; who comming out of her trance, augmented her teares, renewed her sighes, and spake such pittifull words, that it would haue moued the very stones, if they could haue vnderstood what she said. Finally, they took order for her buriall the next morning. The Spaniards daughter, with her brother, watched the corps, the residue went to repose themselues during the little part of the night remaining.

CHAP. VI.

Wherein the Spanish Barbarian pursueth his history.

IT seemed this day the Sunne shewed himselfe to the world later then of custome, because the remainders of so great a fire yet smoking, hindred his beames to enlighten the earth. The Barbarian commanded his sonne to goe out of his Caue, and learne all that which had passed in the Ile. The others ended their sleepe with no lesse trouble

trouble, then when they lay downe : for the grieft of *Clelia* death would not fuffer *Auriftela* to reft, and *Auriftela* waking held *Periander* in continuall difquiet. Hee went out with her into the plaine to behold the fiteuation of this place, and faw that it was made by nature as if it had beene compofed by Art and indultry. It was of a round forme, inuironed with very high rocks of gray colour, containing fomewhat more then a league in compaffe, and replenifhed with wilde trees bearing fruit, if not excellent, yet at the leaft tolerable and nourifhing. The graffe was long, becaufe the great waters iffuing out of thefe rocks kept it alwaies green: all which things caufed admiration in *Auriftela* and *Periander*; when the Spaniard called them to bury *Clelia*. All of them went thither, and buried the dead body in a hollow rocke, couering the fame with earth, and other fmall rubbifh: and to teftifiethat a Chriftian was there laid, *Auriftela* prayed that a Croffe might be there erected. The Barbarian faid, he had one which he would place there. All of them gaue her the laft farewell, *Auriftela* renewed her complaints, whofe teares drew others from the eyes of *Periander*: and till the young Barbarian fhould return, they all withdrew themfelues into the Rocke where they had fleep, to defend themfelues from the extremity of the cold which began to threaten them; where fitting down on foft fkins, the Spaniard craued filence, purfuing his ftory after this manner.

When I had left the boate which brought me into the fand, and that the waues of the fea had carried the fame away, with good reafon I affirme, that therewithall was fled all hope of my liberty, which is not in my power to recouer, vntill this prefent. I entred thereinto, perceiuing the fite of this place, which me thought nature had formed as a Theater, to represent thereon the tragedy of my misfortunes. I much maruelled I could fee no people there, but onely wilde goates, and other fmall beaftes of diuers

diuers kinde. I searched every where, and found this hollow caue, appointing the same for mine abode. Finally, after I had gone round about, I returned to the entrance whereby I came, to see if I could heare any mans voyce, or could descry any one who might tel me where I was. And my good happe, and the pittifull heauens, not hauing altogether forgotten mee, brought before mee a young Barbarian maide, about fiteene yeeres of age, who sought small cockles along the shore, amongst the rockes and craggy places of the Sea. She was amazed at the sight of mee, her feete stucke fast in the sand, and the cockles which shee had gotten, fell downe, scattered heere and there. I tooke her into mine armes without speaking to her a word, or shee to mee, entred into the Caue, and brought her to the place where now wee are. Hauing set her on the ground, I kist her face and her hands, making all the signes and demonstration I could, to qualifie her feare, & to make her to vnderstand I loued her. Shee, after this first astonishment was past, looked earnestly vpon me, touched my body with her hands, and hauing put away her former feare, shee beganne to laugh diuers times in embracing me. Then taking out of her bosome a kinde of bread which was vsed in that Country, yet not made of wheate, she put it to my mouth, speaking to me in her language, and as I afterward learned, intreated me to eate: which I did did, as hauing great neede thereof. Then she tooke me by the hand, and brought me to the riuer, there where by signes she prayed mee to drinke. I could not sufficiently satisfie my selfe in beholding her, thinking I saw rather an Angell from heauen, then a mortall creature, and barbarous. I brought her backe to the entry of the Caue, and with signes and words which she vnderstood not, I besought her to visit mee againe, as though she had knowne my meaning, and againe tooke her in mine armes. Shee in pittifull and plaine meaning, kist my forehead, and certified me by cleare and euident demon-

demonstrations, that she would come againe to see mee. This done, I returned into this place, tasted the fruit wherewith certaine trees were laden, and gaue thanks to God that I found them, encouraging my decayed hopes with this remedy. I passed that night in the same place, waiting for the day, and therewith the returne of my faire Barbarian, whom by this time I began to mistrust, fearing she would bewray me, and deliuer me to the Barbarians, whereof I imagined the Ile was full. Yet I was discharged of this feare, seeing her to returne in the morning faire as the Sunne, not accompanied with Barbarians to take me, but with victuals to sustaine me.

Hitherto the Spaniard had proceeded in his history, when his sonne returned from the Ile: whose estate hee went to know, and who brought newes, that it was almost all on fire; and all, or the greatest part of the Barbarians dead: some by weapon, some by fire; and if any were yet liuing, they were those who had saued themselves in the Sea vpon Rafts, in the water, to eschew the flames: That now they might well get from thence and escape that cursed land, the rather because there were hard by certaine Iles, whose Inhabitants were lesse Barbarous, and it might bee, in changing their place, they should change their fortune. Well, take your rest (saith the Father), I will declare to this company, the residue of my affaires, and I haue not much to say ere I haue done, although my misfortunes are infinite. I rouble not you your selfe, saith the woman, to recite them to largely: leaue me to speake the rest. I am contented, saith the Spaniard, and I shall take much pleasure to heare you relate them.

So it followed, said the woman, that by my often repaire to this place, my husband begate this boy and girle of mee. I call him husband, for that before he knew my body, hee gaue me his word so to be, after such manner as he saith is ysed amongst true Christians. He taught me
his

his language, and I mine vnto him. He learned mee his Catholike religion, & baptized me in this riuer, though not with such ceremonies as he saith are obserued in the Church, instructing me in his faith, as he knew wel how to doe, which I haue fixed in my soule, and grauen in my heart. I (ignorant and worthy of compassion) gaue him a rude minde, which, praysed be God, hee hath returned backe discret and Christian. I gaue him my person, thinking I haue not offended heerein, and from hence haue ensued these two children, which at this present augment the number of those that glorifie the true God. At diuers times I brought him a certaine quantity of gold, which is plentiful in this Ile, and some pearles, which I keepe, waiting for the happy day which may deliuer vs from this prison, and bring vs into a place, where, with all liberty and assurance, wee may bee of the flocke of Christ, whom I adore in this crosse that heere you see.

Thus ended the Barbarian *Ricla*, (which name the Spaniard had giuen her in Baptisme) the variable history of her husband and her selfe, causing all the company to maruell, especially *Auristela*, who from thenceforth most affectionately loued this woman, and much more her daughter. The young Barbarian, called *Anthony* as his father, then said that it were an ill course taken to remaine there any longer time idle, without taking order how to escape out of this Pound; for if the fire of the Ile which euery day augmented, once passed the high mountaines, or if by inforcement of the winde it came vnto them, they should bee all burnt. I am of opinion said *Ricla*, that we were best to stay here yet these two daies: for that we may discerne an Ile, in a bright sunshine & calme sea, from whence the inhabitants are wont to passe hither, to sell or exchange their commodities for ours. And seeing here is none to heare or hinder me, I will condition with them to sell mee a boate at their owne price, telling them that I haue need thereof to saue mee from the
fury

fury of these flames, together with my husband and children, who are shut vp in a Caue. Now these boates are made of Rafts couered with leather, and strong inough to keepe out the water from coming in at the sides: but as farre as I can perceiue, they neuer put forth but in smooth Sea, neyther carry they any such sailes as I haue seene others to haue that were accustomed to anchor on our shores, to sell maides or boyes. This maketh mee to believe that they are not good in the maine sea, where they say that stormes and tempests are very common.

Periander thereunto replied: Hath not *Sir Anthony* assaid this remedy during so many yeeres that hee hath heere remained? No said *Ricla*, for that whatsoeuer vigilant care I vsed in this behalfe, I could neuer finde means to agree for the price of one boate, neyther could I know what color I should pretend to cheapen any. This is true said *Anthony*; besides, I could hardly assure my safety in so weake vessels: but now that the heauens haue giuen me this counsell, I purpose to make vse thereof. All the rest were of the same opinion: and issuing out from that place, they were amazed to see the hauock which the fire and sword had made within the Ile. They saw a thousand different sorts of deaths, and how of the Barbarians yet liuing, some were vpon Rafts, beholding, a farre off, the miserable burning of their country; others were gotten into the Ile, which serued as a prison to the poore captiues. *Auristela* would haue gone thither to see if any were yet remaining in the dungeon: but that was needlesse, because immediately they saw a Raft come, and about twenty persons thereon, vvhom by their apparell they knew to bee of the number of those vnhappy people. These then came to the Sea shore, kissing the ground, and in a manner worshipped the fire, for they had vnderstood by a Barbarian who drew them out of the darke hole, that the Ile was all burning, and no cause was left why they should feare. They were friendly receiued and

comforted by *Auristela* with the rest. Some of them recounted their miseries: others concealed their mishaps, as not finding words enow to expresse them. *Ricla* marvelled that any Barbarian was found to haue so much compassion as to set them at liberty, and that a part of those who were gotten on the Rafts, did not passe into the Ile of the prison. Whereunto one of the prisoners answered; that the Barbarian who had enlarged them, had told them in the Italian tongue, all the successe of the fired Ile, counselling them to goe thether & reward themselves for their troubles past, with such gold and pearles as they should there finde; and that hee vvould come vpon another Raft to be of their fellowship, and take order for their liberty.

The accidents which they related, were so different, so strange and vnlucky, that some wept, others laughed with open mouth. In the meane time they saw coming towards the Ile, sixe of those boates whereof *Ricla* had spoken; which arrived on the shore without vnlading any merchandise, in regard they saw no Barbarian who might buy the same. *Ricla* cheapened all the boates with their wares, yet without intent to carry away all: howbeit they would sell but foure, that the others might serue them to returne backe againe.

The price once concluded vpon, *Ricla* hastened to the Caue, and paid them their demands in pieces of vncoyned gold. They gaue two Barkes to those who came last out of prison, and tooke Sea in two others: in the one whereof they put so much prouision of victualls as they could get, with foure persons of them who had newly beene set at liberty: and into the other entred *Auristela*, *Periander*, the two *Antonies*, father and sonne, *Ricla*, her daughter *Constance*, and the wife *Transilla*.

Before their departure, *Auristela* would take leaue of the ashes of her deare *Clelia*, all accompanied her, shee wept on the graue: which hauing moystned vvith teares, they

they went backe to the shore. There first kneeling on the earth, and intreating heauen with humble and deuout prayers to send them a good voyage, and direct them what course they ought to take, they vvent aboard their boates. That of *Periander*, was Admirall; the others followed after: and as they were beginning to rowe (for they had no sailes) there came to the Sea side a Barbarian who called to them in the *Toscane* language; If happely you that are in these boates be Christians, receiue him here aboard, who also is one, & vvhich intreateth you in the name of the true God. Then one of the other boats told them of the formost, that this was the Barbarian who had drawne them out of the dungeon. Which *Periander* hearing, commanded a boate to returne towards the shore, and take in victuals: which done, with shouts and cheerefull cries, they ioyfully began their nauigation.

CHAP. VII.

Periander and his company escaped from the burning of the Island.

These foure boates had not rowed about foure miles, before they descried a tall shippe, with all sailes bearing, and the winde in the poope, which seemed to come to boord them. Without doubt said *Periander* (after hee had well regarded her) this shippe must of necessity pertaine to *Arnaldo*, which now comes backe to know how mine aduenture hath succeeded.

Periander had already informed *Auristela* all that past betwixt *Arnaldo* and him: and *Auristela* acquainted *Periander* whatsoeuer chance had befallen her during a yeare which she had passed in *Arnaldo's* company, which caused much disquiet vnto them both, because of this meeting; either of them desiring nothing lesse then to re-

D :

turne

turne into his power. For albeit the dissembled fraternity of *Periander* with *Auristela* ought to free *Arnaldo* from all suspicion; yet so it is, that their feare to be discovered and knowen to be otherwise then brother and sister, much disturbed *Auristela's* minde. Besides, vvho could impeach *Periander* from beeing icalous, beholding before his eyes, and being in the hands of so mighty a Riual as this Prince? For there is no discretion of any worth, or any fidelity, able to warrant an amorous heart from the suspicions of ielousie. But the winde vvhich blew at the poope, turning contrary, they saw them immediately strike saile, and hoyse them again in a moment to the ships top. The ship, driven with the winde, began to runne backe the way it came, and went farre from the boates with incredible swiftnesse.

Auristela and *Periander* recovered their spirits, and began to take breath: But the rest which were vvith them in the boates, vvould vvillingly haue forsaken them, to enter into that vessell, vvwhose talnetse promised them better assurance of their liues: and faine they would haue followed it, but they lost the sight thereof in lesse then two houres; and their onely helpe left, was to make towards an Ile, whose high mountains couered with snow, made it seeme hard by, albeit the same was about sixe leagues off. The night in the shutting of the euening was darke, they had a fore winde, thereby easing their armes; when betaking themselues to their oares, they endeououred to recover the Ile. It was about midnight, as far as the Barbarian *Anthony* could iudge by the north guards, when they came to land: and both because the waters did beate easily on the shore, and that the ebbe was little, they came on ground with their boates, and drew them out of the water by strength of hand.

The night was so cold, that they were compelled to seeke remedies against the Ice: yet could they finde none. *Periander* appointed all the women to enter into the chiefe

chiefe boate, and sitte as close one to another as they could; that being clustered in an heape, their cold might be the lesse, and one of them heate another.

The men made a corps of guard, and placing sentinels, expected the day to discover where they were; for as yet they knew not whether the Ile were inhabited or desert. And like as it is a thing naturall, that cares keepe any one waking, there was not one that could sleepe in all the company. This the Spanish Barbarian perceiuing, hee spake to the Italian saluage, that to beguile the time, and remoue the displeasure of a bad night, it might please him to relate vnto them the aduentures of his life, which could be none other but strange & rare, hauing brought him to such a state and place. I will doe it with all my heart, answered the Italian; albeit I feare that my misfortunes hauing beene so many, so extraordinary and vnheard of, my report will not finde any beleefe amongst you. To this replied *Periander*: By those that haue chanced vnto vs, we are taught and made apt to belieue whatsoever any one can tell vs, though it incline rather to impossibility, then any likelihood of truth. Let vs goe then (answered the Barbarian) to the boates side, where these Gentlewomen are; it may bee some of them will fall asleepe in hearing my tale, and peraduenture some will shake off drowlinesse, and make declaration of pittie: for it is some ease to him that relates his mishaps, to see or heare any one which hath a feeling thereof with compassion. So they stood round about the boate, and all of them gaue attentiu eare to him that seemed a Barbarian, who began his history in this sort.

CHAP. VIII.

Wherein Rutilio giueth an accompt of his life.

My name is *Rutilio*, my country *Siena*, one of the most famous cities of *Italie*. I am by calling a professor on the *Violl*, the onely, and vnmatchable in dancing, and such a one as might haue beene happy if I vvould. There was a rich knight at *Siena*, on whom the heauens had bestowed a daughter, more faire then wise. This damself, her father was in hand to marry vnto a knight of *Florence*: and the better to supply with art, wherethe gifts of nature failed, he would haue mee teach her to dance; for an actiue and gentle behaiour is better discerned in dancing then any way else. I began to teach her how to moue her body, but made her forget the measures of the minde, which shee easily yeelded vnto mee: and fortune, which threw downe the streame of my mis-happes, induced me to take her from her fathers house, & carry her to *Rome*. But as it vsually happens, that loue giueth vs deceiptfull pleasures, and vices beare their chastisement on their shoulders, wee were both taken on the way by the diligence which her father made to follow vs. Her confession and mine being, that I carried away my wife, and that shee went with her husband, auailed nothing with the iudges, but they condemned mee to death. A woman came to visit mee in the hole, who they said was taken for witchcraft, and the Gaolers wife had taken her from the prison, to heale a daughter of hers, by hearbs and words of such a disease, wherof the Physicians were altogether ignorant.

To be short: this witch promised to saue my life if I would espouse her: and I seeing my selfe bound hand and foot, the euening before I should be brought to execution, and as it were the halter about my neck, without meanes

means or hope of remedy, I promised the mariage which she required, vpon condition shee would free mee from this distresse. She tolde me that I should be without care, and that the night following, she would break the stocks and chaines, and in despite of any impeachment would set mee at libertie, in such a place where mine enemies, were they neuer so great or mightie, should doe mee no harme. I esteemed her not as a forceresse, but an Angell sent from heauen to deliuer mee. The night came, and shee also in the darknesse thereof approached to mee, offering vnto mee a wands end, willing mee to take hold thereof, and follow her. I was something troubled at the first meeting: but, the matter concerning my life, I stood on my feet, finding my selfe without setters, all the prison doores open, and aswell the prisoners as the keepers buried in a dead sleepe. Comming into the streete, my guide spred a mantle on the ground, placed mee thereon, willing mee to bee of good courage, and giue ouer my deuotion for a time. I knew then that this was an euill signe, and that shee would carry mee in the aire. And though like a christian I mocked at these force-ries, yet the apparent hazard of death made mee neuer-thelesse to obey her. I stood in the midst of the mantle: and shee beginning to whisper words which I vnderstood not, the mantle beganne to rise in the aire, and I to tremble with so great feare, that there was not a saint in al the Letany whom I did not implore for help. She knew my feare, and perceiuing my prayers, commanded me to let them alone. Vnhappy man (said I to my selfe) what good can I hope for, if I bee forbidden to aske of God, from whom all good things proceed! I shut mine eyes, and suffered my selfe to bee transported by the diuels, because witches haue none other carriers. And hauing so flowne about foure houres by mine accompt, vpon the breake of the day I found my self in an vnknowne country. The mantle fell to the ground, and my guide said

thus vnto me; Thou art now in a place, friend *Rutilio*, where no mortall creature can hurt thee. With which words shee embraced mee after a lasciuious manner. I thrust her backe with mine armes: and by the brightnes of the morning which then began to shew light, I perceiued, that shee who embraced mee was in the shape of a Wolfe.

This vision troubled my wits, and turned my heart topsieturue. But as it falleth out in great perils oftentimes, that small hope to preuaile drawes courage from such whose forces are desperate; the little which I had, made mee to lay holde on a knife which by chance I had about me, and with enraged feare, I furiously thrust it into her body whom I beleued to haue beene a Wolfe: who falling to the earth, lost this horrible figure, instead whereof I found dead and bleeding this vnhappy forceresse.

Consider a little I pray you in vvhat case I vvvas then; in a strange land, and vvithout any person to conduct mee. Longtime I vvaited for the day, but it came not, neither did any token of Sunne-rising appeare in the *Horizon*. I vvvent away from the coaste vvvhich had so feared and terrified mee, oftentimes lifting my cies to heauen: and considering the motion of the starres it seemed vnto mee, respecting the course they had made, it should haue beene day a good vvwhile since. Being in this confusion, I heard certaine people vvho came talking to the place vvhere I vvvas. I vvvent against them, beseeching them in the *Toscane* language to tell mee the name of this country. This land is *Norway*, said one in the same tong: But who art thou which in these quarters, and in a speech which so few doe vnderstand, makest this demand? In few words I gaue him an accompt of my voyage, and withall the death of the forceresse. Hee which spake to mee, shewed a compassionate feeling of my mis-happes, and said thus;

Thou maist thanke God (good man) for hauing deliuered

liuered thee from the hands of these sorcerers, whereof there are very many in these Northerne countries. Men say they transforme themselues into Wolues, as wel men as women, for there are such of both sexes. How they doe this I knowe not: but being a Christian and a Catholique, I beleeeue not any such thing, and yet experience hath made mee see so much. That which I can heerein conceiue, is, that these transformations are nothing else but the diuels illusions permitted by God for mans correction. I asked him what time of the day it might bee: hee tolde mee that in these countries farre towards the North, the year was distinguished into foure seasons, and that there were three moneths continually night, wherein the Sunne could not bee seene aboue the earth in any sort; three moneths twilight of the day, not being absolutely day or night; three months of bright day, wherein the Sunne neuer went downe; and other three moneths of the nights twilight: I hat the season wherein they now were, vvas twilight of the day, and that it vv ere a vaine hope to expect as yet the Sunnes brightness, or thinke vpon returne into my country till the season of the day, vv herein shippes vv ent from those coasts to carry marchandise into England, France and Spaine. He demanded of mee, if I knewe any trade whereby to get my liuing till the time of the year came wherein I might returne. I told him I vv as a maister to teach dancing, a great caperer, and a good player on the Violl. Heereat hee began to laugh, and said that these exercises were neuer vsed in that country.

In conclusion, hee asked me if I had any skill in goldsmiths craft: and I answered, I could learne whatsoeuer hee would teach mee. Come with mee then said hee: yet first of all, our best course is, to commit to the earth this wretched woman. Hauing then buried her, hee brought mee into a towne, vv here all those that walked in the streets, carried light slaues of pine-tree in their hands,

hands, and so traded in their affaires. As wee vwalked together, I enquired of him when and how hee came into that country, and if hee vvere indeed an Italian. His answer heereunto vvas ; that one of his grandfathers coming as a marchant from Italy to Norway, vvas there married : and hauing taught his children his language, it extended it selfe to all their linage, vnto him who was one of the olde mans nephewes ; who, ouerswaied by the loue of his wife and children, vvas made a free denizen of this country, not hauing any minde of Italy, or any friends or kinned which he had there.

If I should now discourse of the house I entred into, the wife, children, seruants and riches which I there found, the vvelcome and good intertainement they made mee, I should neuer make an end.

So it fell out, that in a small time I learned his occupation, and made my selfe able to get my liuing. In the meane season the great day came, and my maister would carry part of his marchandise to certaine Iles hard by, & to others a great way off. I also bore him company partly for curiosities sake, and partly to sell certaine commodities which I had, for I had already gotten mee a stock. In which voyage I saw things worthy of admiration and astonishment, others to giue contentment of laughter, obseruing the customes and ceremonies not viewed or practised by other nations. In the end, two moneths after, vvee vnderwent a storme of fourtie daies continuance, and at last fell amongst the rockes on the Ile from whence vvee came, where our shippe broke in pieces, and of those that were therein, I onely was left aliuie.

CHAP. IX.

Wherin Rutilio profcuteth his story.

THe first thing which I saw, vvas a Barbarian hanged on a tree, vvhcreby I knew that I vvas in the land of the saluages: whereupon feare instantly presented before mine eyes a thousand kindes of death. And not knowing what to doe, I feared and expected them all at once. In the end, necessity, being (as men say) the Mother of arts, an extraordinary conceipt came into my minde, which caused mee to take downe the Barbarian from the tree: and hauing put off my clothes, and buried them in the sand, I put on his attire, vvhich could not chuse but fit mee well, being none other but skinnes vnsewed and neuer cut out by measure, but bound onely on the body as you haue seene. The better to dissemble their language, and not bee knowne for a stranger, I tained my selfe dumbe and deafe: and with this industrie I passed further into the Ile, skipping & capring in the aire. I had not gone farre, before I descried a troope of Barbarians, who came round about mee, demanding in their tong (as I knew afterward) who I was, how I was called, whither I went, and from whence I came. My answer to them was silence: and making all the signes and demonstrations I could of one that was dumbe, I withdrew my selfe from them, iterating my leapes and capers. The children followed mee, and forsooke mee not whithersoeuer I went, and vwith this policie I passed for a Barbarian, and dumbe: and the children to see mee leape, fed mee with such victualls as they had.

In this maner I continued three yeares amongst them, and might there haue spent my whole life without being knowne. I obserued their language with such diligence and curiosity, that I learned a great part thereof, & knew
the

the prophetic which an old Barbarian (on whom they marvellously depended) had made as touching their kingdome. For accomplishment whereof, I have seene many men sacrificed, and diuers maids bought for this effect, vntill the burning happened which you know. I saued my selfe from the fire, I gaue aduertisement to the prisoners in the dungeon, where I beleue you haue bin. Afterward espying these boats, I ran down to the sea side, my prayers found place in your generous mindes, you receiued me aboard: for which I giue you infinite thanks, hoping through heauens fauour, which hath drawne vs out of so great misery that there is kept in store for vs an happy end of our voyage.

Thus *Rutilio* finished his relation, which made all such as heard him to maruell, with contentment. The day came, which was cloudie, boisterous, and with great likelihood of snowe. *Auristela* then gaue to *Persander* that which she had receiued of *Clelia*, namely, two boxes of wax, in one whereof was a rich crosse of Diamonds, and in the other two round pearles of inestimable value. By these iewels it was knowne, that they were persons of qualitie, although it better appeared in the gentlenesse of their spirits, and in the sweetnesse of their behavior, then which nothing could bee more pleasing.

The Barbarian *Anthony*, seeing that it was day, entred a little further into the Ile: but hauing descried nothing but mountaines couered with snowe, he returned backe to the boats, and brought them newes that this country was desert; for which cause they must speedily depart, and goe and seeke elsewhere to defend themselves from the cold, and preuent other necessities which at that present threatned them. This was the cause that they put to sea with as much haste as possibly they could, shaping their course to another Ile, which they kenned not farre from thence. As they rowed, each boat hauing onely two oares apiece, they heard a voyce issuing from one
of

of the two other barks, the sweetnes whereof induced them to hearken diligently. They obserued, but especially the Barbarian *Anthony*, that the words vvhich vvere sung, were in the language of Portugall, which hee vvell vnderstood. But as they were more attentiuē to giue eare, the voice was silent, and then beganne againe to sing in Spanish, according to none other instrument but that of the oares, which easily draue forth the boats in the calme sea. This fellow (said *Ricla*) must needs bee void of businesse, that singeth out in such a season. But *Periander* & *Auristela* were of another opinion, for contrariwise they iudged him more amorous then idle: For louers conioyne easily in friendshippe with such as knowe or feele their owne euils. They tooke such a course, that hee vvhich sung came into their boat, as wel to delight themselves with his voice hard by, as to knowe vvhāt aduēture had befallen him; because they thought that hee, who could sing in such a time, either must suffer much distresse of minde, or none at all. The boats came close together; The Musician entred into that wherein vvas *Periander*: and being courteously receiued of all those that were there, hee spake vnto them halfe in Spanish, and the other halfe in the Portugall tongue;

I first giue thanks to God, then to you Gentlemen, and lastly to my voice, for this exchange: yet I think very shortly to ease you of the burden of my body: for the torments of my soule make mee to iudge sufficiently of the shortnesse of my life. You shall haue better successe then you imagine, said *Periander*: and beleue not that any griefes in the world can kill any one, seeing mine haue yet left me aliue. Hope, said *Auristela*, ouerwai-
ed by misfortunes is no more hope: vvhich, as the light best shineth in darknes, ought to be strongest in the midst of afflictions. It is an act of a base minde, and there is no greater cowardise, than to yeeld to despair, to free himself from troubles. All this is true, answered the Mus-

- cian;

cian ; and I belecue it in despite and scorne of all the experiments vvch I haue made during my whole life.

This discourle nothing hindred their rowing : so that before night they came to another Ile which also vvas voyd of inhabitants, but not of trees, whereof many were loden with fruit, vvch might serue for food, though they were drie and out of season. All of them skipped to land, whither they drew the boates, applying themselves to breake downe boughes from the trees, and make a great Cabbin to defend themselves that night from the cold. They also kindled a fire by rubbing two dry staues one against the other. And because all of them set their hands to worke, the poore frame was quickly set vp ; whither they all withdrew themselves, supplying the discomfort of the place by the greatnesse of the fire vvch they kindled. This miserable cabbin seemed to them a Royall Palace : they allwaged their extream hunger, and had quickly fallen asleepe, but were letted by the desire vvch *Periander* had to know the successe of this Musician ; praying him, if it were possible, to tell the story of his hard fortunes ; for they could not possibly bee good in these places. The courteous Musician, without further intreaty, said thus vnto him.

CHAP. X.

Of that vvch the Amorous Portugall recounted.

I Will finish my story with as few words as I can possible; and therewith end my life, if I may credit a certaine dreame vvch hath troubled my minde the last night. I am by Nation a Portugall, of Noble blood, and rich in the goods of Nature and Fortune. My name is *Manuel de Sosa*, my Country Lisbone, and my profession a Souldier. Next vnto my Fathers house, and but a wall betwixt

twixt, another Knight dwelt, of the ancient stocke of the *Peregrin*, who had one only daughter, heire of his goods, the staffe and hope of her Parents welfare, who for her birth, wealth, and beauty was desired in marriage by the best of the Realme. And I who being next neighbour to her house, had best meanes to see her, I viewed her, got knowledge of her, and adored her with more doubtfull then certaine hope to espouse her. And to gaine time, knowing shee could not bee wonne with prayers, promises, nor gifts; I brought to passe that one of my Parents demanded her friends that I might haue her to wife, because that in birth, reuenues, or age, there was no difference betwixt vs. Answer was made, that their daughter *Leonora* was not yet olde enough to bee married, and that I should stay yet two yeares; assuring me on their words, that in all that time they would not dispose of their daughter without giuing me notice.

This first blowe I endured with patience, but left not to serue her openly by colour of mine honest intent: which was immediately knowne ouer all the City. Shee with her Parents licence, receiued my seruices, witnessing that if she were not delighted therewith, at the least shee did not despise them.

It fell so about this time, that the King sent me for Generall of part of his forces which held in Barbary. The day came when I should depart: and forasmuch as it was not also the day of my death, there is no absence vvch killeth, nor paine which consumeth. I spake vnto her father, praying him that hee would againe giue mee his word to stay for me these two yeares; which hee granted me, and permitted mee to take my leaue of his wife and daughter, vvch came forth with her mother into the hall: and with her came honesty, brauery, and modesty. I fell in a trance when I saw so many perfections of beauty hard by me: I would haue spoken, but my heart and voyce failed me, my tongue cleaued to the roose of my mouth

mouth, and I neyther knew nor was able to doe any thing else then hold my peace, and by my silence giue a forcible token in what astonishment I was. This, her father perceiuing, who vvas both vwise and courteous, hee embraced mee with these words: Euer, Sir *Mmanuel*, the daies of departure inhibit the freedome of the tongue: and it may be this silence doth speake better in your fauour then eloquence it selfe would doe. Goe and execute your charge, and returne as soone as you can, for I will not faile in one point of that which concerneth my word, or your seruice. My daughter *Leonor* is obedient; my wife hath care to please mee; and I haue the desire which I haue spoken: with which three things you may looke for an happy euent of your purpose.

These words were in such sort imprinted in my memory, that I haue neuer forgotten them, nor shall doe as long as I liue. The faire *Leonor* or her Mothers spake no more then I. Thence I departed to goe into Barbary: two yeares I followed my charge, and then returned to Lisbon, and found that the renowne of *Leonors* beauty had not onely passed the valls of the City, but the frontiers of the Realme, and was extended into all Spaine, and diuers other parts: where upon Embassages were sent from Princes and Lords, whose purpose was to marry her.

In the end, seeing the terme of two yeeres expired, I againe beseeched her Father to giue her vnto me. O wretched man that I am! It is not possible for me to stand any longer vpon these circumstances; for I perceiue death calleth for my life, and I feare will not giue me liberty to declare my mishaps: which, if it might fall out, I would not hold them for such. To bee briefe, vpon a certaine day they aduertised me, that the Sunday following they would giue me my desired *Leonor*. At vvhich newes, my contentment vvas so much, that it had well-nigh cost me my life. I inuited my parents, called my friends, provided apparell,

apparell, and sent Presents, and did whatsoeuer might make declaration that I should be married vnto *Leonor*.

The day being come, I was accompanied with the best in the City to a Monastery of religious Nunnes, called the Mother of God, where they said my Mistresse waited for me the day before, because she would haue her marriage solemnized in this Monastery with the licence of the Archbishop of that City.

Heere the sorrowfull Knight pawed a little, as it were to take breath, and then went forward with his discourse after this manner. I came to the Monastery, which was richly garnished: almost all the chiefe personages of the Realme came forth before me, which stood there waiting with an infinite number of the greatest Ladies of the towne. It seemed as though the Church would haue fallen downe, by reason of the mulicke of voyces and instruments. At the sound whereof, the incomparable *Leonor* came forth, accompanied vvith the Prioreisse, and many other religious vvomen, attired in a gowne of white Satin vvithout vaile, cut after the Spanish fashion, vpon greene cloth of gold, and the cuts tyed with great rich pearles. Her haire vvvas spread in length vpon her shoulders: vvwhich vvvere so yellow, that they defaced the Sunnes brightnesse; and so long, that they kist the ground. The girdle, chayne, and iewels vvwhich she wore, could hardly be valued. Once more I affirme, that shee came forth so faire, so braue, and so perfect, that she caused the women to enuie, and the men to admire her. For my selfe, I confesse in seeing her, I thought my selfe vvworthy to deserue her. There vvvas in the Church, as it were a scaffold in the middelt of the quire, vvhere our marriage should bee ioyfully solemnized: vpon vvwhich, *Leonor* ascended first, where shee more evidently discouered the excellency of her beauty. Shee appeared to all those that beheld her, like the morning at break of day, or (as the fables report) as *Diana* appearing in the woods:

E

but

but the discreeter fort would compare her to none but herselfe.

I came vp next on the same scaffold, thinking that I should mount to heauen: and kneeling downe before her, I did seeme in a maner to worship her. All the temple resounded with the voices of an infinite number of persons, who said; Liue you happy louers: many yeares may you liue in the world: let your children stand roūd about your table: and your loue bee extended to your childrens children: let not your harts euer bee touched with iealousie: let enuie lie prostrate at your feete; and good fortune neuer forsake your house.

All these blessings filled my soule with contentment, seeing the common pleasure which the people had of my fortune. Then the faire *Leonor* tooke mee by the hand: and speaking somewhat louder, shee said thus; You knowe well Sir *Manuell*, how my father gaue you his word, that hee would not dispose of my person in two yeares, accounting from the time that you demanded mee in mariage. And I also said vnto you, (as I remember) when I saw my selfe vrged by your suit, being thereunto bound by infinite seruices which I owe rather to your curtesie then my desert, that I would neuer haue any other husband vpon earth but you. My father, as you haue seene, hath performed his word; and I vwill holde mine vnto you as you shall perceiue. And because I know that deceipts, although they bee honourable or profitable, cannot bee void of some treason when they are prolonged; I will in a word bring you out of that error wherein you suppose I haue brought you. I am married Sir, and my husband is liuing, and by no means in the world can I bee married vnto any other. I leaue you not for any one in earth, but for one which is in heauen. Iesus Christ, very God and Man, is my true husband: I haue giuen to him my word rather then to you; to him without any deceipt, and with my vwhole will:

to

to you with dissimulation, and without any assurance. I confesse, if I should haue chosen a spouse in earth, there is none equall vnto you : but if, because I haue chosen GOD in heaven, you thinke this to bee deceitfull or ill dealing, inflict on mee what paine you will, or cal me by what name you please : for there is no promise, threatening or death which shall seporate mee from my spouse which was crucified.

Heere shee ended her speech : and at the same time the Priorelle and the other Nunnes beganne to take off her clothes, and to cut the pretious tresses of her haire : I stood like one dumbe without reply ; and kneeling before her, yet without teares, halfe by force I kissed her hand. Shee with christian pitie cast her arme about my necke. I rose vp, and speaking aloud that all might vnderstand mee, I vttered this saying ; *Shee hath chosen the best part.* Having so said, I descended from the scaffold, returning to mine owne house in the company of my friends : where so strange a successe passing to and fro in my phantasie, in a maner I lost my wits, and for the same cause am now presently to lose my life. With that hee gaue a great sigh, and falling to the ground he yeeled vp the ghost.

CHAP. XI.

The death of the Spanish Gentleman, and how Periander and his company landed in another Island.

Periander hastily ranne vnto him, and found that hee was dead, leauing them all in confusion and maruell at such a strange accident. This sleepe (then said *Auristela*) hath excused this poore Knight from telling vs his last nights dreame, the prison of the Barbarians, and the distresses which hauebrought him vnto such a lamentable

ble end. Hereunto the barbarous *Ambony* replied; Misfortunes are alwaies no lesse to bee feared, then at vvhathoure they end their liues that suffer them.

They provided for his buriall in the best manner they could: his proper clothes did serue for his winding sheet: the snowe, for the earth: and for the crosse, they tooke that which they found on his breast vnder a wallecoate, beeing a crucifixe, because hee was a Knight wearing Christs cognizance. Neyther was it needfull to haue found for him this honourable token of nobility; for his graue countenance, and vwise discourse, had before very sufficiently assured them thereof. Compassion did her vvonted office, drawing teares from all the company.

Shortly after the day appeared, they brought downe the boates into the water, and it seemed to them that a smooth and calme Sea expected their comming: and they betwixt feare and hope, not too sad, nor yet ouerjoyed, went on their course; not knowing vvhither they should be brought. These seas are all full of small Ilands, desert for the most part: if any be peopled, they are inhabited by Rusticks, and halfe Barbarians; of small curtesie, and much pride. Yet heerewithall they desired in some one of them to receiue intertainment, because they could not belieue that their inhabitants could be so cruell, but that the mountaines of snowe and steepe rockes, which they left behinde hard by, did farre surmount them. They floted on the waters tenne dayes, without taking any Port, Land, or Couert, leauing as well on the right hand, as on the left, many small Iles, vvhich none could perceiue to bee inhabited. At last, casting their eyes on a great mountaine, vvhich they then descried, they strooke vvvithall their forces to come thither, because their boats were leake, and their prouision of victuals now failed. And being there arriued, more by the fauor of heauen, then strength of their armes, they saw two men on the shore, to whom *Tranfilla* called, asking of vvhath country they

they vvere, and vvhat religion they professed. They answered in a language vvwhich she vnderstood, that this Ile was called Holland, and by Religion they were Christians, although the place vvhere in a manner desert, because the inhabitants vvwere so fewe, that all of them had but one house, vvwhich serued for lodging to a number of people that came to a harbrough, vvwhich they pointed vvith their hand to be on the other side of a small rocke: And if you desire to provide your selues of any thing, follow vs by direction of the eye, and vvwe vvill bring you to the Hauen.

Those in the boates gaue God thanks, and by sea followed their guides that went by land. And hauing doubled the rocke vvwhich vvvas shewed them, they saw a Couert that might be called a Hauen, vvwherein vvwere tenne or twelue bottomes, some small, some meane, some great. Their ioy vvvas much to see them, hoping to change their vessels, hauing assurance vvith lesse hazard to conclude their voyage.

As they came ashore, other people came forth to receive them, as well from the lodging, as from the shippes.

Auristela got to land in the armes of *Periander*, hauing on that apparell vvwhich hee vvvas attired vvith vvwhen *Arnaldo* sold him to the Barbarians. With her came forth the faire *Transilla*: the excellent Barbarian *Constance*, and her mother *Ricla*, followed vvwith all the other that came in the boates.

The view of this admirable troope did bring such astonishment to them of sea and land, that little failed that they had not fallen downe on their faces to worship *Auristela*. They beheld her in silence vvwith such respect, that they durst not speake a word, for feare that they should be otherwaies employed then to looke vpon her. The faire *Transilla*, vvwho as before we haue said, had found by triall that they vnderstood her speech, was the first that broke this silence, and spake thus vvnto them :

Our euill fortune, continued vntill this day, hath brought vs now vpon your coast: you may know by our furniture and milde demeanor, that we rather seeke peace then warre; for neyther women nor men in distresse haue any desire to fight. Receiue vs, my masters, into your lodging, or your shippes; for the boates vvhich brou-ht vs hither, can no longer carry vs without wreck at the first commotion of the waters: and if you will giue vnto vs things necessary in exchange, eyther for gold or siluer, you shall be recompenced abundantly with ease at the highest rate you sell; which wee will as cheerefully receiue, as if it were freely giuen vs. Heereunto a man seeming to belong to one of the shippes, answered in Spanish:

He should be of small iudgement (faire Gentlewoman) that would any thing doubt of your speech: for although leasing doe dissemble, and hurt disguiseth it selfe vnder the maske of truth and honesty; It is not possible to finde place to lodge with so great beauty as yours. The Master of this lodging is courteous, so likewise are those of the shippes: choole whether you like best, to come hither, or goe to them aboard; for you shall be receiued of the one, or the other, as your worthinesse doth deserue. Since the heauen (said the Barbarian *Anthony*, hearing him speake in his own language) hath brought vs into a place where the sweet tongue of my Nation resoundeth in mine eares, I already am certainly assured that my misfortunes are at an end. Let vs to the lodging, my masters: and when we haue rested a while, we will take order to proceed on our journey with greater safety then we haue had hitherto.

Then a Mariner which was in the toppe of one of the ships, cryed out in the English tongue; I spye a ship going directly before the winde and sea, which commeth with full saile into this roade. They all prepared themselves to stand on their guard; and in the same place attended the shippe, which appeared to be very nigh vnto them

them. When they ioyned, they saw red crosses ouerthwart the sailes, and knew that in a flagge hanging on the maine top-mast, were painted the armes of England. The shippe discharged two pieces of Ordinance, and about twenty musket-shotte. Vpon the land they made a signe of peace with their voyces, because they had no artillery to answere them.

CHAP. XII.

Where is told whence they were that came in the shippe.

After the salutations on both parts, as well by those on land, as them at Sea were finished, as wee haue said, those of the shippe let fall their Anchors, and presently hoysed a skiffe into the water, which foure Mariners hanged about with Tapeltry. And taking them to their oares, there entred an old man, seeming to be three score yeeres olde, attired in a gowne of blacke Veluet reaching downe to his feet, lined with furies. and girt with a silken cord: on his head he wore a hat high and sharpe-pointed, which seemed to bee of rich furies. After him came into the boate a lusty and braue young man, foure or fiae and twenty yeeres old, attired likewise in blacke veluet, with a gilt sword in his hand, and a poygnard at his girdle. Soone after they threw from the shippe, into the boate, a man loden with irons, and a woman also fastned like him to the same yrons: he was about forty years of age, and she more then fifty. The Mariners forced forward their skiffe, and immediately came to land.

Transilla who no lesse then the other was earnest in beholding those that came in this skiffe, turning to *Amisella*, shee said thus vnto her; I pray you faire Gentlewoman couer my face a little with your scarfe, for that eyther my knowledge is small, or those which come in this

boate are such persons as I know, and which know mee also. *Aurissela* gaue her her scarfe, and straight way those of the boate came ashore, who were receiued amongst them with all manner of courtesie. Then the old man in the furred hat, approching to *Tranfillsa* said thus vnto her: If my skill deceiue mee not, Fortune hath not contradicted me in this meeting. And in speaking these wordes, he lift vp the vaile which couered the face of *Tranfillsa*, and fell in a swoone in her armes. Doublelesse, we may belieue that a nouelty so little expected, could not but plunge the standers by in a deepe admiration: and so much the more when they heard *Tranfillsa* say; O Father, what manner of comming hither is this? who brought your vvwhite haire, and reuerend yeares, into lands so farre from your natie soyle? The young man then answered: Who should bring him, but onely a desire to finde you? Both hee and I come to finde the North Pole, which might conduct vs to the hauen of rest. But seeing, praised bee God, we haue found it, bring againe to himselfe Sir *Maurice*, and grant that I may haue some part of his mirth in receiuing him as your Father, and mee as your spouse. *Maurice* recouered, and *Tranfillsa* succeeded him immediately in the like swooning. *Aurissela* halted to succour her: *Ladislaus* (who vvvas the young man) came not to her, that he might obserue a greater respect on her behalfe. But as these trances proceeding of ioy, either quickly stop the passages of life, or passe away instantly, that of *Tranfillsa* vvvas of small continuance.

The Master of the lodging intreated them to come in, that he might entertaine them vvith more commoditie, and lesse feeling of the cold. They followed his aduice: and entring into the lodging, they found it great, and sufficient to lodge a Nauy. The two prisoners vvvere also brought thither by the Harquebusiers, vvho had them in custody. Some ran to the ships to fetch victuals: others lighted candles, and furnished the tables: vvhere, vvithout

our entring into any discourse, they all satisfied their hunger, rather with diuers kinde of fish vvvhich they vvere serued vvith, then any other kinde of foode: for there vvas none other flesh, but certaine fowles, which they breed vp in these parts after so strange a manner, that I cannot but relate it.

They thrust downe staues on the sea-shore among the rocks, halfe within the water, and halfe aboue. Within a small time after, that which is couered is conuerted into stone: and that vvvhich remaineth aboue, corrupteth: and of that corruption is engendred a little bird, which flying to land waxeth greater, and is so good meat, that these are the best victuals they haue. These foules are called Barnacles, and doe chiefly abound in Ireland. The desire, which all of them had to knowe the adventures of them which last arriued, made them thinke their supper continued ouer long: which being finished, the olde *Maurice* laying his hand on the table, made a signe that all should giue him audience. Every one held their peace: and as their lips were closed vp in silence, curiosity at the same time opened their eares: which vvhen *Maurice* perceiued, he spake in this manner:

I was born in one of the seuen Iles neighbouring about Ireland, and am issued from so ancient a familie, that it sufficeth to say, I am lineally descended from the *Maurices*, for hereunto more cannot bee added. I am a christi-an Catholique, and none of those which seeke for the truth in their opinions. My parents brought mee vp to studie aswell the warre as my booke, if I may say there be any studie in warfare. Aboue all sciences, I haue had most delight in iudiciall Astrologie, wherein I haue gotten a renowne sufficiently famous. I married a faire Gentlewoman, one of the chiefest of my citie, of whom I had this daughter which is heere present. I followed such customs of my country which vvere conformable to reason, and the others onely in outward shewe: for manie times

times dissimulation is profitable. I haue had the care of bringing vp this maid, for her mother died two yeares after her birth: and I lost the staffe of mine age, and the care of this childs education increased. For ease whereof, it beeing too heauie a burthen for weake and weary shoulders, perceiuing her olde enough to bee married, I gaue her this yong man sitting by my side, hauing first obtained my daughters consent: for I hold it reasonable that fathers should mary their daughters with their good wills: for it is not for a day that they must keepe company together, but all the time of their life. Which, manie fathers contemning, haue bene the occasion of infinit inconueniences, which haue followed thereupon, and will hereafter alwaies ensue. Now you must knowe, that in our country there is a custome, the worst of all those that are wickedly obserued: vvhich is, that the mariage agreed vpon, and the wedding day comn, those that are espoused, and their brothers if they haue any, together with the nearest kinned on both parts, meet in a house; some to bee witnesses, others to bee executioners: for I may wel tearme them such. The bride is put into a rich chamber, there staying till her husbands brothers, or (in default of such) the neereft kinsfolkes come to gather flowers in that garden where her husband onely should haue entrance. A custome brutish and barbarous: for what richer dowrie can a maid bring to her husband, then her virginity? because honestie should alwaies walk with shamefastnes, and shamefastnes with honestie: for where either of these is lost, all beautie of the world is to bee despised.

I haue many times gone about to perswade my Citizens to relinquish so prodigious a custome: but I could no sooner propound it, but that which I counsell'd them vnto, was pursued with many threatnings: whereby I finde it true, that custome is another nature, and change is as grievous as death.

Finally,

Finally, my daughter shut vp her selfe in the chamber, staying till this custome might take effect : and vvhhen a brother of her husbands would hane entred to beginne this bad action, beholde: Forth came *Tranfillsa* into the hall where we all abroad, with a dart in her hand ; faire as the Sun, but furious like a Lionesse.

Hitherto *Maurice* had continued his history, and e-uery one harkened vnto him with all attention possible : when *Tranfillsa* taking againe the same courage that shee had at that time when shee was seene in the occasion related by her father, she rose vp, her speech troubled with anger, her face with blushing, and her eies on fire, with a gesture that might haue made her lesse fair then she was, if great beauties could bee abated by accident: and taking the word from her fathers mouth, she spake that which shall be told you in another chapter.

CHAP. XIII.

Wherein Tranfillsa prosecuteth the story begunne by her Father.

I Came forth (said *Tranfillsa*) into the great hall, as my father was about to tell you: and looking round about, threatening these barbarous people with my darts point, who, vnder colour of complements would till another mans field, I passed through the midst of them, & came into the street, hauing no company but my displeasure; and from thence with one race to the sea-side: where, after a thousand discourses which I made in my phantasie I entred into a boat which there I found by chance; and taking holde of a paire of oares, I rowed from the land as farre as I could. But seeing they followed nice in greater boats which were forced forward with more strength then mine, and that it was impossible to saue my selfe

selfe by flight; I left the oares which I had taken, & took againe the dart which I had left, with an intent to abide them, and rather to lose my life than yeeld my selfe againe into their power; first, reuenging the wrong which they were about to offer mee. The heauen pitying my misfortune, raised such a winde, that my boat was carried into the maine sea without help of oares, vntil it came to a current which draue it with violence a great deale more forward, depriuing my pursuers of al hope to ouertake mee; who durst not hazard themselves to passe any further. It is very true, said *Ladislas*, that I had not left off to follow you, as she that carried my soule with her: but the night came, wee lost your sight; and besides, lost all hope euer to finde you aliue, but onely in the tongues of renowne, which will neuer suffer an action to die, so worthy to be made famous. It fell out, said *Tranquilla*, that the same winde draue mee on a certaine shore where I found fishermen: who gently requied mee, provided my lodging, and besides offered mee an husband if I had none, and I beleue without any such conditions as I fled from. But like as couetousnes raigneth euery where, & stretcheth her Empire euen vnto the rocks and gulfes of the sea, yea, into the most hard and wilde hearts; she entered this night into these clownish mindes, which agreed among themselves to sell mee to the Pirates whom they had descried nigh vnto that place; for that the bootie which they had made of mee all together, could not bee diuided. I could well haue offered them a greater price then they demanded of the Pirats: but I rather chose to fall into their hands, then returne into those of my citizens.

As the Rouers passed by, the next morning, they sold mee vnto them, I knowe not at what rate: but first they spoiled me of all the brides iewels which I wore. I may say that the theeues vsed mee better than my kinsfolkes, willing mee not to torment my selfe, because they had
not

not bought me to be made a slaue, but to be a Queen, yea, Queene of the whole Vniuerse, if the prophecies of this barbarous Ile, whereof there was so much talke in the world, were not false and lying.

How I came thither, after what sort the Barbarians receiued mee, and how I learned their tongue, their manners, ceremonies and customes, the vaine accomplishment of their prophetic, the meeting of these Gentlemen, the burning of the Ile, and finally, the obtaining of our liberty, I may tell you another time at more leasure, and to better purpose: In the meane time I will resigne the place to my father, to the end hee may declare vnto vs what fortune hath brought him to make mine so good, whereas least of all I expected it.

Thus *Transilla* finished her discourse, houlding all the company enchained to her sweet tongue, and in admiration of her beautie. And then *Maurice* her father spake thus vnto her; Thou knowest my girle, that among my studies and most pleasing exercises, I was chiefly addicted to those of iudiciall Astrologie, because when they are met withall they better content mens desires than anie other, not onely in things past and present, but likewise in such as are yet to come. I then seeing thee to bee lost, noted the houre and minute, obserued the starres, considered the aspects of the planets, their places, and houses necessarie; to the end my paines might answer my desire. For no science is so apt to beguile as this art. The deceit lieth only in want of true knowledge, which chiefly happeneth by the swiftnes of the heauens, bearing all the starres with them: whose influence cometh to vs in one place and not in another. And if the Astrologer sometimes hit right in his iudgements, this is because he lea- neth to that which is most likely to be true and oftenest experimented. And the best Astrologer in the world is the Diuell: who is manie times deceived, although hee iudge not of future euents by this science alone, but also
by

by coniectures; which wee that are but learners in this Science, cannot doe but by diuers assaies, and little assurance. Notwithstanding all this, I found that thy losse should continue two yeares, and that I should finde thee againe this very day, and in this very place, to make my white haire young, and to giue God thanks for the recovery of my riches, reioycing my minde with thy presence, although I know that this shall be with the expence and cost of some teares: for good succesles are ordinarily balanced by mishaps, which haue, as it were, a Lordship and possession amidst our fortunes; to teach vs that there is no eternall good thing in this life, nor euill vvhich is infinite. God will afford vs this fauor (then said *Amistela*, who had bene silent a long time) to send vs an happy voyage, because that so good a meeting promisseth vs no lesse.

The woman prisoner, who had heard *Tranfilla* most attentiuely, rose vp, though she were in yrons; and in despite of him to whom she was chained, vvhich would haue hindred her, spake that which followeth in another chapter.

CHAP. XIII.

Wherein is declared who were the prisoners incained.

IF such as are afflicted may haue liberty to speake before them that are in happy case, I beseech all this company here to grant me so much for this once. I will be nothing troublesome, for the shortnesse of my speech shall moderate the displeasure which might arise by harkning thereunto. Thou complaineest, said shee, turning towards *Tranfilla*, of the barbarous custome of the city, as though it were a saluage action to walke a horse in a race, before he runne the career. But know that in all things, experience

rience is the mistresse of Arts : and it had beene better to fall in thine husbands company after thou hast beene tried, then not to fall in any sort whatsoeuer. At this last word, the man that was in chaines with her, strooke her on the face with his fist, and with threats thus saide vnto her :

O *Rosamond*, it is no maruel that thou hauing spent thy whole life in wantonnesse, dost now condemne as euill, the honesty of Gentlewomen. Know ye Gentlemen said he, looking on all them that were by, that this woman whom ye see bound, like one out of her wits, is that famous *Rosamond* heretofore so much beloued by the King of England, that she commanded the King & the Realm, made, and dissolued the Lawes, aduanced the vicious which were put downe, and ouerthrew the vertuous which were promoted. Shee was so boundlesse in her pleasures, that breaking the chaines of Adamant, wherewith she had fastned the Kings heart, her outrageous and vnrulie appetites constrained him to leaue her, with as much contempt as he had honoured her before. As touching my selfe, I liued full of despise, with desire to make knowne to the world, how the fauours of my Prince were ill bestowed in his affection which hee bore to this wanton. For I haue a certaine enuious minde, a Satyricall penne, and a railing tongue, delighting in despitefull iests : and to vtter one, I would not onely lose a friend, but an hundred thousand liues. Neyther prisons nor banishments could stop my mouth, no threats terrifie me, no correction amend me. To be brieue, the day of our last payment came to vs both at once. The King proclaimed throughout his Realme, that none should glue her eyther in almes, or for money, any thing else, but bread to eate, and water to drinke, and that they should conduct me with her, into one of these desolate lles which are heere : which punishment is more cruell vnto mee, then if they had taken away my life, for the time

time I passe in her company. Consider *Clodio*, said *Rosamond*, how much I dislike thy fellowship; for a thousand times I was in minde to cast my selfe into the sea: and the cause why I did not effect it, was, lest I should dragge thee after me; for it I could be in hell without thee, my torments would be mitigated. I confesse my faults haue beene great, but they haue lighted on a weake subiect; whereas thine lay on the shoulders of a man of great strength: which neuerthelesse haue produced none other benefit, but a vaine delight, and lighter then the chaffe which is carried away in a whirle-winde. Thou hast shamed the reputation of a thousand honest women, and blasted the honour of as many worthy men; diffamed as many families as thou hast knowne; and discovered as many secrets as thou hast had notice of. In the end, thou hast beene so hardy, to reprocue thy King, thy Citizens, thy friends, thine owne kindred, and discredit all the world. I would the king had beene pleased, that I might haue ended my life by any other kinde of death, then by the wounds I receiue continually from thy tongue: from which, neyther heauen, nor the Saints can bee sometime secured. And heerewithall, said *Clodio*, my conscience doth not accuse me euer to haue told a lye. It hath enough to accuse thee, said *Rosamond*, were it but for the verities thou hast spoken: for all truths must not be blazed abroad to the view of euery one.

Shee hath reason then, spake *Maurice*, in saying that the truth of faults committed in secret, ought not to bee made publike, especially those of Kings: for it belongeth not to a priuate man to reprocue his Soueraigne, nor blaze the Princes faults in their subiects hearing: Neyther should this bee a meanes to amend their errors, but to make small reckoning thereof; for that sometimes, open correction hardneth his nature that receiueth it, and rather maketh him wilfull, then able to be reformed. And if correction amongst all should bee with brotherly

affection,

affection, why should not the Prince enioy this priuiledge? Moreover, the honor which is lost by writing, can neuer be restored; without which, the offences are neuer pardoned. Hereupon by good right, writers of inuectiues are banished, and drawne from their houses: not onely without honour, but besides with infamy. I know all this, answered *Clodio*: but if I may not be suffered to speake nor write, though they cut off my tongue & mine armes, yet I would put my mouth to the ground and cry as loud as I could, vntill that reedes should spring there, as it happened to *Mydas*. Let vs make peace between *Rosamond* and *Clodio*, said *Ladislaus*, and let vs marry them together: it may be through the Sacramental blessing, and both their discretions, they will alter their course of life, in changing their estate. I wil sooner, said *Rosamond*, thrust a knife into my body, to let out my soule, which is already at my teeth, hauing onely heard speech of such an vnhappy mariage. I will not kill my selfe, said *Clodio*: for though I haue a bad tongue, yet the pleasure I take in speaking euill when I speake well, maketh mee haue a desire to liue. It is true that I am purposed to shunne the face of Princes; for they haue long armes, and can reach where-soeuer, and whom-soeuer they list, as experience hath made me perceiue. And also Charity teacheth vs to pray for the life & health of the Prince, though he be wicked. He that knoweth all this, said the Barbarian *Anthony*, is at the point of amendment. There is no sinne so great, but repentance will blot it out: yet words are like stones, which let goe from the hand, retorne not to the place from whence they came, but after they haue giuen the stroke; and so seldome it happeneth that to repent of that which is spoken, can lessen the offence: yet this it the best Phylicke for diseases of the soule.

CHAP. XV.

Of Prince Arnaldo's arrival at the Island where Periander and his company were.

They were in this discourse when a Mariner came in to the lodging to tell them, that a great shippe vvas come to the Hauen, which he had no knowledge of. He had scarcely said so much, but they heard the great guns of the same shippe, which saluted those in the Hauen, and those of *Maurice* vvhich answered them. All those in the lodging came immediately to the Hauen: and *Periander* seeing the shippe newly arriued, knew it pertained to the Prince of Denmarke, whereat he was nothing contented; but contrarily it turned his heart vpside-downe. The like alarmes his *Auristela* receiued, as she that knew by long experience the loue which *Arnaldo* bore her: neyther could shee imagine how the wils of him and *Periander* should agree together, but that the arrowes of iealousie must goe through their soules. *Arnaldo* was now come to the Hauen, and *Periander* came foremost to receiue him: but *Auristela* stirred not from her place, but rather would haue desired that her feet might be planted in the ground, & conuerted into roots, as happened to the daughter of *Peneas*, when she fled before *Apollo*.

When *Arnaldo* saw *Periander*, he knew him, and skipping from the boares sterne to land, said thus in embracing him. If I (*Periander*) were so happy as to finde with thee thy sister *Auristela*, I could feare no euill, nor hope for so great a good. Shee is vvith me, valorous Prince, said *Periander*; for the heauens being carefull to fauour thine honest and vertuous intents, haue preferred her for thee. Already they all were informed that this vvas the Prince of Denmarke: and yet *Auristela* remained immoueable, and dumbe like an image. Wirth her vvas the faire *Tranfilla*, and the two that seemed Barbarians,

Ricla

Ricla and *Constance*. *Arnaldo* came nere, and kneeling before *Auristela*: Thou art well found O north Pole which my thoughts doe follow, and the fixed starre that guidest me to the haue of my desires. To all this *Auristela* answered nothing but teares, which began to wash the roses of her cheekes. *Arnaldo* confounded at such an accident, could not iudge whether it proceeded from sadnes, or ioy: but *Periander* who obserued all the motions of *Auristela*, put him out of doubt, saying: My Lord, the silence of my sister proceedeth from admiration to see you in a place where you were so little expected; and her teares from the pleasure which she hath to see you, in remembrance of the debts she owes you for the good and honest entertainment which shee hath receiued at your hands. Herewithall they returned to the lodging, the tables were couered againe, their hearts were filled vvith ioy, & the glassees with excellent wines: for they become so good by carriage on the sea, that there is no Nectar comparable thereunto.

This second dinner was made for *Arnaldos* sake: to whom *Periander* related what had befallen him in the barbarous Ile, with the liberty of *Auristela*, and all other accidents whereof we haue made mention, which caused *Arnaldo* to maruell; and withall, astonished and reioycd all the whole company.

CHAP. XVI.

The discourse that past betwene Arnaldo and Periander, touching Auristela.

THen spake the Maister of the Inne: I know not if I ought to say that I am sorry for the faire weather, which the signes of heauen promise vnto the Sea. The Sunne is pure and bright, there is not a cloud to be seene

eyther nigh or far off. The waues gently beate the shore, the birds walke nigh the sea : which are all tokens of a certaine and continued calme ; which will induce these so many honourable guests to leaue mee alone. It is true said *Maurice* ; for albeit we deerely esteeme and like your company, yet the desire we haue to returne to our owne homes , will not permit vs to enioy the same any long time. As for my selfe, I purpose this night at the first watch to set saile, if my Pilot be of that minde. Whereunto *Arnaldo* replied: The losse of time can neuer be recouered, and that which is vainely spent in Nauigation, cannot be repaired. In effect, all those which were in the hauen, agreed that night to shape their course for England. *Arnaldo* tooke *Periander* by the hand , and vvent with him out of the Inne : and seeing themselues alone, that none could heare what was spoken, he said thus vnto him. It is not possible *Periander* , but thy sister *Auristela* hath told thee the purpose which vvithin these two yeares after she came into the power of the King my Father, I haue testified vnto her, so conformable to her honest desires, that neuer any word issued out of my mouth, vvwhich might trouble her chaste intentions. I neuer vvould know her affaires, any further then she vvvas willing to tell me, representing her to mine imagination, not as an ordinary personage, but as a Queene : for her honesty, and surpassing discretion, would not suffer me to conceiue any other then honest and discreet thoughts.

A thousand times I haue offered my selfe to be her husband, vvith my fathers consent , and yet mee thought mine offer was but small. Alwaies she made me answere, that vntill she had beene at Rome , vvither she vvvas going to accomplish a vow, she could not dispose of her person. Shee neuer vvould declare vnto me the quality of her owne or her parents birth, nor haue I bin importunate vvith her to tell me : because vvithout depending vpon other Nobility then her owne vertue, the same alone of
it

it selfe sufficiently deserueth, not onely the Crowne of Denmarke, but moreouer the Monarchy of the world.

I haue spoken vnto thee thus much *Periander*, to the intent, that as a man of vnderstanding and vvitte, thou shouldest consider vvhats fortune knocketh at the gate of thine and thy sisters profit; to whom I presently offer my selfe to be her husband, promising to accomplish this offer vvhenshe vwill, and where she vwill, be it vnder this poore roofe, or wihin the gilded Palace of the famous City of Rome.

Heere *Arnaldo* ended his discourse, and attentiuely harkened vnto *Perianders* answere, which was in this manner.

Worthy Prince, I know vvell the obligations wherein my sister and I stand bound vnto you for the fauors you haue done vs hitherto, and for that which you now doe, in offering to make me your brother, and her your wife. But howlocuer it may seeme folly, that two miserable strangers, banished from their country, doe not straight way accept of the good which you offer them: yet I will say this vnto you, that it is not possible for vs to receiue this fauour, but onely to acknowledge it with thankfulness. My sister and I, carried by destiny and our owne desire, are going to the holy City of Rome; and till we bethere, it seemes vve are not our selues, nor at liberty to enioy our free will. If heauen afford vs the fauour to tread vpon that land, and adore the holy reliques that are there, vve may dispose of our vvils, which are hindred at this present; and mine shall thenceforth bee vvholly employed in your seruice. Thus much I may well say vnto you, that if you attaine the accomplishment of your desire, you shall espouse a vvoman of noble birth, and besides shall haue a seruant of mee, that shall affect you more like a brother, then a brother in a law. One fauour I request amongst so many others which you haue afforded mee: which is, that you would inquire no further of

our affaires, nor of our life, to the end you compell mee not to lye, by inuventing things false and vntrue, because I cannot tell you such as are veritable. Dispose of me brother (said *Arnaldo*) and make account that I am the waxe, and you the seale, and that you may make any impression in me that you please. And if you thinke good, let vs depart hence this night, and goe for England; for from thence, wee may easily passe into France and Italy: in which voyage I meane to beare you company in any fashion you please.

Albeit *Periander* were troubled at this last offer, yet he could not excuse himselfe from receiuing it, trusting vpon time and delay, which many times alter such vn lucky accidents, to a better euent. And so these two, being brothers in law in hope, embraced each other; and returning to the Inne, tooke order for their departure.

Auristela had seene how *Arnaldo* and *Periander* went forth together; and vvas in much paine to know the resolution of their discourse. And although she knew the modesty of the Prince, and the discretion of *Periander*, yet a thousand seuerall feares disquieted her; thinking that like as *Arnaldos* loue was equall to his power, hee might turne his intreaties into force. For Patience is many times changed into rage, in the hearts of disdained louers, and courtesie into inciuility. But she was discharged of this feare and recouered her lost spirits, when shee saw them to returne so peaceably.

The foule mouthed *Clodio*, who already had knowen who *Arnaldo* was, threw himselfe at his feet, beseeching him to take him from the chaine, and deliuer him from the company of *Rosamond*. *Maurice* told him the conditions, faults, and punishment of *Clodio*, and also of *Rosamond*: and the Prince, moued with compassion vnder-tooke to obtaine their pardon from the King of England; and by this meanes brought to passe that the Capitaine, who had them in custody, tooke off their Irons, and

and set them at liberty. Whereby *Clodio* was moued to say thus: If all Lords would giue their minds to doe well, there would none busie themselves to speake euill of them. But how can wee hope that hee which doth euill, can be well reported of by any? And if vertuous deeds, and good workes bee slandered by mens malicious humours; why should not such as are wicked, be euill spoken of? Why should wee hope for any good fruit of his crosse, who hath sowed nothing but cockle and villany. Take me away with thee, O Prince, and thou shalt see that I know how to aduancethy praises aboue the circles of the Moone. Notso, answered *Arnaldo*, I will not be praised for such workes as are in me by Nature. And further I say that the praise is good, but so farre forth as hee that speaketh it, is good: and likewise it is wicked, if hee that praiseth be wicked. For it is a praise when hee that praiseth is vertuous: but a reproach when it proceedeth from a vicious person.

CHAP. XVII.

Wherein Arnaldo declareth what successe befell Taurisa.

A *Orissela* had a great desire to knowe what was passed betwixt *Arnaldo* and *Periander*, in the conference which they had out of the Inne; and impatiently waited for opportunitie to inquire of *Periander*, as also fit occasion to learne of *Arnaldo*, what was become of her damsell *Taurisa*. And euen as if *Arnaldo* had knowne her thoughts by diuination, hee said vnto her; The misfortunes which haue befallen you, faire *Aurissela*, haue made you forget those things which you are obliged alwaies to keepe in remembrance. Amongst which I would my selfe had bene defaced: for the onely imagination that you haue sometimes bene mindfull of me, might make

me liue contentedly, because none can forget that which hee neuer remembred : neuerthelesse, whether you remember mee or not remember mee at all, I am well contented with all that pleaseth you. The heauen, vvhich hath ordained me to be yours, hath not left mee any other will but that which shall obey you. Your Brother *Periander* hath tould mee many things that haue befallen you since you were carried out of my realme : which haue caused vnto me both admiration and astonishment at once : which haue made me see, that misfortunes blot out the memory of such obligations as appeare to haue bin constrained. You haue here heard no newes of my father, nor of your damsell *Taurisa*. I left him in good health, through a desire that I might bee so happie as to finde you : as touching her, I brought her with me, with an intent to sel her to the Barbarians, that she might serue mee as a spie amongst them, and learne if fortune had brought you into their power, as shee put your brother into mine. I beleue he hath already tould you so much, and what our drift was. And although Postentimes as-
saied to returne vnto the barbarian Ile, yet I was alwaies hindered by contrary windes. I returned thither againe with the same purpose and the same desire which the heauens haue caused me to finish with so great aduantage, as to haue you in my presence, even you that are the absolute ease of all my cares. As for *Taurisa*, because shee was sicke, I deliuered her within these two daies to two Knights whom I met in these seas in a stout ship wherein they sailed vnto Ireland : and because the ship wherein I am is more like a Pirats then a Princes ship, not hauing wherewithall to succour her, I haue sent her into Ireland, where she shall be carefully looked vnto with all things necessarie, till I shall goe thither my selfe and fetch her. This day your brother and I agreed to depart thence to morrow in the morning, and go into England, France or Spaine : for to which soeuer of those vyee come, wee shall

shal haue meanes sufficient to effect the good determination which he tould me you haue. Consider, I beseech you, if our aduice bee agreeable vnto yours; for if there be neuer so small difference, we vwill not put it in execution. I am none otherwise minded said *Auristela*, then as liketh my brother: and also I cannot beleue that hee will digresse from your will in any respect. This is that vvvhich passed betwixt *Arnaldo* and *Auristela*, who tould all to *Periander*. And the same night *Arnaldo*, *Periander*, *Maurice*, *Ladislas*, the two captaines, those of the English ship, and all the others who came from the Barbarian Ile, entred into counsell, and appointed their departure in such manner as followeth.

CHAP. XVIII.

How Maurice knew by Astrologie what euil aduerture should befall them at sea.

Al those which came from prison in the Barbarian Alle, went aboard the ship wherein *Maurice*, *Ladislas*, & the captaines that brought *Rosamond* and *Clodio* came to land. And in the ship of *Arnaldo* were conveniently placed *Auristela* and *Periander*, *Maurice*, *Ladislas*, *Transilla*, *Ricla*, and *Constance*, the two *Anthorics*, the father and sonne, and *Rutilio*: neither would *Arnaldo* forsake *Clodio* nor *Rosamond*. This night they filled their caskes with water; and bought al the victuals they could procure of their hoste. And *Maurice* hauing obserued the precise time of their departure, said, that if their good fortune would make them shunne an euill chance threatening them very shortly, they should haue an happie voyage: and that this danger, although it should bee by water, yet it should not come by any tempest on sea or land, but by treason intermeddled with wanton and vnchast desires.

desires. *Periander*, who was alwaies disquieted in *Arnaldo* presence, began to feare, that this treason should bee contriued by this Prince. But opposing the noblenesse of his courage against this conceipt, hee would not beleeue that which he feared: because he thought that treason could not haue any place in the hearts of Princes. Neuerthelesse, he praied *Maurice* to consider who should be cause of the daimage which threatned them. *Maurice* answered, that he could not tell, but he held the matter assured: yet said hee, it shall not preuaile against life, but onely trouble their quiet, break off their enterprises, and procure losse of their fairest hopes. *Periander* heereunto replied, that they were best to deferre their voyage for a few daies; and it might be, by prolonging the time this rigorous influence of the starres might bee changed or mitigated. Not so, said *Maurice*; it is better to aduenture our selues in this danger that toucheth not life, then take another course whereby wee might bee cast away. Goe forward then in Gods name, said *Periander*; the dice are throwne: let vs go hence in time, and let heauen doe what it shall please, seeing our diligence will nothing preuaile. *Arnaldo* paid royally all the charges which they had beene at in the Inne: and getting into their ships, they left the hauen, and so set saile.

The ship of *Arnaldo* adorned with wauing streamers and flagges, went first out of the harborough, the great and small ordinance were discharged, the trumpets sounded, and the voices, often reiterated of those that tooke their farewells, and wished them a good voiage, filled the aire: but all this could not make *Auristela* lift vp her head, which shee sadly declined to her stomack, as a forewarning of the euill that should befall her. *Arnaldo* and *Periander* beheld her either of them esteeming her the white whereon to direct his sight, the end of his desires, and the chiefest of his ioy.

A sweet winde cleared the aire from all clouds. there

engendred. *Maurice* againe considered the heauens, and obserued anew the tokens of the perill hanging ouer their heads: but he could not foresee from what part it should happen. In this confusioⁿ he slept on the ships decke; and shortly after awaked in great feare, crying aloud, Treason, treason: you, Prince of Denmark. awake; your men kill vs. At this voice *Arnaldo* arose, who slept not, but was on the same decke with *Periander*; and demanded, What is that, what is that which endamageth vs? who kills vs? are wee not heere all friends? and the rest, are they not my subiects or seruants? The sea is calme and quiet, the ship strikes not vpon any rocke or shelve, no *Remora* slayes vs: why then shouldest thou feare and disquiet vs in this manner? I know not said *Maurice*: but let the Pumpe be searched; for vnlesse I be asleepe; me thinkes we perish.

He had no sooner ended these words, but foure or fise Mariners went downe into the Hold: and hauing looked euery where about, and not finding any seame at which the water could come in, they came vp againe on the decke, saying, that the shippe sailed well, and the water of the Pumpe was thicke and stinking, which was a token that no new sea-water was entred. This is the cause then said *Maurice*, that because I am olde and quicke of apprehension, euery thing, though it were but dreames, doth terrifie mee. But God grant it be a dreame; for I would reioyce much more to be old and fearefull, then a true Astrologian.

Take your rest Sir *Maurice*, said the Prince; for your dreames will not suffer these Gentlewomen to sleepe in quiet. I will do so, my Lord, answered *Maurice*, if I can: and then lying downe againe on the decke, there was a profound silence in the shippe. In the meane time *Rutilio* which sate at the Mast foote, inuited by the cleerenesse of the night, or fitnesse of the time, or because hee had a very sweet voyce, began to sing to the whistling of the winde,

winde, which gently strooke vpon the sailes, I know not what verses, which himselſe had composed. The first vvho heard him, vvvas old *Anthony*, vvho said: Gentlemen, giue eare to *Rutilio*; he sings very well: and if the verses vvvhich he singeth be of his owne making, hee is no bad Poet, if an Artificer can bee one: which I beleeeue may happen, for I call to minde that I haue seene Poets in Spaine of all sorts of occupations. *Arnaldo*, *Periander*, & *Maurice* were not asleepe: and *Maurice* said, It is not impossible that an Artizan should be a Poet, for that poesie is in the vnderstanding, and not in the hands; and the soule of a Cutler hath as great capacity as a Campemasters; because all soules are equall, created and formed in their first beginnings of the same substance: and according to the bodies temperature which incloseth them, they shew more or lesse discreet, and are affectioned to the knowledge of such Arts and Sciences as they are inclined vnto by the starres: but principally Poets are naturally such from their birth: and so it is no maruell though *Rutilio* bee one, though he haue bene a Master of dancing. Yea verily, said *Anthony*, so great a Master, that he fetcheth his capers in the aire, aboue the clouds. It is true answered *Rutilio* (that heard him) that I capred very nigh the heauen when that sorceresse vvhom I slew in the likenesse of a wolfe, caried me in her cloake from Tuscan vnto Norway. This conuersion (said *Maurice*) of people into wolues, male and female, is a great error among those of the Northerne climates, although many belieue it. But how happeneth it then (said *Arnaldo*) that in England are commonly seen vvhole troopes of wolues in the fields, vvvhich are nothing else but men and women transformed into wolues. This cannot be, said *Maurice*, in England; for in this temperate and fruitfull lland, there are no wolues bred: and as touching Ireland, vvvhich is an Ile adioyning, though there be some wolues, yet there are no venemous beasts; as Serpents, Vipers, Toades,

Scor-

Scorpions, nor so much as Spiders: and if any venomous living creature be brought thither from other places, it dieth when it cometh to the shore there. And if they carry of the earth of this Ile into other Countries, and therewith enuiron any Viper, she will not aduenture, neither shall euer bee able to get out of the circle wherein shee is inclosed, but will therein continue imprisoned till death. That which ought to be conceiued as touching these transmutations, is this. There is a disease which the Physicians call wooluish madnes, vvhose quality is such, that whosoever suffers it, thinkes hee is changed into a wolfe; he howles like a wolfe, and accompanieth others that are strooken with the same sicknesse, and altogether goe in troopes through the fields, barking like dogs, or howling like wolues, tearing the trees in pieces, and kill such as they meet, eating all raw, the flesh of dead bodies. And I know that in Sicilie, which is the greatest Iland in the Mediterranean sea, there are at this day certain people whom the Sicilians call *Woluenes*, vvhose feeles their euill before it seaze vpon them, bidding such as come neere them to be gone: who eyther runne from them, or take hold of them and shut them vp. For vnlesse they looke well to themselves, they pull them in pieces, and teare them with teeth & nailes as they can, and barke in a most fearefull and terrible manner. And this is so true, that when couples are married, they bring certificate to verifie that neyther of them is tainted with this maladie: and if afterward in processe of time, experience approue the contrary, the marriage may be dissolued.

This is also an opinion of *Plato*, that amongst the Arcadians, there are a kinde of people which in passing a Lake, doe hang their apparell on an Oake; and entring naked into a land which is there, they ioyne in shape of wolues, with others whom they know to bee of their stocke, and continue with them nine yeares: which being ended, passing backe through the lake, they recover
their

their former figure. Neuerthelesse, all this is to be esteemed a fable: and if there be any such thing, it is onely in the imagination. I know not how this is done, (said *Rutilio*) but well I know at the least I killed a wolfe, & found the forceresse dead. All this may be, replied *Maurice*, because the strength of witchcraft beguileth our senses, making vs to see one thing for another; not that there are any kinde of people who can change their nature. I am very glad I vnderstand this matter, said *Arnaldo*; for I was one of those which suffer themselues to bee carried vnto beleefe of this error. And so it must be which the fables report of King *Arthur* his conuersion into a Rauens: which this discreet Nation doth so generally beleefe, that they abstaine from killing any Rauens throughout the lland. I know not answered *Maurice*, from whence might come the originall of a fable so ill deuised.

In such like discourses they spent well-nigh the whole night: and at the breake of the day, *Clodio* that had harke- ned vnto them, without speaking till that present, said: I am a man that care not much for the prooffe of these things: what can it auaille me to know whether men may be turned into wolues, or not? or if Kings goe vnder the shape of Rauens or Eagles? Although if they must needs bee changed into birds, I had rather haue them stocke-doues then Puttocks. Good words *Clodio*, talke not of Kings said *Arnaldo*, for me thinkes I see thee whet thy tongue to cut them. No, no, answered *Clodio*, my chastisement hath put a sharp snaffle in my mouth, which will not suffer me to open it for this subiect: and I had rather burst in holding my peace, then make my self merry with speaking. Ill words some times do cheere those that vnderstand them: but very often they plague those that speake them; whereas there is no law nor penalty against silence. I will continue the rest of my life in peace vnder the shadow of thy protection; Though by fits certaine impressions of malice make my tongue dance in my mouth,

mouth, and stiffe betweene my teeth more then foure verities which I would gladly put into the world: but God be praised for all.

Then said *Auristela*: the sacrifice of your sicknes which you make to heauen, cannot but be very acceptable vnto him. *Rosamond* answered her: That day wherein *Clodio* shall relinquish his euill speaking, I will cease to make loue; for euill speech is as naturall in him, as loue in me, albeit there is more hope of amendment in me, then him, because beauty becommeth aged with yeares, and with beauty amorous desires grow old. But time hath no Iurisdiction at all ouer the tongues of euill speakers; for the older they are, the more they speake euill, because they haue scene more: and besides, all the delights of the other senses are abridged, & gathered in one vnto the tongue. Both are naught said *Tranfilla*, and incurre the same losse, though the way doe differ. The voyage we take now, said *Ladislaus*, cannot but be fortunate, considering the winde shoves it selfe fauourable, and the Sea quiet. It was apparently so the last night, said *Constance*, and yet Sir *Maurice* his dreame hath brought vs into such a confusion, that I beleue we all are already swallowed vp of the Sea. Truly said *Maurice*, if I were not instructed in the lawes of Christianity, and if I remembred not what God said in *Leuiticus*, *Be not south-sayers, b. lieue no dreames*, which fewe haue the gift to vnderstand; I durst interpret the dreame which so greatly disturbed mee: which in my iudgment proceeded not from any of the causes whence dreames are wont to come; for when they are neyther diuine reuelations, nor diabolicall illusions. they arise from vapours of the stomacke, which ascending to the braine, doe trouble the common sense; or from that which a man firmly printeth in his phantasie in the day time. But whence soeuer it may come, me thought I saw within a great palace of timber-work, wherein we were, there fell so great quantity of lightnings, that they opened

ned the heauen on euery side; and that by the rifts which were made in the clowdes, they powred downe water vpon vs in such aboundance, that I thought I was already drowned. But let vs giue ouer this conference: for if night come without any alarme, I will require of you, and likewise bestow vpon you, some rewards for our good success.

At this houre the Sunne was going into *Thetis* armes, the sea was of like smoothnesse as before, the winde fauourable, and not a cloud could be seene in any part to trouble the Mariners. Briefely, the heauen, seas, and winde, all together, and each of them seuerally, promised an happy nauigation: when vpon a sodaine, *Maurice* cried as loud as he could; Without doubt we cast away our selues: we cast our selues away without doubt.

CHAP. XIX.

Wherein is related that which two Souldiers did, and how Periander and Auristela were separated.

HOW is it possible, answered *Arnaldo*, that the waters should drowne vs? For answer, he saw a man come out from vnder the decke altogether terrified, calling water from his mouth and eyes, who said with a troubled voyce, and ill pronounced; All this shippe is open in diuers places, and the Sea is come in after such a manner, that you shall quickly see it about the decke. Let every one take care of his life; O Prince withdraw your selfe to the skiffe with that which you most dearly esteeme, before the waters get full possession of the vessell. In saying thus, the shippe was at a stay by reason of the heaviness of the waters wherewithall it was filled. The Pilote sodainely strooke faile: and all of them forlorne through feare, had recourse to such remedies as they had. *Arnaldo* and *Periander* leapt into the skiffe, & there put *Auristela*, *Tranfilla*,

Tranfilla, *Ricla* and *Constance*: amongst whom *Rofemond* threw her felfe, and *Maurice* came after. At this time two fouldiers went to vnhang the boate which was faftened to the fhippes fide: and one of them feeing that the other would enter before him, he drew a poignard from his girdle, which hee thruft through his body, faying aloud; Seeing our fault hath beene contriued with fo little profit, this paine shall ferue to chaftife thee, and be to mee an example during the fmall time I haue to liue. Thou Prince, heare the truth vvhich this traitor shall tell thee.

The fouldier whom thou haft feene mee stabbe into the body vvith my poynard, and my felfe, haue opened the fhippe, vvith an intent to take our pleasures of *Aurifela* and *Tranfilla*, by receiuing them into the skiffe: but hauing feene my deligne to fall out otherwife then I thought, I haue laine my companion, and will now procure mine owne death. And with this laft word, hee fuffered himfelfe to finke to the botome of the waters, which ftopped his breath, and buried him in perpetuall filence.

And although all vvere amazed, and bufie to remedy their common danger: yet *Arnaldo* would needs heare the words of the desperate Souldier. Then both hee and *Periander* hafted to the fhippes boate: and hauing caufed the young *Anthony* to enter into the skiffe, not remembring to take in any victuals, *Ladiflas*, *Anthony* the Father, *Arnaldo*, *Periander*, and *Clodio* entered into the boate, and induoured to get aboard the skiffe, beeing a pretty way off from the fhippe: vvvhich by this time vvvas couered vvith vvaters, that no part thereof could bee feene but the maft, as a token of her buriall.

In the meane time the night came, and the boate could not come at the skiffe; from vvvhich *Aurifela* called her brother *Periander*: who answered by many

times repetitions of her name. *Ladislau* & *Transilla* did the like, and the sweet voyces of wife and husband mette in the middest of the aire: but it was impossible for them to joyne together, by reason the night was all couered with darkenesse, and the vvindes began to blowe from diuers places. At the last, the boate went a great way from the skiffe; and being lighter and lesse loaden, was carried by sea at the pleasure of the windes.

The skiffe, more by reason of its owne heauinesse, then the burthen that was therein, abode as if it had been slayed of purpose. But when it was darke night, they began afresh to feelee what misfortune was come vpon them, seeing themselves in an vnknowne sea, threatned vvith all the seuerities of heauen, and depriued of such commodities as the land might afford them; the skiffe vvithout oares, and without victuals, and themselves vveakened with hunger and griefe.

Maurice, who remained maister and mariner of the skiffe, had not wherewith to guide it: and so farre forth as hee could perceiue, by the plaints, mournings, and sighs of those whom hee conducted, hee had reason to feare lest they would cast themselves away. Hee considered the starres: though all appeared not, yet some fewe, which he sawe through the darke clouds, gaue a little token of better fortune; yet they shewed not vnto him whereabouts they were. The sense of their distresse would not suffer them to mitigate their sadnesse by sleep. They watched all the night, and when the day came, their paine was augmented through displeasure, because they sawe not the boat either neere or far off, which was gone from them with their soules; nor yet any other vessel from whence they might looke for succours in this necessitie.

In the ende, they discovered an Ile on the left hand, which reioyced and grieved them both at once. Their ioy was to see the land so nigh them: and their griefe,

griefe, because they could not get ashore, vnlesse the winde should carry them thither. *Maurice* was hee that most assured himselfe that they all should bee safe : and being a iudiciall Astrologer, hee had found in the figure which hee had drawne, that this perill threatened not death vnto them.

Finally, the fauour of heaven, together with the wind, by little and little carried them into the Ile, where they tooke land within a large bay all couered with snowe. Miserable and full of terrour are the fortunes of the sea, seeing such as suffer them are glad to make exchange with greater discommodities of the land. The coast was desert, and the snowe seemed to them as a pleasant land, and solitarinelle to be company. They all forooke the boat, one vnder anothers armes. The yong *Anthony* was the *Arlus* of *Auristela* and *Transilus* ; vpon whose shoulders also *Rosamond* and *Maurice* were brought to shore : and they all together went vnder couert of a rock which they saw not far frõ the sea-side; hauing first drawn their skiffe to land, wherein onely (next vnder God) their last hope remained. *Anthony* considering that famine alone was able to kill them, hee made ready his boaw, which hanged alwaies at his backe, saying he would goe and discouer the land, to see if hee might finde any kinde of men or beasts to relieue them in this necessitie. All were of his minde : and so he quickly passed into the Ile, treading on the frozen snowe, which was so hard as if he had walked on stones. *Rosamond* followed him, hee not perceiuing her, nor any of the rest did impeach her; as thinking, that some naturall necessitie had forced her to leaue their company.

Anthony looking back, and seeing *Rosamond* hard by him, in time and place where none could see them, hee said thus vnto her ; Companie is a thing which I haue least need of in so great necessitie as wee endure : vwhat would you haue *Rosamond* ? goe backe againe : for you

haue no weapons to kill any beast or foule, neither can I moderate my pace to stay for you. What is the cause you follow me? O ignorant youth, answered the honest woman, how badly doest thou acknowledge the intention wherewith I follow thee, and the bonds which you owe me: and therewith ouertaking him shee thus proceeded, saying; Beholde here O new hunter, fairer then *Apollo*, another new *Daphne*, which runnes not from thee, but pursueth thee: looke not vpon the cruelty of euer-fleeing age, which hath withered my beautie; but consider in me, what vvas *Rosamond*, that could subdue Kings, & the libertie of the proudest spirits. I adore thee which was adored: and amidst these snowes and Ice, the fire of thy loue reduceth me to ashes. Let vs cheare one another, and receiue mee for thine owne: I promise thee, if vvee come into England, to bring thee to such a place where thou maist fill thy hands with more treasure than euer had *Crassus* or *Mydas*.

Here she staied her speech, but not the motion of her hands, wherewith shee strove to hould fast those of *Anthony* that thrust her backe. And during this honest protestation, *Anthony* said vnto her; Stand still thou *Harpy*, or I will stay thee: get thee gone thou barbarous Egyptian, and tempt not heere the chastitie of a man which is not thy slaue: bewray not by thy words that which thou hidest in thy desires: consider the smal time that we haue to liue, from this instant vntill the point of death, which threatneth vs by famine, and by the vncertaine meanes wee haue to get out of this Ile. Get thee out of my sight, if thou wilt not vrge mee to chastise thy bouldnesse, and publish thy folly: If thou returne, I will bury thy shame in silence; but if thou wilt not leaue me, I will make thee leaue thy life. *Rosamond* hearing this, returned backe, champng on her bridle.

Anthony went forward on his iourney, but vvithout meeting any thing: for the snowes were great, the vvay rough,

rough, and without any tracke of men or beasts: wherefore fearing to be out of knowledge how to com back to the place whence he came if he went downe any further, he returned to the company. All held vp their hands to heauen, looking on the ground as if they were out of all hope; and said to *Maurice*, that they would returne to sea in their skiffe, in regard it was impossible to finde remedy in such a desolate Iland.

CHAP. XX.

Of a notable accident that happened in the frozen sea.

Shortly after they descried a shippe. comming as far off, which put them againe in some hope. The same strooke saile, cast anchors, and let fall a skiffe into the sea, with very great diligence; which came alone towards the shore, where our companie full of teares had before entred into theirs. *Auristela* gaue counsell to stay their comming. The ships skiffe came to shore, arriuing on the colde snowe, whereon two yong men leaped, hardy to see to, and no lesse strong then lustie; carrying a maid exceedingly faire, but so weake and out of remembrance, that it seemed shee should die before shee came to land. They called to those which were aboard the other skiffe; requesting them to goe ashore, to be witnesses of an accident which was necessarie for them to know. *Maurice* answered, that they had no oares to bring their skiffe, vnlesse they lent them theirs. The mariners guided them with their oares, and set them againe vpon the snowe. Straightway the 2 young men couered their bodies with two China-bucklers; and with two sharp cutting swords in their hands leaped againe to land. *Auristela* full of amazement, and fearing some new mis-hap, ran to see this faire maide, who was in a Transe: and so did the rest.

Abide sirs, said one of the young men, and marke vvell what wee will say vnto you. This Knight and I haue agreed to fight for the possession of this licke damosell, whom there you see, and death onely can giue sentence in fauour of the one or the other: neither is any other way to compound our quarrell, vnlesse of her own will she chuse one of vs two whom she likes best to be her husband; by this meanes she may sheath our swords, & quiet our mindes.

That which we require at your hands, is, not to hinder our combat: which wee could accomplish vvithout impeachment of any person, if wee desired not some to looke on to witnes our proceedings. If it bee possible in this desolate place to finde any helpe to prolong the life of this damsell, who hath such power to conclude ours, we pray you to succour her. The haste constraining vs to determine our difference, permitteeth vs not at this present to enquire who you are, nor how you came hither, with so small meanes to get hence from so solitarie an Iland, where not so much as any liuing creature doth inhabite. Instantly they laid hand on their swords, not staying till the genile woman, for whom they fought, had declared her will as touching the choise shee vvould make; referring their quarrell rather to the arbitrement of armes, then the desire of their mistresse. They encountered one another with rage and violence, without observing art or measure: and with the two first blowes one of them had his heart thrust through and through; and the other, his head clouen in the middell. To this last the heauen afforded so much life as to come to his Lady, and to say, in ioyning his face to hers; I haue preuailed, (my faire) you are mine: and although the good of possessing you shall abide with me but a very sntall time: yet to thinke onely, that you haue beene mine but a moment, maketh mee the most happy man that euer vvvas. Receiue, Madame, this soule; and these last sighes which

I send vnto you: giue them some place in your hart, neither aske leaue of your honesty, for the name of a vvife affordeth you no lesse.

The blood of his wound bathed the Gentlewomans face: who yvas so farre vvithout sense, that she answered not a word. The two mariners that had guided the ships skiffe, tooke the dead man, and him that was hurt, who had closed his mouth to his spouses, bought at so deare a rate, and therewithall sent his soule into the aire, and his body fell dead to the earth. *Auristela*, that had contemplated all these actions, before she had attentiuely beheld this Gentlewomans face, came nearer: and making it cleane from the blood of the dead louer, she found that it was her damsell *Taurisa*, whom *Arnaldo* said he had deliuered to two Knights to be conducted into Ireland. *Auristela* became astonished, forlorne, and sadder then sadnesse it selfe, and much more vvhen shee knewe that the faire *Taurisa* vvas dead. Alas, said she then, vvith vvhat prodigious tokens the heauens vvill make me knowe my misfortune! vvich I might call happy if it might be concluded with my life. But seeing to complaine vvill here nothing auaille, let vs bestowe the time vvich vve owe them, in pitie: and that vve may no longer afflict the liuing, let vs bury the dead.

With that shee entreated *Maurice* to take order with the mariners, to returne to ship and fetch tooles for their buriall: which they did, and *Maurice* himself vvent with them to agree vvith the Pilote, for the meanes to take them out of the lle, into some other part vvither hee was purposed to goe. In the meane time *Auristela* and *Transilla* had leasure to fit *Taurisa* for her graue. *Maurice* returned vvith necessarie instruments: *Taurisa* vvas buried, but the mariners would not doe so much for those vvich vvere slaine in this combat.

Rosamond, vvho since shee had declared to the Barbarian *Anthony* her amorous thoughts, durst not lift vp her

cies from the ground vvhether shame had fixed them, then said, lifting vp her head vvhilst *Tauria* vvas a burying :

If you make such estimation of charitie, and that your harts bee equally possessed of iustice and mercie, imploy, good people, these two vertues on my behalfe. Since the first time I had any vse of reason, I haue alwaies been vnreasonable and wicked, that in the flower of mine age, & in my prime of beauty, vices haue gained such possession in me, that they are as it vvere inseparable accidents. You knowe already that I haue set my foot on the neckes of Kings, and as it vvered led by the hand the vviils of al men, vvhither soeuer I pleased. But time, the thiefe of vvomens fraile beauties, hath robbed mine so vnawares, that I haue seene my selfe deformed before I vvas reformed. But because vices are seated in the soule that neuer groweth old, they would not forsake me. And like as I gaue ouer my self to follow the streame of my pleasures vvithout resisting them : so I haue entirely ycelled my selfe to that delight vvvhich the view of this yong Barbarian atfoorded mee ; vvwhose frozen affection answereth not mine that is all on fire. I see I am despised and hated instead of being beloued and cherished : vvvhich blowes none can suffer vvith little patience and much desire. Death already walketh on my gowne skirts, and stretcheth forth his hand to take a vvay my life. I beseech you out of your good and courteous nature to couer my fire vvith this snowe, and inclose me in this tombe: for albeit you intermeddle my vvanton ashes vvith the chaste bones of this virgin, they shall not bee polluted thereby, because good reliques are alwaies good in vvhat place soeuer they bee. And thou that art so arrogant, said she, (turning towards the yong *Anthony*) vvvhich now touchest the brink of thy delights, pray heauen to guide thee in such sort, that a beauty vvithered by long age may neuer tempt thee. And if my vvords haue offended thine eares, forgiue me : for such as aske pardon in this distresse, deserue, if not to be pardoned,

doned, yet at least to be heard. And with these last words, giuing a great sigh, she fell in a transe.

CHAP. XXI.

The buriall of Taurisa, Auristela's Damofell.

I know not then, said *Maurice*, what he that is cal'd loue, hath to doe in these deserts and clifses couered with Ice and Snowe, forsaking the fields of Cyprus, Paphos, and Gnidus, from whence Famine flieth away, and where no discommodity euer commeth; considering hee hath no delightfull abiding-place in afflictions and teares, but in a quiet and contented minde.

Auristela, *Tranfillsa*, *Ricla* and *Constance*, were astonish'd at this new accident, and hauing brought *Rosamond* out of her transe, all of them went into the ships skiffe, where they were well vsed and supplied with all things necessary to satisfie their extreame hunger; *Rosamond* onely excepted, who euery moment longed after death. They hoysed saile, and some of them lamented for the two dead Captaines, and chose only one in their place, proceeding on their way, not knowing whither they went, because they were Pirates, and not Irish men, as they had inform'd the Prince of Denmarke.

Maurice disliking the company of these Pirates, alwaies feared some vnhappy blow to arise from their wicked custome and course of life. And as he that was olde, and experimented in worldly affaires, hee perceiued that the beauty of *Auristela*, the brauery of *Tranfillsa*, and the new head-attire of *Constance* would awake in them some wicked and wanton thoughts: wherefore hee serued to them as an *Argus*, and young *Anthony* was employed in their behalfe as the shepheard of *Amphrisius*.

Rosamond, continuing as one weary of life, came to be weake-

weakened in such sort, that one night they found her in a chamber buried in perpetuall silence. They had wept enough before, but yet had a feeling of her death vvith Christian compassion. The sea was her Sepulcher: where shee found not water sufficient to quench the fire which young *Anthony* had kindled in her heart.

All of them oftentimes entreated the Pirates to carry them into Ireland or Scotland, if they would not goe for England. But they answered, that vntill they had taken a good and rich prize, they would not anchor vpon any coast, but onely to water and take in victuals. The Barbarian *Ricla* would gladly haue bought her contentment to be in England, with faire peeces of gold: but she durst not bewray them, lest they should take them away without asking.

The Captaine gaue them a chamber apart, and made such conuenable prouision for them, that he assured them from the outrage of the Souldiers, which they might stand in feare of. In this manner they sailed on the Sea three moneths, striking saile sometimes at one Ile, sometimes at another, after the manner of Pirates: during which time the new Captaine of the shippe, went oftentimes into his passengers chamber, to entertaine them with honest and friendly conference, especially *Maurice*. For *Auristela*, *Transilla*, *Ricla* and *Constance* were more busse in thinking on their friends absence, then to giue the Captaine or *Maurice* any time of hearing. Yet one day they gaue attentiu eare to a story which the Captain told them, which you shall see in another Chapter,

CHAP. XXII.

*Where the Capitaine told the fift wall which King Polycarpus
was accustomed to make in his Realme.*

THe Heauen allotted, for my Country, one of those
Iles that adioyne on Ireland, beeing so great that it
beareth the name of a Realme; and is not possessed by
succession from the father to the sonne, or by inheritance,
but by election of the inhabitants, who alwaies choose
the best, and most vertuous of the Ile. By which meanes,
they which are not Kings strive to be vertuous, that they
may attaine that honour; and those that raigne, endeavor
to surmount others in vertue, that they may bee worthy
to rule over them.

Heerewithall they cut the wings of Ambition, punish
Coutousnesse, vnmaske Hypocrisie, the people liue in
peace, Iustice thundreth, Mercy lighteneth, poore peo-
ple haue not their suites prolonged, because they are
poore; nor those of the rich, the sooner dispatched, be-
cause they are wealthy. Gifts, nor fauours, can bend the
straight wand of Iustice. Finally, this is a kingdom where
all men liue, all men enioy their owne, without feare of
oppressors, and such as would insult over them.

This custome, so holy and iust in mine opinion, put
the Scepter into the hands of *Polycarpus*, a man famous
and notable, both for Armes and Learning. Before hee
was made King, hee had two daughters of surpassing
beauty; the elder called *Polycarpa*, and the younger, *Syn-
srosa*. These Kings, thinking that melancholy awaketh
euill thoughts in their subiects mindes, are curious to
make them merry by publike feasts, and sometimes by
Comedies: but aboue all things they solemnize the day
of their Coronation, by renewing the Olympian games
in the best manner they can. They giue a reward to him
that

that is the best at running: honour the most valiant & active at his weapon: crowne the best Archer: and by their praises aduance to heauen him that in wraſtling throwes others to the earth.

These pastimes are performed on the Sea shore in a large bay, where an infinite number of boughes are set, which take away the Sunne beames and make a shadow. They erect a sumptuous Theater, in the middest whereof the King and his royall family behold the sports. When one of these daies came, *Polycarpus* resolved to solemnize the same with greater magnificence then any of his predecessors. And euen then when his person was placed on the Theater, in company of the greatest Peeres of the Realme, vvhhen the instruments of warre and peace had giuen the token to begin, and foure nimble runners were now loosed, holding their left foot formost, and the right in the ayre to beginne the race, they saw a pinnace come by sea, vvhich had the sides white, because it vvas newly calked, and vvas assisted by fixe oares on a side, to diuide the vvater, vvhich vv ere managed by 12. braue men, hauing broad shoulders, and their armes weil sinewed. They were all clothed in vvwhite, except hee which guided the helme, vvwhose apparell was carnation. The pinnace came violently to the shore: and to see the same strike the ground, and all those that vv ere therein, to leape aland, vvas but one and the same thing.

Polycarpus commanded that they should not attempt any thing in the careere, before hee had knowne vvhat people they vv ere, and the end of their coming; albeit he imagined they came to the feast, to proue themselues in his pastimes. The first vv which came forward to speake to the King, vvas he which gouerned the helme; a young man of small age, vv whose sinooth cheekes vv without haire, seemed to be of snow and skarlet; the locks of his head like iewels of gold; and each part of his face so perfect, and all of them together so faire, that they made an admirable

nable composition. His personage immediatly strook the eyes, and pearced the harts of as many as beheld him, & procured them to loue him with most hartly affection. He said to the King: My Lord, my companions and I hauing heard your pastimes proclaimed, are come hither to serue you in the same; not from far countries, but from a ship hard by, which we left in the Ile of Scynta. We are all Gentlemen, desirous of honour: and beseech you, by the fauour which as a King you afford vnto strangers, to permit vs that vve may here shewe our strengths & valour, to increase our renowne and your delight. Certainly, answered *Policarpus*, you propound your requests in such a braue and comely manner, that it should be iniustice to deny you. Honour my feast according to your owne desire, and my selfe will vndertake the charge to acknowledge and reward your deserts: for according to your countenance you leaue small hope to any person to winne the first prizes. He bent his knee, and bowed his head in signe of reuerence and thanks: and at two leaps he came to the rope, which serued as a barrier to the foure prepared to runne, as was before mentioned. His companions withdrew themselves aside, to behold the race.

The trumpets sounded, the rope vvas lift vp, and all five beganne their course with great swiftnesse. But they had not runne twenty pases, but hee that came last, had gotten before them aboue sixe; and at thirtie, more then fifteene.

Finally, at a little lesse then halfe the vway, he left them as images without motion, to the great admiration of euery one, chiefly of the yong *Synforosa*; whose eies were bent after, as well vvhén he ranne, as vvhén he stood stil: for the agility and beauty of this yong runner were such, that they drew after them both the eyes and liking of all the lookers on. I marked this, for that I was intentiue to beholde *Policarpa*, the sweet object of my desires: and in passing

passing I beheld the motions of *Synfersa*. Envy presently began to possesse the hearts of those that should proue themselves in these games ; perceiuing with how great facility the stranger had gained the prize of running.

The second combate was at fencing. He which had wonne the former, tooke a backe sword to debate the second : on vvhich hee warded an infinite number of blowes, and gaue as many hurts on the head, armes, and the whole bodie of fixe that prooued themselves against him one after the other, without being touched by anie of them, so much as on one haire of his apparell. The people shouted, & with common consent gaue him the chiefe prize.

Six others immediately prepared themselves to wrastle : wherein the young conquerour was more gallant then before ; shewing his broad shoulders, his high brest, and his sinewed armes, whereby with an incredible force and nimblenes he made fixe men of great strength take measure of their bodies in the sand.

And because the fourth combate next was to throwe the barre, he tooke a great and heauie one that was pitched in the ground ; and holding it by one end he threw it with such violence, that passing the sea brinke, it flew and fell a good way into the sea, and there sunke to the bottome. This prodigious force astonished the courage of his opposites ; who durst not aduenture, hauing scene so much, to trie themselves, what they could doe.

Then they brought crosse-boaws and arrowes : there was a tall and straight tree, on whose top was placed an halfe pike, and therupon a Doue tied with a string, which serued for their marke to aime at. Each man that should try his cunning must shoot but once : and one of them thinking to preuent the rest, shot first, and hit the very end of the lance ; which made the Doue for feare to flicker in the aire. Presently another no lesse presumptuous shot the second arrowe with so great dexteritie, that hee

cut

cut asunder the thread wherewith the Doue was tyed: vvhich perceiuing her selfe at liberty, diuided the aire, shaking her vvings with incredible swiftnesse. Then he which had wonne the other prizes shot his arrow : and as though he had commanded the same what to doe, and as if it had vnderstanding to obey him, it passed through the doues heart, making her at the same time to lose both flying and life.

Heerewith the people reiterated their exclamation and praises of this stranger ; who in running, fencing, wrestling, casting the barre, and shooting in the crosse-bow, and diuers other trialls whereof I speake not, had carried away the prize with wonderfull aduantage aboue the others.

These pastimes were finished with the day : and when King *Poliscarpus* would arise from his seate with the Iudges vvho assisted him, to reward the Conqueror, he was before him on his knees, and spake in this manner.

My gracious Lord, our shippe is left alone, the night begins to grow darke ; the reward which I expect at your hands ought to be esteemed aboue all things : but I beseech you deferre it vnto another time, wherein I hope with more leysure and meanes to returne, and yeeld you seruice. The King embraced him, asking his name : hee told him he was called *Periander*. The faire *Synferesa*, taking from her head a faire Garland of flowers, put it on the Conquerors ; and in placing it, spake thus vnto him with an admirable good grace. When the King my father shall be so happy as to see you againe, you shall find that you shall not returne to serue, but to be serued.

CHAP. XXIII.

Of that which happened to the zealous Auristela when she knew that Periander was he that gained the prizes in the combats of Policarpus.

O Powerfull force of lealouſie! which art an infirmity ſo vnited to the ſoule, that it is impoſſible to put it away, but with loſing of the life. Faire *Auristela*, caſt not downe thy ſelfe, harbouring in thy ſoule ſuch a mad rage. But who can retaine the thoughts? which are ſo light and ſubtill, that they not onely paſſe ouer wals, but through the hearts, and ſee whatſoeuer is concealed in our ſoules.

I haue ſpoken thus much, becauſe *Auristela* no ſooner heard mention of *Perianders* name, and the prayſes of *Synforosa*, with the fauor don vnto him in giuing him her garland, but that ſhe made her ſelfe a prey to lealouſie, and with a great ſigh, ſaid thus in embracing *Tranſilla*: Would to God my deare friend, that thy husband ſaued, *Periander* had beene caſt away. Seeſt thou not by the words of this Captaine, how he is honoured as a valorous conquerour, and that he hath more mind vnto a gentlewomans fauour, then to take ſuch care as the turmoyles and baniſhments of his ſiſter ſhould moue him vnto? Muſt hee ſearch after Crownes and Trophies of victory in ſtrange countries, and forſake amidſt the ſteepe mountaines and rocks of the angry ſea, this his ſiſter, who by his counſell, and for his pleaſure hath reſuſed no mortall danger, whereunto ſhee hath not expoſed her ſelfe? The Captaine of the ſhippe attentiuely gaue eare to theſe vvords, and knew not what meaning to collect thereof; when ſuch a ſodaine and ſtiſſe winde aroſe, that he ſodainly left *Auristela* and her company, calling to the Mariners to ſtrike ſaile. Euery one ranne to his charge. *Maurice* and his

his associates returned into their priuate roomes, leauing the Mariners to execute their office. *Transilla* then demanded vvhhat disturbance shee could haue in hearing *Perianders* name? For shee could not conceiue how any grieſe or trouble could enſue from the praifes and happy aduentures of her brother. O my friend, answered *Auristela*; I am ſo much obliged to concale the pilgrimage which I make, that conſtraint inforceth mee to be ſilent vntill it come to an end, though my liues date ſhould ſooner happen. Knowing who I am, which you ſhall know, if God pleaſe, you ſhall ſee the iuſt occaſion of my teares; and in vnderſtanding their originall, you will pardon me for being touched at the heart. You perceiue the bond of a brothers parentage; but I aſſure you that there is a greater betwixt *Periander* and mee: and becauſe it is the property of louers to be iealous, no maruell if I be ſo on my brothers behalfe.

Conſider, answered *Transilla*, that whatſoeuer the Captaine hath related, was brought to paſſe before his Imprifonment in the Barbarian Iland; and that ſince you ſaw each other, and conferred together, you might haue found that he is not in loue with any other perſon, neither takes care about any thing elſe but to pleaſe you: albeit I cannot conceiue how the forces of iealouſie can predominate ouer the affections of brothers and ſiſters, Obſerue this, daughter, ſaid *Maurice*, that the conditions of loue, together with his variable and diuers lawes, are no leſſe vniuſt, then diſagreeing; and I would haue thee ſtrive to be ſo diſcreet, that thou diue not into anothers thoughts, nor ſeeke to know any more then they are willing to tell thee: one may haue a pearcing and ſharpe curioſity in his owne, but not in another mans affaires. Theſe words of *Maurice* were an occaſion that *Auristela* ſtayed her ſpeech, which the words of *Transilla* had brought in the way to vtter her whole hiſtory. The wind grew calme, without hauing much diſturbed them: the

H

Captaine

Captaine returned to make an end of his discourse, because he was in some care for the trouble befallen *Auristela*, in hearing *Periander* named. *Auristela* was desirous to bring the Captaine forward in the relation formerly intermitted; and to know if the fauors of *Synforosa* done to *Periander*, had proceeded any further then to crowne him: which she in faint manner required of him, that she might not bewray what was in her thought. Whereunto he answered; that she had no meanes to performe any thing else; but that since his departure, whensoever she spake of the graces of *Periander*, shee exalted them to heauen, and that she had giuen in charge a shippe should be rigged, to finde him out, and bring him backe vnto the King her fathers Court.

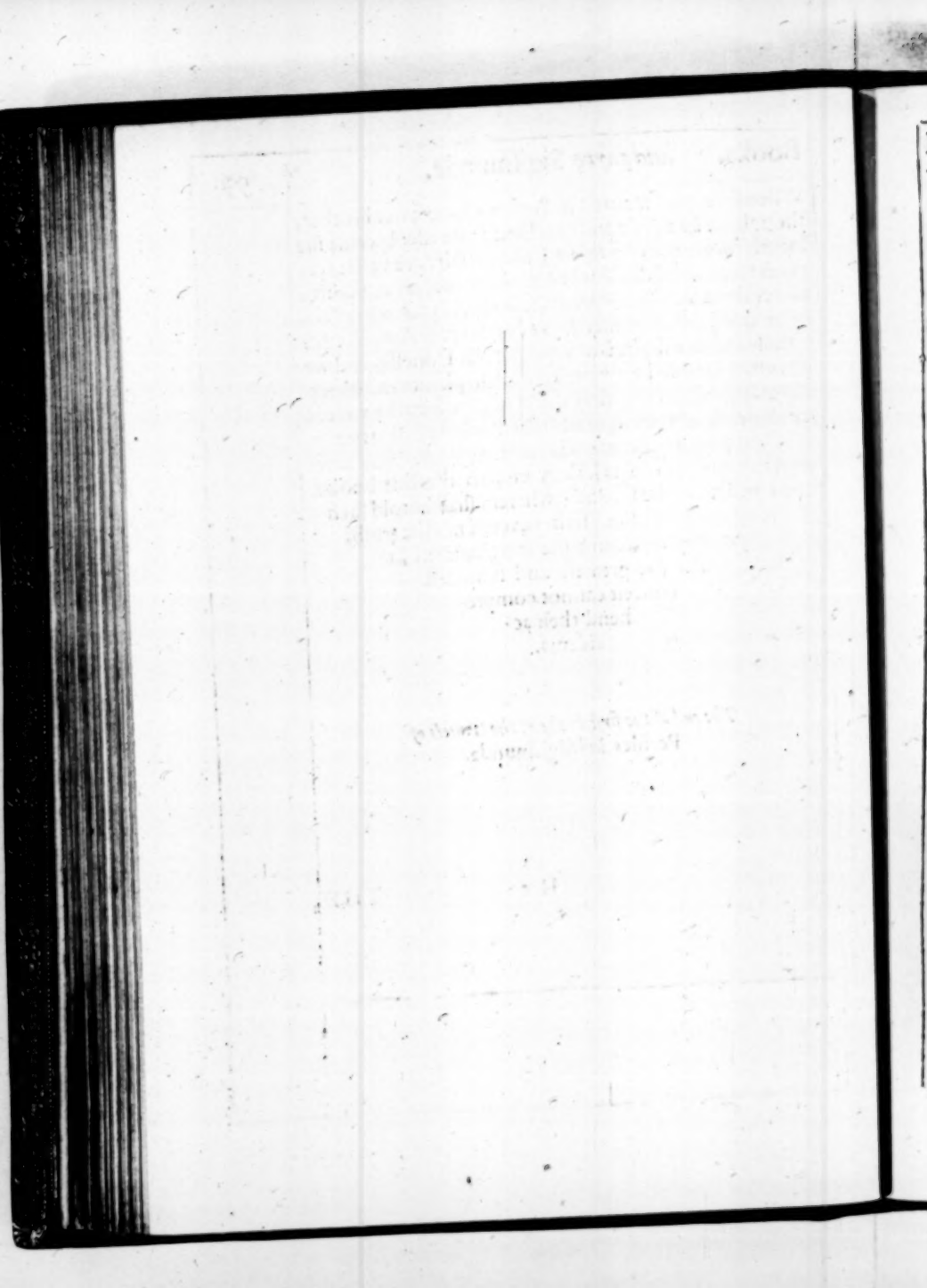
How is it possible, said *Auristela*, that great Ladies, and Kings daughters, aduanced on the throne of Fortune, should humble themselues to place their thoughts in such base subiects? And if it bee true that greatneesse and Maiesty be repugnant vnto Loue, it followeth that *Synforosa* should not suffer her selfe to be ledde captiue vpon the view of an vnknowne youth, whose estate cannot be great, seeing himselfe did but guide the helme of a Pinace, and had ouely twelue naked men in his company, as ordinarily those are that rowe. Maruel you not hereat, said *Maurice*; for in all other actions of nature, so great and continual myracles are not seene, as in those of loue: which because they are so many, are nothing spoken of, nor ought any thing astonish you, be they neuer so great. Loue ioyneth Scepters with Sheephooke, greatnesse with abasement; equalizeth different estates, and maketh possible that which seemeth impossible. You know, daughter, the honesty, valour, and merit of *Periander*: vvhich parts; forme a composition of singular beauty. And this priuiledge beauty hath; to robbe the vviils, and draw the hearts of all such as know it. And the more beauty is great and known, the more it is loued and esteemed. Where-

Wherefore, no maruell if *Synforosa* loue your brother, though she be a great and excellent Princeſſe: becauſe ſhe loueth him, not as *Periander* ; but, as faire, as valiant, as expert, and as a ſubieſt wherein all vertues are contained and collected in one. What (ſaid the Captaine) is *Periander* this Ladies brother ? yea, answered *Tranſilla*, for vvhoſe abſence ſhe liueth in perpetuall ſadneſſe, and we all vvhiſh loue & know her brother, in plaints and bitterneſſe of anguiſh. Then they declared vnto him the wracke of *Arnaldo's* ſhip, the ſeparation of the ſkiffe from the pin- nace, euen vnto the eſtate wherein they were. And here- with the Author of this hiſtory endeth the firſt booke, and paſſeth to the ſecond, wherein ſhall be told ſuch things, which although they exceed not the truth, yet they ſurmount the imagination, in that the greateſt and ſubtleſt conceit cannot compre- hend their ac- cidents.

*The end of the firſt booke of the trauels of
Perſiles and Sigismunda.*

H :

THE





THE SECOND
BOOK OF THE TRA-
uels of *Perfiles* and *Sigis-
munda.*

CHAP. I.

*Wherein is told how the ship was overthrowne, and all that was
therein.*



It seemeth that the Authour of
this history was a more expert
louer, then good historiogra-
pher; because he bestoweth wel-
nigh the first chapter in the be-
ginning of his second book, to
define the iealousie which *Anri-
stela* had conceiued by the dis-
course which the captain of the
ship had made as touching *Periander*: But in this transla-
tion we will omit those definitions, as being ouer-long.

and elsewhere handled, and come to the truth of the matter; which was this, that the winde altering, and thicke clouds arising therewith, darke night came vpon them; and lightnings foregoing thunder, as messengers of their coming, beganne to trouble the mariners, and dazle the sight of all those in the ship. The tempest increased with so great furie, that no art or diligence of the mariners could preuent it. Yet all of them did their best, each one in executing his charge, though not to auoid death, yet at least to prolong his life for the most hardie lengthened the same as much as they could, euen to put their hope in a rak which the storme had broken from the ship, which they tooke fast hould of, and yet thought this hard embracing for a great good comfort.

Maurice clasped his daughter *Transilla*: *Anthony*, with his mother *Ricla*, and sister *Constance*, did the like: onely the vnfortunate *Aurissela* was without any thing to stay vpon, but that which griefe afforded her; which was onely death; whereunto flee would with a good heart haue exposed herselfe, but onely because her religion inhibited it. So, clustering together like a ball, they permitted themselves to fall downe to the ships bottome, to auoid the lightnings and dreadfull thunder-cracks, with the confused and horrible noise of the saylers.

In this resemblance and likenesse of hell, they exempted themselves from behoulding at times, that heauen might be touched with the hand when the shippe rose aboue the clouds: and at other times, to dash with the mast vpon the sand of the deepe sea. They shut their eyes waiting for death, or to speake more aply, they feared, without seeing it: for the shape of death in what fashion soeuer it come is terrible; and that which surprizeth vs in health is yet more to be feared.

The tempest increased in such sort, that it surmounted the skill of the mariners, the captaines carefulnesse, and hope of safety in them all. Then could not bee heard a-

ny more the voice which commanded this or that to be done; by cries, praiers and vowes which they sent to heauen: and the extremitie came to this issue, that *Transilla* no more thought vpon *Ladislaus*, nor *Auristela*, *Periander*: for one of the powerfull effects of death is, to blot out of the memory the things of this life. They had no houre-glasse to distinguish the times, nor compasse to shewe the wind, nor direction to iudge where they were. All was in confusion, in cries, in sighes, in praiers. The captaine was in a transe, the mariners gaue all ouer, all strength of man yeelded, and silence possessed the voices of all these wretched people that lamented. The bould and growne sea proudly walked on the ships decke, yea, aboue the highest top-masts, which killed the deepest sands.

At the breake of day, if that may bee called day which is without light, the ship stuck fast without mouing one way or other: which is the greatest and nearest perill of shipwrack that can be feared. Finally, being beaten with a most violent winde, as if it had beene turned by some art, the maine mast was put into the deepe water, and the keele towards heauen, so remaining as a graue to al them that were therein.

Farewell chaste thoughts of *Auristela*: farewell you well grounded attempts, take your quiet rest with as much honour as holinesse. Expect not other Mausolean monuments, other Pyramides or spires, then such as the bad chalked boards afford you.

And you *Transilla*, the cleare mirrour of honesty, you may solemnize your mariage in your ould fathers armes, if not with your husband, yet at least with hope to lie in a better bride bed then his.

And thou *Ricla*, whose desires carried thee to seek rest, take into thine armes *Anthony* and *Constance*, thy children, and offer them to him who now takes awaie thy life to giue thee a better in heauen.

These are the words which the ouer-throwe of the shippe, and certainty of death, caused the Author of this pittifull History to write, as also that which followeth in another chapter.

CHAP. II.

Wherein is related a strange event.

IT seemeth that the shippes turning in the sea, turned; or rather troubled his iudgement that was the Author of this history; because in this second chapter, hee hath foure or five beginnings, as doubting what end to make. In conclusion, he resolueth the matter, saying that good and bad hapsgoe so hand in hand together, that nothing is betweene to disseuer them: and that grieve and pleasure are so coupled, that hee which in sorrow despaireth of good fortune, is a foole; and hee that in mirth holdeth himselfe assured, is out of his wits: as this strange success shall easily cause to be vnderstood. The ship was drowned in the water as hath bene said, and the dead vvere buried without earth: Yet the compassionate heauens, which redresse our euils when they wholly seeme to be past recure, ordained that the waters now appeased, by little and little bore vp the shippe, and brought the same into a Bay nigh the Sea shore, where it stayed. Hard by there was a Hauen capable to harbour many shippes; in whose waters, as in bright looking-glasses, a city well peopled might be seene, hauing lofty buildings vpon an high and pleasant hill.

The inhabitants of the City saw the shippe, and at first beleueed it to be a Whale, or other great fish, which had been driuen ashore by the late tempest. An infinite number of people came forth to see what it was: and finding it to be a shippe, they certified the King *Polycarpus*, who

was.

was Lord of this City. Hee, in the company of diuers Courtiers, and the two faire Princesse his daughters, among others, issued forth also to behold it, and appointed, that with many cables, capstones, and boats enuironing the ship, it should be drawne into the haven. Some leaped vpon it, informing the King, that they heard knocking within it, and the voyces of some people that were yet living.

An ancient Knight, who was nigh the King, said then vnto him; I remember, my Lord, that in the mediterranean sea, in the riuer of Genes, I haue seene a Spanish gallie, which was turned vpside downe, as this ship is now; the mast remaining in the sand, and the keele in the aire: and before they sought for remedy, they heard a noyse like vnto this. They cut the vessell at the keele, and made so wide a breach that they might see what was vvithin. The light was no sooner entred, but the captaine of the same gallie came forth, and foure of his company. I haue seene this: and it may be that the persons which had a second birth from the wombe of this gallie, bee yet living. If the like happen here, it should not bee a miracle, but a mystery; for miracles exceed the order of nature, & mysteries are such as seeme miracles, but are onely accidents which seldome happen.

But wherefore say we, said the King? let the shippe be quickly cut: for if her belly cast out such as are aliuie, I will hold it for a miracle. Great was the haste they made to cut the vessell, and as great the desire of euery one to see it opened. In the end, hauing made a great hole, they saw therein many persons, halfe dead, and halfe aliuie. One took a damsell by the arme, whose hart yet panting, shewed some signe of life: others did the like; and some thinking to take hould of the liuing, drewe out such as were dead: for fishermen haue not alwaies good lucke. Finally, giuing aire and light vnto those that were yet aliuie, they recouered breath, wiping their face, rubbing their

their eyes, and stretching out their armes like one that is awaked from a dead sleepe; and then looking round about, *Auristela* found herselfe in the armes of *Arnaldo*, *Tranquilla* in those of *Cladio*, *Ricla* and *Constance* in *Rutilio* and old *Anthony*. The yong *Anthony* was held by none, for he came out of himselfe with *Maurice*. *Arnaldo* vvas was more astonished then those which rose from their graue: *Auristela* beheld him, but not knowing who he was, broke silence wherein admiration had plunged them, and the first word she spake vnto him was of *Synferosa*; asking if happely she were amongst the company. Immortall God, said *Arnaldo* to himselfe, what a remembrance is this, when she should bee mindfull of nothing else but to giue thanks to heaven after so great a perill: yet he answered her, that *Synferosa* was present; demanding how she knew her, without notice of the discourse tould her by the captains of *Perianders* triumphs. For had he vnderstood so much, hee might haue seene that the forces of ieaousie linke themselves with those of death, and haunt an amorous minde euen in the most extremities of life.

After feare of some, and admiration of others was a little ouerpast, and that their troubled phantasies had giuen place to reason, in a confused manner they enquired each of other, how those on the land came thither, and how they of the sea happened on that coast.

In the meane time, *Polycarpus* perceiuing that the ship was filled with water by the hole therein made, commanded that it should be weighed towards the Hauens, and then drawn to land: all which was done with great expedition. All those vvvhich were within the ships keele, were receiued by King *Polycarpus* and his daughters, as also the chiefe Citizens, with no lesse pleasure then admiration: but that which most contented them, and specially *Synferosa*, was to see the incomparable beauties of *Auristela*, the graces of *Tranquilla*, and perfections of *Constance*,

flawes, which nothing blemished the beauty of *Ricla* her mother.

They went on foot into the City, which was not farre off: and in the meane time *Periander* entertained *Auristela*, *Ladislai*, *Transilla*; and the olde *Anthony* his wife and daughter, relating their adventures one to another. *Auristela* was onely silent, being intentiueto behold *Synforosa*: but in the end she demanded of *Periander*, if that faire Princesse which walked foremost were not the youngest daughter of King *Polycarpus*? Shee is the very same, answered *Periander*, and a subiect where beauties and courtesie make their ordinary residence. Shee should then be courteous, said *Auristela*; for she is faire. If shee were lesse beautifull; answered *Periander*, the obligations wherein I stand bound vnto her, would move me for my part to account it greater. If it goe by obligation, said *Auristela*, and that this bee the cause which maketh her beauty so rare, you ought to thinke mine the greatest in the world, according to the obligations you owe mee. No comparison, replied *Periander*, ought to be made betwixt things humane and diuine: and the hyperbolicall and excessiue praises which surpasse the merites of others, cannot attaine vnto yours. If my trauels and afflictions haue not empaired my beauty, I should receive a part of these praises; but I hope that the pittifull heauen vwill bring my trauels and torments vnto tranquillity. In the meane tyme I coniure you as earnestly as I can, that other obligations, or other beauties, may not wipe mine out of your memory; for therewith you may fulfill your desire, and content your will: and if with the beauty of my body, such as it is, you behold withall; the beauty of my soule, you shall finde a composition of beauty which may satisfie you.

Periander was much troubled at *Auristela*s discourse: which vvas a very new thing for him; and so much the more strange, in regard he had found by long experience, the

the discretion of *Auristela* to be such, that she neuer spake word vnto him, eyther publicly, or priuately, vvhich might not bee spoken to a brother. During this time, *Arnaldo* conferred with *Policarpus*, yet not vvithout enuying *Periander*.

Ludafus walked very ioyfully with his spouse *Transilla*; the good *Maurice*, vvith his daughter and sonne in law; and the olde *Anthony*, vvith his vvife and children. They came to the City, where *Policarpus* caused his guests to be lodged magnificently in his royall Palace, preferring *Arnaldo* about the rest, knowing already that this was the Prince of Denmarke, whom *Auristela*s beauties and perfections had made to forsake his Realme. Almost at the same side *Auristela* vvvas lodged: from vvwhose eyes *Synforosa* could not vvith-draw hers, thanking heauen for making her the sister, and not the mistresse of *Periander*, as vvell for her extreame beauty, as for the nighnesse of bloud betwixt her and him. *Synforosa* loued her in passionate manner, and could not abide out of her company: she particularly obserued her actions, noted her vvords, marked her graces, and found pleasure in all, euen to the accent of her speech. *Auristela* considered her in like sort, and vvith like effects, though vvith different intention: for this beheld vvith the eyes of iealousie, and the other vvith those of good vvill.

They abode in the city certaine dayes to refresh themselves, after their passed traueils. *Arnaldo* in the meane time gaue order to returne into Denmarke, or to such place as *Auristela* and *Periander* vvvere minded to goe; shewing, as he had alwaies done, that he had none other will, but such as vvvas conformable to theirs.

Clodio, vvho vvith his idleness had curiously marked the passions of *Arnaldo*, & knowne how much his necke was abased vnder his loues yoake; one day vvhen they were alone, he spake vnto him after this manner. Hauing alwaies publicly reprobued the vices of Princes, vvithout obser-

observing such respect as is due to their greatnesse, I vwill now speake in secret, and vvithout leaue; that vvwhich I beseech you to heare with patience: for that vvwhich is vttered by way of aduice, is to be excused for the intent, although it be displeasing. *Arnaldo* vvvas troubled, not knowing vvhat conclusion might ensue from the preamble of *Clodio's* discourse: vvwhich to know, he resolved to giue him the hearing, and commanded him to say vvhat he vvould; and vpon this safe-conduct, *Clodio* proceeded in this manner.

O Prince, thou louest, nay rather adorest *Auristela*, yet knowest no more of her affaires or estate then shee hath beene willing to vtter, vvwhich is nothing. Thou hast had her in thy power more then two yeares: during vvwhich, thou hast vsed all possible diligence to allwage her cruelty, and subdue her vvill to thine, by the honourable and lawfull waie of marriage. And in the meane vvwhile, she is now in the same integrity wherein shee was the first day thou sawest her: vvherby one may easily discern, that the more patient thou art, the lesse she doth acknowledge it. Thou oughtest to consider that a woman contemneth not a Realme, nor a Prince that meriteth to bee beloued, vnlesse shee concealed in her heart some great mystery. This is besides another mystery, to see a vvandring maid so carefull to hide her birth, accompanied with a young man, vvho may be none of her brother, to stray from Ile to Ile, and from country to country, amidst the vnnmercifulnesse of heauen, and the perils of the land, vvwhich many times are greater then those vpon the sea. Of all good things vvwhich heauen imparteth to mankind, those that concerne honour, are most to bee esteemed: and such as haue reference to the life, are to come behinde. Wise men ought to measure their pleasures by reason, and not by pleasures themselves.

Hitherto *Clodio* had proceeded, shewing that he would haue gone further vvith a Philosophicall and graue discourse;

course; vvhhen *Periander* entring into the chamber, made him be silent at his comming, to the great displeasure of *Arnaldo*, vvho vvould gladly haue heard more, but especially of *Clodio* himselfe, vvho as yet had not ended all his speech. *Maurice*, *Ladyllas*, and *Tranfillsa* came in with him, and vvith them faire *Auristela*, sicke, and leaning on *Synforosa* shoullder; so that they vvere faine to haue her to bed: vvhich moued such troubles and gripings in the hearts of *Periander* and *Arnaldo*, that they had no lesse need to be succoured by Physicians, then *Auristela*.

CHAP. III.

The ieaalousie of Auristela, the loue of Synforosa, and other things worthy to be recounted.

AS soone as *Polycarpus* knew the sickenesse of *Auristela*, he sent her his Physicians: and because the pulse bewrayeth the Patients disease, they found by *Auristela's*, that her griefe vvvas of the minde, and not the body. But *Periander* knew it before them: *Arnaldo* vnderstood it in part, but *Clodio* better then they all. The Physicians appointed that she should not be left alone; but that they should endeuor to turne it away, eyther by musicke, or by some other merry conference. *Synforosa* vndertooke the charge of her recovery, offering alwaies to beare her company: which offer, *Auristela* tooke no great pleasure in; because she would not willingly see so often the cause of her malady, whereof she thought to haue no redresse, because she was resolved neuer to discouer it.

Finally, all of them voyded the chamber where shee vvvas, except *Synforosa*: who seeing her selfe alone vvith *Auristela*, put her mouth to hers, and clasping her fast in her armes with burning sighes, she seemed as though she would breath out her soule into *Auristela's* body.

These

These affections troubled her anew, and caused her to say: Madame, it seemeth by these appearances, that you are sicker then I, and your soule more afflicted then mine: Consider wherein I may serue you; for though my body be sicke, my will is in perfect health.

My friend, answered *Synfrosia*, I giue you all thanks that possibly I can for your offer; and I answer with the same will wherein you oblige mee in this behalfe, that I loue: shall I say I adore? no, for shame forbids me. But shall I die in holding my peace? Will mine euill bee holpen miraculously? Is silence capable of discourse? And haue two shamefalle and restryained eyes, force sufficient to declare the infinite thoughts of an amorous minde? *Synfrosia* spake this with so many sighes and teares, that *Auristela* was faine to wipe her eyes, and say thus in embracing her.

Let not your words dye in your mouth, faire Princess; dismitte for a small time, the confusion vvhich troubles you, and make mee faithfull Secretary of your thoughts: for if euils be not remedied by communicating them to others, yet at least they are thereby mitigated. If your passion be amorous, as I imagine, without doubt I know well that you are of flesh, though you seeme to be of Alabaſter: and also I well know that our soules are in continuall motion, and cannot alwaies reſtraine themſelues from wiſhing wel vnto ſome ſubieſt whereto their ſtarres incline them. Tell me, Madame, the party whom you loue: for like as you cannot fall into the extrauagant courſes of thoſe women that haue loued a bull, or a tree; in caſe hee be a man, you ſhall not cauſe in me any aſtoniſhment or maruell. I am a maide as you are, and haue my deſires like another, which til this preſent my mouth neuer vttered; but in the end, they muſt neceſſarily be diſcouered, whatſoeuer inconuenience may happen: and howſoeuer it fall out, at the leaſt I will make knowne by my laſt Will, the cauſe of my death. *Synfrosia* beheld her with

with admiration: and euery word shee spake, shee recorded as a sentence proceeding from the mouth of an Oracle.

O sister, said the Princess, I thinke the heaven, pitying my grieffe, hath brought you into this country miraculously by so strange a circuit, and brought you out of the shippes darke Hold, into the worlds brightnesse, to the end my night may turne to day, and my desires finde some issue out of the confusion wherein they are. So that I may hold you no longer in suspense, you shall know that your brother *Periander* came into this Ile: and then she declared the manner of his arriuall, the opposites hee had vanquished, and the prizes hee had wonne, as hath been recited. Shee further told her, how the excellencies of *Periander* had awaked in her a kinde of desire, that extended not so farre as loue, but onely to good will: but yet afterward, through solitarinesse & ease, her thoughts passing to and fro in contemplation of his worthy parts, had painted in her a perfect loue; not of a private person, but of a Prince, at least in merit. This painting was engrauen in my minde: and I not well aduised, willingly suffered it there to bee grauen, without making resistance: and so by degrees I came to loue and adore him as I haue said.

Synforosa had further continued her speech, if her sister *Polycarpa* had not entred, who sung to the harpe which she bore in her hands. *Synforosa* said not a word, *Auristela* was as one lost: yet their astonishment hindred them not to giue eare to the incomparable harmony of *Polycarpa*, who sung these words in her owne language, which afterward the Barbarian *Anthony* translated into Spanish.

*If Cynthia know, suffer and feare thy paine,
But yet cannot thy liberty restore:
Giue free course to thy grieffe, stay it no more,
For tis no honour not to dare complaine.*

This

daughter, who though he came to the crowne by election, is neuerthelesse a matter of great consequence. Mine age you see, my beauty is not hidden from you: and the same, such as it is, though it deserue not to bee esteemed, it meriteth not to bee hated. Giue mee (sweet heart) your brother for my husband, and I will giue my selfe to you to be your sifter; we will part my riches, & I will procure you such a spouse as after my fathers death shall be chosen King of this Realme.

And in saying this, *Synfrosa* held *Auristela's* hands, bathing them all ouer with teares, which *Auristela* accompanied with hers, iudging by her owne case how great are the di.resses of an amorous heart: and though in the person of *Synfrosa* shee discerned an enemy, yet shee was moued to pity her: for noble mindes will not work reuenge when they may: how much lesse those that are guiltlesse, and neuer did them iniurie? The fault of *Synfrosa* and *Auristela* were alike, their thoughts the same, and both of them were vnadvisedly carried with the same intentions.

Finally, she could not blame her, vnles first shee rest convinced of the same offence: but shee would, if at some times she had fauoured *Periander*, though it were but in matters of small moment; or if by speech or look she had discouered her affection vnto him. *Synfrosa* made her answer, that shee neuer durst lift vp her eyes to looke vpon him, but with consideration of what was due to her estate, and that she had refrained her tongue no lesse then her eyes. This I beleeue, said *Auristela*: but did he neuer shewe vnto you any apparent token of his loue towards you? for I cannot beleeue him to bee so void of sense that he should not be touched with feeling of a beautie like vnto yours. Wherefore I am of this minde, that first or I intermeddle herein, your selfe endeauor to speak vnto him, or giue him, by some honest fauour, occasion to speake to you: for sometimes curtesies vnexpected inflame

flame the mindes that are least warme: and if he but once answer according to your desire, it shall be afterward easie for mee to bring to passe, that hee shall content your minde. It is vnealie, faire Lady, to begin any thing, but in loue most difficult. Neuerthelesse, I would aduise you not to be overforward in your affections; for the fauours which Ladies bestowe vpon their louers, though in neuer so challe a fashion, appeare not alwaies to bee such, and honour ought not to be lost for pleasure. Yet herein discretion may doe much: and loue, who is a witty maister to direct the thoughts, findeth occasions of time and place to bring them to light without losse of renowne.

CHAP. IIII.

Wherein is prosecuted the amorous history of Synforosa.

Synforosa gaue attentive eare to the discreet words of *Auristela*, and without answering thereunto shee said thus vnto her in continuation of her former discourse; Consider, my friend, vnto what issue hath proceeded the loue which your brothers valour hath engendred in my heart. I brought to passe, that a captaine of my fathers guard should go seeke him out, and bring him backe before me, either by loue or by force. The shippe wherein he embarked is the same that brought you hither: for he was there found dead amongst the other dead bodies: It must needs be so, answered *Auristela*: for he tould mee a good part of that which you haue related, whereby I had before some little confused knowledge of your thoughts; which I desire you to moderate if it be possible, vntill you haue discovered vnto me that which hath befallen you both: for neither you nor I shall want occasion to speake vnto him. Againē *Synforosa* thanked *Au-*

ristela for her offer : and shee againe was moued to haue compassion of *Synforosa*.

Whilst these things passed betweene them, *Arnaldo* was in another kinde of conference with *Clodio*, vvhio was ready to burst with the desire hee had either to disturb or abolish the amorous thoughts of this Prince : whom hauing found alone, if such a one may bee said to be alone who is accompanied with so many desires, hee once more debated with him in this manner ; I tould thee, great Prince, the other day what small assurance is to be expected from the fickle nature of women : & that *Auristela* in effect is but a woman, though shee seeme to be an Angell : and *Periander* a man, albeit he bee her brother. I will not say that your minde should haue a suspicious and euill conceipt : but I desire that you should examine and consider by reason what you are, the leauing your father alone, the danger wherein you hazard your selfe to lose your kingdome, and the fault you commit against your subiects, who are in condition like a ship and mariners hauing lost their Pilote that should conduct them. Consider, that Kings are obliged to chuse their wiues not for beauty, but worthinesse of birth ; nor with riches, but vertues : because of the bond which they haue to leaue good succellours vnto their kingdomes.

Nothing so diminisheth the respect which is due vnto Kings, as to see them degenerate from their blood ; neither is it enough to say that a Kings greatnesse of it selfe is of sufficient power to aduance the woman from base estate whom hee will take to wife: for horses and other beasts knowne to bee of generous breeding, promise a more admirable race then those that are vnknowne and basely degenerated.

Amongst the vulgar sort pleasure sometimes hath the prebeminence, but it is not so amongst Princes. Wherefore O Prince, either returne to your Realme, or suffer not your selfe heere to bee abused : and pardon this my bouldnes,

bouldnes: for if I be reputed an euill speaker, I would not be esteemed to haue a wicked affection in your behalfe. You haue receiued mee vnder your protection, my life resteth on the support of your worthinesse, vnder the shadow whereof I feare not the tempests of heauen, vvhich already with more fauourable starres do seeme to make mine estate more fortunate.

I thanke thee *Clodio*, answered *Arnaldo*, for the good counsell thou hast giuen me; but I pray God I may not follow it. *Auristela* is good, *Periander* is her brother, & I will knowe or beleue no more then she hath told mee: for whatsoeuer shee saith is true. I credit and adore her without question: for her infinite beautie carrieth after it all my delires, which can haue no resting place but in her, and for her alone I haue liued, liue, and shall liue all my life time. Wherefore *Clodio*, aduise me no more, because thy words passe away with the winde: and thou shalt see by mine actions, that thy counsels shall bee alwaies vaine as touching me.

Clodio shrunke vp his shoulders, held downe his head, and departed from his presence with a firme purpose neuer to serue him as a counsellor; hauing learned that who-soeuer will be such, ought to haue three qualities: wherof the first is authoritie; the second, prudence; and the third is, that he should be called.

Such reuolutions and amorous inuentions walked vp and downe in the palace of *Polycarpus*, and in the hearts of those confused louers: *Auristela* being ialous; *Synsorofo*, amorous; *Periander*, troubled; *Arnaldo*, wilfull; *Maurice* resolving to returne against *Transillas* wil: who least she should fall againe into the hands of her citizens, would not abide the speech thereof; *Laisus* her husband neither durst nor would contradict her; Ould *Anthony* was nigh dead with desire to see himselfe, his vvife and children in Spaine; *Rutilio* was for Italy. All had endless desires, but accomplished nothing: such is the conditi-

on of mans nature ; which though God had created absolute and perfect, we maime alwaies through our owne default.

Now *Synforosa* had brought to passe that *Auristela* was alone with *Periander*, through her desire to beginne the debating of a cause, vpon whose iudgement her life or death depended : and the first words which *Auristela* said to *Periander*, were these :

Our pilgrimage, my brother, so full of labour and vnrest, makes mee feare every moment those that may procure our death. and to desire that our liues in some place of stay may be secured ; finding none so good, as where now wee are. Heere is offered vnto you wealth in great plenty, not by promise, but in very deed : a noble vwife, exceedingly faire, & worthy not to pray you as she doth ; but that you should intreat, serue, make the best friends you can to obtaine her. Whilest *Auristela* spake these words, *Periander* looked on her so attentiuely, that his eie-lids neuer moued, reuoluing a thousand thoughts in his minde vpon a sodain, to know whither the speeches of *Auristela* tended. But she freed him from this confusion, saying ; I tell you brother, *Synforosa* adoreth you, & would haue you to be her husband : shee saith shee hath riches incredible : and I affirme that shee is adorned with beauty, as any man may discerne ; which we may beleeue to be such, as neither can be aduanced by exaggerations, nor increased by hyperbolicall speeches. And so farre forth as I can perceiue, shee is of high estate, sharpe vvitt, and a no lesse discreet than pleasant humour. Yet for all this I acknowledge what you deserue in being such as you are : but in such fortune as is now befallen you, such a companion should not be vnfitting you. We are out of our country : you are pursued by your brother ; and I by my destiny. Our way to Rome the more wee desire, the farther we are from it. My purpose is nothing altered, though it stagger : and I would not death should take me away

away amongst the feares of so many hazards. Wherefore I meane to end my life in some religious profession, and I wish you may continue yours in good fortune.

Heere *Auristela* ended her speech and began to weepe, disauowing thereby whatsoeuer shee had before spoken. Shee drew her armes out of the bed, laying them on the couerlet, and turned her head on the other side opposite to *Perianders*: who hauing seene this action, and heard this discourse, lost both voyce and sight; and falling on his knees to the earth, lean'd his head against the bed. *Auristela* turning hers, and seeing him in a transe, put her hand to his face: and he not feeling any thing, she wiped away the teares that ranne downe along his cheekes.

CHAP. V.

Of that which passed betwixt Policarpus and his daughter.

WE see diuers effects in nature, but are ignorant of the causes. There are some whose teeth are set on edge, if they see cloth cut with a knife: others are troubled at the sight of a ratte. I haue seene some quake to see one cut a radish, and others rise from the table when Oliues are serued in. If any should demand the cause, not one can declare it: and those that thinke they haue best hit the marke, affirme that the starres haue a certaine antipathy with the complexions of men, which encline them to such feares & astonishments, when they behold the things abouesaid. One definition of a man is, that he is a liuing creature apt to laugh; because amongst all animals, man onely laugheth: and by the same reason hee may bee described by weeping. For like as immoderate laughter is an argument of mans little vnderstanding, so by too great plenty of tears he sheweth his want of iudgement.

ment. A wise man is permitted to weepe for his finnes: all other teares are vnworthy of a graue countenance.

Let vs now behold *Periander*, who though hee weepe not as a penitent, but as amorous, shall not want some persons to excuse his teares, and other besides that will wipe them away as *Aurissela* did, who with more cunning then verity had brought him to this estate. In the end he came to himselfe: and hearing some walke in the chamber, he turned his head, and saw *Ricla* and *Constance* at his back, who came to see *Aurissela*; which serued him to good purpose, who knew not what to say: wherefore he left the place, and went to bethinke himselfe of that shee had spoken, and how he should answer her. In the meane time *Synferosa* was possessed with an extreame desire to know the successe of the conference betwixt *Periander* and *Aurissela*. And doubtlesse *Ricla* and *Constance* had not prevented her in going to see *Aurissela*, if her father had not sent to speake with her at that present. Shee obediently went to see him, and found him alone in his priuy chamber, where hauing beene silent for a time, hee spake such like words with a lowe voyce.

Daughter, though thy young yeares oblige thee not to feele that which is called loue; yet Nature sometimes passeth her bounds, enflaming children of greene yeares, as it also consumeth such as by old age are dried vp.

When *Synferosa* heard these words, she sodainly imagined that her father knew all her desires: yet shee said nothing, as vnwilling to interrupt his farther declaration; feeling in the meane while such beating of her heart, as if it had searched some passage to goe out of her breast. Daughter, continued *Poliscarpus*, since thy mothers death, I haue withdrawn my selfe vnder the shadow of thy delights, defending my selfe by thy protection, and gouerned by thy counsells. I haue religiously obserued the lawes of my widdowers estate, as well to preferue my reputation, as that I might not endanger the losse of my soule.

souie. Yet since these new guests came into our City, the Di-
all of mine vnderstanding is ouerthrowen, and the
course of my vertuous life troubled in such sort, that I
am fallen from the highest pinnacle of my discretion into
the lowest gulfes of I know not what desires, the concea-
ling whereof will be my death; and the bewraying, my
dishonour. I die for *Auristela*, and the heate of her yong
beauty is entred into the bones of my frozen olde age.
From the starres of her eyes, my darke sight hath recei-
ued a new brightnesse, and the gallantnesse of her per-
son giuetli strength vnto my feeble body. I would, if I
could possible, giue thee and thy sister a mother in law,
whose great perfections might excuse mee for giuing
her. If thou consent hereunto, I care not what others can
say: and suppose for this folly, if it seeme such, I should
be depriued of my kingdome, I would be lesse carefull;
for may I raigne in the armes of *Auristela*, there shall bee
no Monarke in the world equall to mee. My purpose,
daughter, is that thou giue her notice hereof, & obtain at
her hands the consent which I desire: which in mine opi-
nion shall not be hard to compasse, if to my yeers she dis-
creetly oppose the greatnes of my riches & authority. It
is good to be a Queene, & good to command. Honour
giues delight, and all recreations are not comprised in e-
quall mariages. A man should chiefly desire these foure
things: a good wife, a good house, a good horse, & good
armor: and the two first ought to be as much desired by
women, as men, or rather more: because the husband is
not aduanced in degree of noblenesse by his wife, but
contrarily the husbands dignity aduanceth his wifes e-
state; which, were it neuer so small and base, is equall to
the greatnesse and maiesty of him that espouseth her.
And so vwhatsoever *Auristela* be at this present, in being
my wife, she shall be a Queene, and her brother *Perian-
der* my brother in law: whom honouring with this title,
and making him thy husbnd, thou shalt be no lesse esteem-
med.

med in being his wife, then because thou art my daughter. But how know you my Lord, answered *Synforosa*, that *Periander* is vnmarried? and if he be not, that hee is vwillig to accept of me? That he is yet a batcheler, answered the King, I iudge, because I see him wander into strange Countries, vvhich is not permitted to those that are married: and that he is vwillig to be yours, I assure my selfe by his discretion, vvhich is great, and will make him see what good shall befall him by this alliance. And because his sisters beauty hath made her a Queene, it is no maruell if yours make him your husband.

With these last words, and large promise, the King cherished *Synforosa's* hopes, and seasoned the taste of her desires. And so being well pleased with her fathers wilhes, she promised to work the meanes of this marriage with *Acrifela*, receiuing the reward of good newes, at least by promise, before she had as yet any thing negotiated in the businesse. Onely she told him, that his care was good as touching the marriage which hee purposed to conclude betwixt her and *Periander*; and albeit his worth and valour were sufficiently knowne, yet nothing should be rashly done, before experience and conuersing together certaine daies had first given them assurance.

This shee spake farre otherwise then shee thought, for she would haue giuen all the goods which euer since shee was borne, she most desired in this world, to haue him to her husband. But in maides affaires, the tongue speakes one thing, and the heart thinks another.

These things passed between *Poliscarpus* and his daughter, whilest a discourse vvas made in another chamber, betweene *Rutilio* and *Clodio*. *Clodio*, (as in speaking of his customes and life we haue already written) was a man crafty and malicious: vvho, together with ill speaking, was of gentleman-like behauior, and discreet; for fooles know not how to speake euill, men are delighted vvith points and subtilties of a wiferailer, who serues in company

pany as salt amongst meate. To be brieſe, this is the comfort of byring Saryſts, that if they be condemned as pernicious and hurtfull, they are acquitted as diſcreet, and praised as witty. Our euill ſpeaker then, whoſe malicious tongue had made him to bee baniſhed from his country with the vicious *Rofamond*, finding himſelfe alone with *Rutilio*, ſaid thus vnto him :

Seeſt thou not *Rutilio*, that he vvhich diſcloſeth a ſecret vnto another, praying him to ſay nothing becauſe it imports his life, is a foole ? I now demand of thee that diſcouereſt thy thoughts, and openeſt thy ſecrets ; If it might put thy life in hazard, that another ſhould know ſo much, and yet thy ſelfe bewrayeſt them, how wouldeſt thou haue another bee ſilent therein whm it nothing concerneth ? What greater aſſurance canſt thou haue, that what thou knoweſt ſhall neuer bee diſcloſed, then in thine owne ſilence ? I ſay this vnto thee *Rutilio*, to make thee perceiue that I know theſe things, and that herewithall certaine thoughts come to my mouth and tongue, which are mad till they come into diſcourſe, and goe abroad in the market place before they corrupt my ſtomack, or make me burſt. Come hither vnto me *Rutilio*: what makes *Arnaldo* here? following the body of *Aurifeſta*, like as if he were her ſhadow ; leaving his Realme at the diſcretion of his olde and decrepit father, loſing himſelfe here, drowning himſelfe there, weeping on the one ſide, ſighing on the other, and bitterly lamenting euery where the miſerable fortune of his owne framing ?

What ſhall we ſay of this *Aurifeſta* and her brother, two yong vagabonds, that conceale their parents? It may bee to put vs in doubt that they are iſſued from a great houſe ; for thoſe that are farre from their Country, may make themſelues to haue what fathers they liſt, and by diſcretion and cunning, appeare in their beſhaviour to be children of the Sun, and of the Moone. I will not deny but it is a vertue deſeruing praiſe, for a man to make himſelfe

selfe better then he is, but yet it must be without preiudice to any. Honour and praise are the reward of vertue, that is to say, such as is firme and solid: but they belong not to hypocritie nor dissimulation. Who may this wraittler be, this fencer, this runner, and this leaper? this faire *Ganimede*, sold here, bought there: this *Argus* of the delicate *Anrissela*, whom he alwaies lookes vpon, as on a Mariners Compaſſe, that wee were neuer able to know this paire of such incomparable beauty, whence they came, or vvhither they goe? But that which most troubleth me in their behalfe is this; that I sweare vnto thee *Rutilio* by the eleuen heauens which men say there are, that I could neuer perswade my selfe that they are brother and sister, and admit they be, I cannot vvell conceiue how this fraternity can go so vnited by lands, and by seas; by deserts, and by fields; by Innes and by tauernes. Their expences come out of the bouget of the Barbarians *Ricla* and *Constance*, which is full of golden pieces. I see well, that this crosse of Diamonds, and these two pearles which *Anrissela* carrieth, are of great value. But these are not pledges vvhich are exchanged or giuen for a small matter: and we need say nothing else, but thinke they finde alwayes Kings and Princes to lodge and fauour them. But now *Rutilio*, what shall we say of *Transilla's* phantasie, & her fathers Astrology, she that is so valiant, and he that esteems himselfe the best Iudiciary of the world? for *Ladislus*, I dare venture any thing, that he would now willingly be at rest in his owne country, and in his house, though *Transilla* should yet once more vndergoe the ordinances of her City, rather then see himselfe heere in a strange country, and at their discretion who would supply such things as they need. And our Spanish Barbarian, into whose pride it seemeth all the worlds valiance is reduced; I vwill lay a vvager, that if euer the heauen suffer him to returne into his country, hee vwill assemble all the world to shew them his vvife and children wrapped all

in skinner, and make the Barbarian liand to be painted in a cloth, and shewe vnto them with a wand the place where he vvas fiftene yceres enclosed, the caue of the prisoners, the ridiculous triall of the Barbarians Prophecies, and the vnexpected burning of their Ile: or like those which haue beene freed from slavery of the Turkes, who hauing those chains on their neck which before they had on their feet, relate their misfortunes among the Christians, vvith a sorrowful voyce full of pitifull intreaties. Neuerthelesse, this is yet tolerable: for though it seemes they tell vs things impossible, yet mans estate is subiect to greater perils, and those that befall banished persons, are credible, bee they neuer so great. What conclude you *Clodio* heereupon, said *Rutilio*? I conclude to tell thee answered *Clodio*, that thou canst hardly liue by thy profession in this country, where the inhabitants neyther dance nor leape, nor take any other pleasure but in drinking. I also conclude with my selfe, that hauing escaped death by the fauor of heauen, and courtesie of *Arnaldo*, I giue thanks neyther to the one, nor the other, vvishing rather to amend my fortune, though it should redound to his detriment. Friendship may continue betwixt such as are poore, because the quality of their fortune is a chaine to hold their hearts together: but betweene the rich and the poore there can be no amity of long continuance, by reason of the inequality betwixt riches and pouerty. Thou *Clodio* art a Philosopher, replied *Rutilio*; but I cannot imagine vvhat meanes wee should vse to make our fortunes good, as you say, if it bee otherwise, from our birth. I am not so learned as thou, but this I know, that such as are borne of base parentage, vnlesse the heauens fauour them exceedingly, cannot alone and of themselves arise to such greatnesse, as to bee shewed with the finger, except vertue reach them the hand. And how should vertue aide thee, if the greatest vertue thou hast, be to speake euill of vertue it selfe. And as touching me,

me, by whom should I be aduanced? who though I strue neuer so much can mount no higher then the skippe of a caper. I a dancer, thou an euill speaker: I condemned in mine owne country to be hanged, and thou banished out of thine: consider what reason we haue to hope that any shall make vs great. *Clodio* vvay, as one in a quandary at the speech of *Rutilio*, and in this suspence the Author of this history concludeth this chapter.

CHAP. VI

Perianders Lamentation, and the continuance of the loue of Synforosa, speaking to Auristela.

ALl had to whom they might impart their thoughts; *Policarpus* to his daughter, and *Clodio* to *Rutilio*: onely the astonished *Periander* communicated his to none but himselfe, which were bred in him by *Auristela's* words in such kinde, that he knew not whither to haue recourse for mitigation of his pensiuenesse. O my God (said he to himselfe) what a thing is this? hath *Auristela* lost her iudgement? will shee be a mediator of my marriage? how is it possible that she hath forgotten our agreements? what haue I to doe with *Synforosa*? what realms, or what riches can constrain me to forsake my *Sigismunda*, as long as I am *Perfiles*? In speaking this word he bit his tongue, looking round about to see if any gaue eare to him; and being assured that none heard what he said, he thus continued. Without doubt *Auristela* is iealous, for iealousie amongst louers is ingendred by the winde blowing, the Sunne shining on them, and the earth that beares them. O mistresse, take heed what you doe doe: vwrong not your vvorth nor beauty; and take not from me the glory of my constant thoughts, whose fidelity is in working for me an inestimable crowne of a
true

true louer. *Synfrosa* is faire, rich, and of good birth : but in comparifon of you, ſhe is hard fauoured, poore, and of baſe lineage. Conſider Madame, that loue is bred and borne in our hearts, eyther by election, or by deſtiny. That which is by deſtiny, continueth alwaies in the ſame eſtate: that which commeth from election, may increaſe or diminifh, or augment the cauſes that binde vs to mutuall affection. And this being true as it is, I finde that my loue hath no bounds to limit it, nor words to expreſs it. I may in a manner affirm, that I loued you from mine infancy, euer ſince I was ſwadled and rocked, and heere-upon I ground the argument of deſtiny. With age, and vie of reaſon, in me increaſed the acknowledgement, and in you the parts which make you amiable. I ſee, contemplate, and know them: I graue them in my ſoule; and of yours and mine I make ſuch an vnited and ſimple compoſition, that death ſhall haue much to doe to diſſeuer them. O *Synfrosa*, leaue me the good that is mine, offer me not any ſtrange beauties, and allure me not with Monarchies and Empires to loue you. And you *Auriſtela*, relinquifh not to reſound in mine eares the ſweet name of a brother, wherewith you call me. All that I now ſay to my ſelfe, I would willingly vtter in the ſame tearmes that I haue deuifed in my phantaſie: but it will not bee poſſible; for that the ſplendor of your eyes, eſpecially if they wrathfully behold me, will trouble my ſight, and make dumbe my tongue. It will be better for me to write vnto you; for the reaſons ſhall be alwayes one, you may look on them oftentimes, and therein alwaies behold one and the ſame truth, a firme faith, a commendable drift, and worthy to be credited.

Herewithall he reſted for a time, reſolving to write vnto her, thinking that he ſhould expreſſe his minde better, and diſcourſe vvith more iudgement by his pen, then by his tongue.

Let vs leaue *Periander* to his writing, and hearken a little

tle vnto *Synforosa*; who being desirous to know what answer *Periander* had made to *Auristela*, sought meanes to be alone with *Auristela*, and by the way to giue her some knowledge of her fathers intent; beleeuing, vpon the first declaration thereof, to obtaine *Auristela's* consent: grounding the same on this imagination, that greatnesse and wealth are seldome contemned, especially by women, who by nature are most couetous, as also most proud and ambitious.

When *Auristela* saw *Synforosa*, she had small pleasure in her comming, because in hauing resolved with *Periander* vpon nothing, she could not make her any answer: but *Synforosa*, before shee spake of her owne businesse, shee would touch those of her Father; imagining that vwith such ioyfull newes as she brought to *Auristela*, she should winne her to take her part: wherein consisted, as shee thought, the gaining of her suite. Wherefore shee said vnto her:

Faire *Auristela*, the heauens doe greatly cherish thee; for it seemes they will raine downe vpon thy head, all manner of good fortunes. The King my father adoretli thee, who sent mee to tell thee that hee will bee thy husband: and in recompence of the consent which I shall carry vnto him on your behalfe, hee hath promised mee that I shall be wedded to *Periander*; and so sister you are already a Queene, *Periander* is mine, you haue riches already beyond that which you can hope for, or desire; and if your pleasures be not so great in my fathers olde age, they shall be required in rule and command, which you shall haue ouer all his subiects, who shall alwaies be diligent to serue you.

I haue told thee great matters my faire loue, vvhich should binde thee to doe much for me: for from so great perfection as thine, we can hope for no lesse then great thankfulnessse. And now the world begins to see a mother and daughter in lawe, louing well each other with-

out

out dissimulation, as it must fall out, if your discretion forget not it selfe. But now tell me what answer made your brother to that vvhich you told him of me: I assure my selfe that he gaue thee a good answer; for he should be of simple iudgement, which would not receiue your counsells as an Oracle. To this, *Aurissela* answered. My brother is not vnthankfull in any respect, and is very discreet, as beeing a Knight who hath much trauelled, and seene many things: for nothing makes men to haue quicker wits, then to reade and see much: and mine and my brothers trauels, haue therein made vs reade and see how highly we ought to esteeme of rest: and because we shall obtaine the same by meanes of your offer, I doubtlesse imagine wee shall take it. Yet hitherto my brother hath made me no answer, neyther doe I know any thing of his will which may fauour or contradict your hopes. Giue some time, faire *Synfrosa*, to time: and let vs consider the benefit of your promises, to the end we may know how to esteeme them when they shall bee effected. If a man faile in those things which can bee but once done, they cannot bee amended the second time which they want, and marriage is one of these things: wherefore it ought carefully to be deliberated vpon before the accomplishment. And yet all considerations set apart, I belieue that you shall obtaine your desires, and I receiue your promises and counsells; and therefore sister, goe & cause *Periander* to come and speake with me: for I long to know some ioyfull newes to tell you, and to consult with him what will best be fitting for me, as being mine elder brother, to vvhom I owe all respectiue obedience. *Synfrosa* embraced her, and departed to fetch *Periander*: who hauing locked himselfe alone in a chamber, took his pen, and after many beginnings which he rased out of the paper, in the end he finished this Letter.

The Letter of Periander to Auristela.

“ I Durst not trust my tongue with that I commit to my
 “ penne, and yet I thinke to haue no better successe in
 “ writing, then in speaking: for he can neuer write vvell,
 “ who euery moment expecteth nothing but death. I
 “ now well perceiue, that all wise men knowe not how to
 “ giue good counsell in euery matter, but onely such as
 “ haue had experience in those things whereof they are
 “ asked aduice. Pardon me if I commend not yours; be-
 “ cause I thinke eyther you know not, or haue vtterly
 “ forgotten your selfe. Returne to the way Madam, that
 “ a vaine and iealous presumption make you not passe
 “ the limits of your admirable iudgement. Consider
 “ what you are, and remember who I am, and you shall
 “ finde in you the highest top of all perfections that may
 “ be spoken, and in me all the loue & constancy that can
 “ bee imagined: and I assure you in the consideration
 “ hereof, that you need not feare least any strange beau-
 “ ties should enflame me, or that I haue any thing in the
 “ world euer to preferre before your incomparable ver-
 “ tue. Let vs follow our voyage; accomplish our vow,
 “ and leaue these fruitlesse and hurtfull suspicions. I will
 “ prouide for our departure from this country with all
 “ diligence and speed I possibly can: for me thinks in get-
 “ ting from hence, I shall come out of my hellish torment
 “ that I may enioy the glory to see you without iealousie.

This was the Letter which *Periander* wrote, and which
 he wrote out fair, after he had made fve or sixe blots; and
 therewith went to see *Auristela*, now that one was already
 cometo fetch him, in her name.

CHAP.

CHAP. VII.

The audaciousnes of Rutilio and of Clodio, who writ loue-letters to Policarpa and to Auristela.

THesetwo gallants, *Rutilio* and *Clodio*, who would aduance their base fortunes, one trusting in his wit, the other in his impudence, imagined they were of sufficient worth, one to be beloued of *Policarpa*, & the other of *Auristela*. The voice and good grace of *Policarpa* contented *Rutilio*: and the incomparable beauty of *Auristela* had wounded the eies of *Clodio*. Both of them sought occasion to manifest their thoughts; not thinking vwhat harme could ensue by declaring them: for a man of small accompt, which aduentureth to speake that which hee should not so much as thinke vpon, to a woman of qualitie, should apprehend the danger of future euill. Neuerthelesse, it sometimes falleth out, that the free actions of a great Lady giue occasion of bouldnesse to people of little esteeme, to looke vpon her, and declare vnto her such things as otherwise they durst not to haue harboured in their thoughts. Modesty and grauitie ought to be vnited vnto an honest woman: but it must be a modesty without carelesnesse, and a grauitie without pride: for the greater a Lady is, the more humble she ought to bee. But in these two new louers, their desires tooke not their first originall from the ouermuch libertie, or too small grauitie of their Ladies: but from whence soeuer it proceeded, *Rutilio* in the end wrote a letter to *Policarpa*, the tenour whereof ensueth.

Rutilio to Policarpa.

MAdam: I am a stranger, & whatsoeuer I tell you of the greatnes of my linage, it may be because I haue

K 2

no

"no witnesses to confirme the same, your hart will giue
 "no credit thereunto. Although to tellise the nobilitie
 "of my birth, it sufficeth that I haue beene so bould as to
 "say, I adore you; Consider what proofes you wil haue
 "me bring to assure this veritie: for it belongeth to you
 "to demand, and to me to performe. And because I de-
 "fire you for my spouse, imagine you that I desire as I
 "am, and merit according to my desire, in regard it be-
 "longeth to high minds to aspire to high matters. Giue
 "me, if it please you, an answer of this paper, at the least
 "with your eies: for in the sweetnes or cruelty of their
 "look I shall see the sentence of my death or of my life.

Rutilio hauing foulded vp this letter, with purpose to
 giue the same to *Policarpa*, first shewed it to *Clodio*; who,
 in requitall, shewed him another, which hee had made
 for *Auristela*; the words whereof were these:

Clodio to Auristela.

Some enter into the trappes of loue with the baits of
 beautie; others, with those of pleasant behauiour and
 curtesie; and others, by those of worth which they con-
 sider in the person whom they meane to serue: But I
 haue put my necke vnder his yoke, my feet into his fet-
 ters, and my will to his lawes. by a fashion much diffe-
 rent; namely, those of griefe. For what stony heart is
 there, Madam, that can bee void of a compassionate fee-
 ling of sorrowe, in seeing you sould^d bought, and redu-
 ced to such extremities, that euery step, euery moment,
 you sawe your selfe at the last date of your life. The mer-
 cilesse iron hath threatened your throat, the fire hath
 burnt to the gowne you weare, the snowe hath frozen
 you, famine decaid and withered the red roses of your
 cheeks: finally, the water hath drowned you & cast you
 vp: I knowe not with what strength you beare these tra-
 uels; considering that you cannot receiue any great co-
 fort

fort in those of a wandering King, who followeth you for the sole interest of enioying you which hee pretendeth : and much lesse those of your brother, if he be so indeed, are so great that they can assuage your misery.

Trust not, Madam, in promises farre off, but rely rather on hopes at hand, and chuse a meanes to liue, which may assure that which the heauen will giue you. I am yong, and a man of sufficient habilitie to liue in the remotest places of the earth. I will finde waies to conuay you hence, & free you from the importunities of *Arnaldo*: and vpon your coming out of this Egypt, I will conduct you into the land of promise, which is France, Italy or Spaine, seeing I cannot liue in England, my sweet and well beloued country. Aboue all things I offer my selfe to be your husband, and from this time forth accept you for my wife.

Rutilio hauing heard the letter of *Clodio*, said thus vnto him ; O a truth we are void of sense in seeking to perswade our selues that wee can fly to heauen without wings, and that our pretences will be like those of the Ant : Hearest thou *Clodio* ? my counsel is, that wee teare asunder these papers, because no force of loue hath vrged vs to write, but an idle and faint affection : for loue hath no birth nor increase, vnlesse it bee supported by hope, which if it faile, the other must vtterly decay. But wherefore shall wee hazard to ouerthrowe our selues in an enterprise where is nothing to be gotten ? For to manifest this attempt, and to see the halter or knife at our weasands, is but all one thing ; and more then that, to shewe our selues amorous, we shall appeare vnthankfull and traitors. Seest thou not the distance betwixt a master of dancing, who amended his occupation by beeing a goldsmith, and a Kings daughter ? and the state of a banished railer, and her which refuseth and contemnes Realmes ? Let vs bite our tongues, that our repentance may be as forward as our follie; at least this letter of mine

shall sooner bee burnt or scattered in the winde, then giuen to *Policarpa*.

Doe as thou wilt with thine, answered *Clodio* : for though I giue not mine to *Anrissela*, I will keepe it for the honour of my minde ; albeit I feare if I deliuer it not, I shall feele a repentance all my life for not doing it, because that the triall is not alwaies hurtfull.

With these discourfes, our louers in thewe, but fooles in effect and verity, intertained each other: during which time the houre was comne wherein *Periander* should talke alone with *Anrissela*, and hee was gone to see her, with purpose to giue her the letter which hee had vvritten. But so soone as he saw her, forgetting all the discourfes and excuses which he had premeditated, he said vnto her : Madam, behould me well if I be *Periander*, and hee that was *Perfiles* : whom you now will haue to be *Periander* ; nothing but death can dissolue the knot vvwhich hath tied our affections: which if it be so, to what purpose can it serue to giue mee counsell so much repugnant to this verity ? By all the heauens I beseech you, and by your selfe which are fairer then they, that you speake not vnto me any more of *Synfrosa* ; neither imagine that her beautie or treasures can make me forget the rich mines of your vertues, nor the incomparable beautie as well of your bodie as of your minde. I breath onely for your sake, offering anew my selfe vnto you, not with any greater aduantage then I made this offer vnto you at the first ; because there is no article which can adde any thing to the obligation wherein I remaine your seruant from the first day that I receiued into my knowledge any imprellion of your vertue. Endeauour, Madam, to recouer health, and I will strue to get out of this country, and contriue our voiage in the best maner I can. For though Rome be the heauen of the earth, yet it is not in heauen : and there shall be no trauels or dangers to hinder vs from coming thither, though there may be some to disturbe and lengthen

lengthen our way. Hould you fast by the bodie & branches of your constancie, and doe not imagine that anie thing in the world is able to withstand you.

Whilst *Periander* thus spake, *Auristela* beheld him with eyes full of teares engendred by her iealous passion. But in the end, the amorous reasons of *Periander* wrought their effect in her soule, and made roome for truth issuing therewith from the same heart, which drew from *Auristela's* this answer.

I beleue you my Lord without enforcing me: and in this confidence I pray you that that wee may very speedily depart from this country: for it may be I shall be whole of the iealousie, which here maketh me sicke, better in another country.

Madam (answered *Periander*) if I had given any motion vnto your euill, I would take your complaints in patience, and you should find in mine excuses the remedy of your griefe. But not knowing wherein I could haue offended you, I knowe not in like manner how to excuse my selfe. I beseech you by that which you are, to cheare vp their hearts that knowe you, as soone as is possible: and with like readinesse I will put in effect the desire you haue to depart from hence.

Knowe you (said *Auristela*) how much it concerneth you? They would here flatter me with promises, & constrain me by gifts to receiue the offers they make mee of this Realme. King *Policarpus* would be my husband; and so sent me word by *Synforosa* his daughter: and by such fauour as she thinks to find at my hands in being her step-mother, she will haue you to her husband. Whether this may be effected or not, you know: and if we be in perill, you may see. Wherefore consulting with your wisdom, seeke out such remedy as our necessity requireth. Pardon me, if the force of a iealous mistrust hath constrained me to offend you: for loue easily excuseth this fault.

He affirms of himselfe (replied *Periander*) that he can-

not be without iealousie which is bred vpon weake and light occasions, and from a small beginning increaseth to such greatnes, that it cooleth the most ardent affections. I beseech you by that which you owe vnto your vnderstanding and wit, that henceforth you beholde mee with better eies, for fairer cannot be found in the world then yours: and for the residue, entertaine *Policarpus* & his daughter as in your good discretion you thinke best; for you shal nothing offend in faining words which haue relation to a good designe: and so farewell, lest our long discourse breed some bad suspicion in some bad minde.

Herewith *Periander* left her; and in comming out of the chamber, hee met *Clodio* and *Rutilio*; *Rutilio* making an end of tearing his letter; and *Clodio* folding his to put it into his pocket: *Rutilio* repenting his foolish thought, and *Clodio* pleasing himselfe in his owne wit, and reioycing in his rashnes. But the time will come, wherein he would he had neuer written it, though it had cost him halfe his life, if liues might possibly be parted.

CHAP. VII.

The device of Synforosa, and of Auristela; touching the mariages of Policarpus and of Periander, and the reasons which Auristela alleaged for delay thereof.

KING *Policarpus* was replenished with ioy in his amorous thoughts, and ouercome with desire to knowe the resolution of *Auristela*; being neuerthelesse in such sort assured of her conformitie to his will, that hee plotted in himselfe the wedding, contriued the feast, inuented sports for solemnizing thereof, and bestowed fauours besides in hope of his future mariage. But amongst all his enterprizes, hee neuer felt the pulses of his age, neither wisely brought to an equall balance the difference betweene

twene seauenteene yeares and threescore and ten. Thus desires and wanton affections flatter themselves: thus imagined pleasures beguile the greatest wits, and sweet imaginations doe thus ouersway those that make no resistance against amorous encounters. The thoughts of *Synforosa* were farre different: for she held not her fortune assured; it being a naturall thing to such as desire much, to feare much: and that which giueth wings to hope, as vertue, greatnesse, and beaury, doth also clip them; because Louers haue this property, alwaies to thinke, that they haue not sufficient good parts that may merit to be beloued of those whom they loue. Loue and feare walke so equally, that which way soeuer a man turne his eyes, he shall euer see them together. Neyther is loue proud as some say, but contrariwise, he is humble, pleasing, and so sweet, that oftentimes he loseth his right that he may not disquiet that which he loueth: and so much the rather, because as every louer valueth at an inestimable rate, the thing which hee loueth, hee would choose rather to die, then stirre vp any occasion on his part, whereby it might be lost.

Synforosa considered all this with better iudgement then her father: and betwixt hope and feare shee went to see *Anriscela*, to learne that which shee hoped and feared both at once. *Synforosa* then saw her selfe, according to her chiefest desire, alone with *Anriscela*: and so great was her longing to know newes of her good or bad fortune, that before she would speake a word vnto her, vpon her first entrance, shee disposed her selfe stedfastly to behold her, to see if by the alterations of her countenance shee would afford her any token of her life or death. *Anriscela* well vnderstood her meaning, though shee spake not, and with a cheerefull and smiling face, shee said thus vnto her.

Come neere Madame, there is nothing to be feared in your hope: but true it is that your good hopes and mine
shall

shall be a little deferred, but in the end they shall take effect : for although some inconueniences may hinder these iust desires; yet so it is, that despaire ought not to be the death of hope. My brother saith, that the knowledge he hath of your beauties and vertues, not onely obligeth, but also constraineth him to loue you; and that he holds your grace and fauor in desiring him, to bee the greatest good, and the greatest honor that euer happened vnto him. But before you come to this happy possession, it is necessary to beguile the hopes of the Prince of Denmark, who would faine haue me to wife; as I should bee doubtlesse, if your mariage with my brother be not an impeachment thereunto. For sister, you must know that I can liue as little without *Periander*, as a body can liue without a soule. I am resolu'd to liue where hee shall determine to liue, for he is the spirit that moueth me, and the soule that animateth me. This being presupposed, if hee marry with you in this Country, how shall I liue with *Arnaldo* in the absence of my brother? Neuerthelesse, to entertaine him with hope, wee are now going with him into his Realme, where we will craue licence to goe and accomplish our vow at Rome; the desire of performing which, hath drawne vs from our Country: and it is certaine, as experience hath taught me, that he will not bee against my will in any thing. Then being restored to our liberty, it shall be very easie for vs to returne into this Ile, where vve vvill delude his hopes, we shall see a good end of ours, I in being married with the King your father, and my brother with you.

Hereunto *Synforosa* answered: I know not sister with what words I may expresse the fauour you haue done me by your speeches; vvherefore I will leaue the same as it is, for that I am not able to declare it. That which I will now say vnto you, receiue rather for aduertisement, then as counsell giuen. You are now in this kingdome, and in my fathers power, who can and will defend you against
all

all the world: neyther is it reason to put to arbitrement an assured possession. It is not possible for the Prince of Denmarke to beare you hence by force: but of necessity he must desire, or at least consent vnto my fathers vvill, who now hath him in his Realme, and in his house. Assure me that you are in this minde to be my mistress, by espousing the King my father, and that your brother will not disdain to be my Lord and husband, and I will warrant you against all inconueniences and difficulties that may come on *Arnaldo's* behalfe.

To this *Auristela* replied: Wise men iudge of things to come, by those that are past and present. By detaining vs, your father may kindle *Arnaldo's* wrath, who to speake truth is a mighty King, and in euery respect more then he; and when Kings are mocked and beguiled, they engage themselues easily to worke reuenge: and so in stead of contentment in our alliance, you shall receiue hurt by the warres which for our sake shall bee brought to your doores. And if you say vnto me, that this feare shall alwaies continue, whether wee tarry heere, or returne againe: considering the heavens doe not alwaies hasten mishaps, but that they leaue vs some light to finde out remedies; I am of aduice that we goe with *Arnaldo*, and that your selfe by your wonred discretion solicit our departure: for by this meanes, you shall vrge and shorten our comming backe. And heere, though not in kingdomes of so large extent as *Arnaldo's*, at the least in greater peace and more assurance wee shall take the fruition: I of your fathers wisdom, and you of the gentleness and bounty of my brother, without any diuision or separation of our soules.

Synfora was so transported with contentment by hearing these words, that she tooke fast hold of *Auristela*: and casting her armes about her necke, with her faire and red lippes shee measured her mouth and eyes. Then they saw comming in, the two *Anthones*, father and sonne, with

Ricla,

Ricla and *Constance*, and shortly after entred *Maurice*, *Ladislus*, and *Transilla*, who were all desirous to see and speak with *Auristela*, and to know to what estate her infirmity was reduced, whereby all of them were participating of her sicknesse. *Synforosa* departed from the company with more ioy, and more deceiued then when shee came in: for louers belieue with incredible facility, the very shadowes of promises that concerne their pleasure.

Old *Maurice*, after the ordinary demands & answers accustomed in such visitations, said thus:

If poore people, though beggers, cannot beare vvith patience to see themselves absent and banished from their country, where they haue left nothing but seats of turfs to rest vpon; what grieve should others feele which haue left in their houses all the wealth which they could promise vnto themselves by fortune? I say this, Madam, because mine age, which with vrgent and hastie steppes approacheth to the end of my course, makes mee desire to see my selfe againe in my country, where my friends, kinsfolkes and children may close mine eye-lids, and giue me their last farewell. We shall attaine to this grace if it please God, because wee are all strangers and farre off, and all of vs (I beleeeue) haue in our lands that which wee shall not finde in strange countries. If you, Madam, will vrge our departure, or at least shall thinke good that wee doe procure it, you shall make vs all infinitely behoulding to you; although it be impossible for vs to forsake you: for your noble condition, your exquisite beauty, and your admirable discretion is the load-stone of our wills. Yea verely, said olde *Anthony*, at the least, of mine, my vvife and children: so that I would sooner leaue my life then her company, if she thinke no scorne of ours.

I thank you Gentlemen, said *Auristela*, for your good will you tellise towards me: and though it be not in my power to answer, as I ought, yet I will bring to passe that the Prince *Arnaldo*, and my brother *Periander* shall endea-

endeuour to effect it without that my debility, which God be praised is now past, shall hinder or delay our departure. But in expectation of this happy houre, cheere vp your harts, let not melancholy beare sway, nor thinke vpon any future dangers: for the heauen which hath deliuered vs from those we haue passed, will stop others from comming vpon vs; and by restoring vs in safety to our houses, will make vs know, that mishaps, which haue not strength to end our liues, haue not power to finish our patience. All of them wondred at *Auristela's* answer, for that therein she made manifest her pittifull heart, and admirable wisdom.

At that instant King *Polycarpus* entred, who was exceedingly ioyfull, because hee had known by *Synfrosa* the promises made as touching the accomplishment of his desires. Whether they were lasciuious or chaste, I know not: for olde folkes couer their amorous lusts vnder the cloake of hypocrisie, and their hypocrisie vnder the vaile of marriage. With the King, *Arnaldo* and *Periander* came in: and the King beeing merry with *Auristela* for her health recovered, commanded that this night, in thankfulness for the fauour heauen had bestowed vpon them, in the making of *Auristela* whole, they should light torches throughout the City, and that a publike feast and reioycing should bee made of eight dayes continuance. Thankes were given him by *Periander*, as the brother of *Auristela*; and by *Arnaldo*, as a louer that intended to marry her. *Polycarpus* inwardly reioyced, in consideration how pleasantly *Arnaldo* was deceiued; who maruelling at the speedy recovery of *Auristela*, but ignorant what *Polycarpus* went about, sought meanes to depart from his dominions, because the more hee deferred his going thence, the more in his iudgement hee prolonged his desire.

Maurice, willing to returne into his country, had recourse to his Art, and found that great difficulties hindered

Ricla and *Constance*, and shortly after entred *Maurice*, *Ladislau*, and *Transilla*, who were all desirous to see and speak with *Anriscela*, and to know to what estate her infirmity was reduced, whereby all of them were participating of her sicknesse. *Synforosa* departed from the company with more ioy, and more deceiued then when shee came in: for louers belieue with incredible facility, the very shadowes of promises that concerne their pleasure.

Old *Maurice*, after the ordinary demands & answers accustomed in such visitations, said thus:

If poore people, though beggers, cannot beare vvith patience to see themselves absent and banished from their country, where they haue left nothing but seats of turfs to rest vpon; what grieffe should others feele which haue left in their houses all the wealth which they could promise vnto themselves by fortune? I say this, Madam, because mine age, which with vrgent and hastie steppes approacheth to the end of my course, makes mee desire to see my selfe againe in my country, where my frends, kinsfolkes and children may close mine eye-lids, and giue me their last farewell. We shall attaine to this grace if it please God, because wee are all strangers and farre off, and all of vs (I beleue) haue in our lands that which wee shall not finde in strange countries. If you, Madam, will vrge our departure, or at least shall thinke good that wee doe procure it, you shall make vs all infinitely behoulding to you; although it be impossible for vs to forsake you: for your noble condition, your exquisite beauty, and your admirable discretion is the load-stone of our wills. Yea verely, said olde *Anthony*, at the least, of mine, my vvife and children: so that I would sooner leaue my life then her company, if she thinke no scorne of ours.

I thanke you Gentlemen, said *Anriscela*, for your good will you tellise towards me: and though it be not in my power to answer, as I ought, yet I will bring to passe that the Prince *Arnaldo*, and my brother *Periander* shall
endea-

endeuour to effect it without that my debility, which God be praised is now past, shall hinder or delay our departure. But in expectation of this happy houre, cheere vp your harts, let not melancholy beare sway, nor thinke vpon any future dangers: for the heauen which hath deliuered vs from those we haue passed, will stop others from comming vpon vs; and by restoring vs in safety to our houses, will make vs know, that mishaps, which haue not strength to end our liues, haue not power to finish our patience. All of them wondred at *Auristela's* answer, for that therein she made manifest her pittifull heart, and admirable wisdom.

At that instant King *Polycarpus* entred, who was exceedingly ioyfull, because hee had known by *Synforosa* the promises made as touching the accomplishment of his desires. Whether they were lasciuious or chaste, I know not: for olde folkes couer their amorous lusts vnder the cloake of hypocrisie, and their hypocrisie vnder the vaile of marriage. With the King, *Arnaldo* and *Periander* came in: and the King beeing merry with *Auristela* for her health recovered, commanded that this night, in thankfulness for the fauour heauen had bestowed vpon them, in the making of *Auristela* whole, they should light torches throughout the City, and that a publike feast and reioycing should bee made of eight dayes continuance. Thankes were given him by *Periander*, as the brother of *Auristela*; and by *Arnaldo*, as a louer that intended to marry her. *Polycarpus* inwardly reioyced, in consideration how pleasantly *Arnaldo* was deceiued; who maruelling at the speedy recouery of *Auristela*, but ignorant what *Polycarpus* went about, sought meanes to depart from his dominions, because the more hee deferred his going thence, the more in his iudgement hee prolonged his desire.

Maurice, willing to returne into his country, had recourse to his Art, and found that great difficulties hindered

dered their departure. Hee conferred with *Arnaldo* and *Periander*, who before knew the intentions of *Synforosa* and *Polycarpus*; which put them into great care, because they knew, when amorous desires get full possession of great personages, there is no difficultie that can hinder them to satisfie the same, without beeing stayed by any respect, promises, or obligations. They three agreed vpon this resolution; that *Matrice* amongst many shippes that were in the Hauen, should finde out one which might secretly carry them into England: For they wanted nothing to get aboard; and in the meane time they would not make any shew, as though they vnderstood any thing of *Polycarpus* his drifts. All this was imparted to *Auristela*, who approued their deuice, entring into new cares, to looke vvell to her owne safety; and the preferuation of them all.

CHAP. VIII.

Clodio giueth his letter to Auristela: the Barbarian Anthony killeth him by mischance.

THE history saith, that the pride, or rather the impudence of *Clodio* came to this issue, that hee had the boldnesse to deliuer the paper which he had vvritten, into *Auristelas* hands; making her belieue that it was verses of deuotion worthy to bee read and esteemed. *Auristela* opened the paper; and her curiosity so much preuailed ouer her, that notwithstanding despite and wrath, she read it to the end: and folding it vp againe, her eyes fixed on *Clodio*, all on fire, not with an amorous brightnesse as they were wont to be, but with a violent choler, she thus spake vnto him. Be gone, shamelesse fellow, get thee out of my sight: and if I knew that thy rashnesse proceeded from want of consideration in mee, vvhich incited thee

to this boldnesse, I would chastise in my selfe, thy folly. If any were much astonished, it was *Clodio*, who would willingly neuer haue had knowledge how to vrike: a thousand feares did so quickly beset his minde, that they gaue him no longer time to liue, then during the time that *Arnaldo* or *Periander* should be vnacquainted with this fault: and without replying a word, hee held downe his eyes, turned his back, and left *Auristela* alone; whose phantasie was possessed, not with a vaine feare, but grounded vpon reason, least *Clodio* through despaire might deuise against her some treason, making vse of *Polixenus* his inuentions, if perhaps hee had any knowledge thereof: wherefore shee resolved to giue notice heereof to *Periander* and *Arnaldo*.

At this time it happened that the young *Anthony* being alone in his chamber, there came in a woman about the age of forty yeares, but concealed ten thereof by her gallant and comely behauiour: her attire was not after the manner of this country, but of the Spanish fashion. And though *Anthony* was vnacquainted with fashions, but such as he had seene in the Barbarian land where he was borne, yet he knew she was not of this Ile. Hee courteously rose vp to receiue her, not being so barbarous as he was well brought vp; and then both of them sitting downe one by another, after for a time shee had earnestly looked on *Anthons* face, she said thus vnto him:

This my comming, yong man, will seeme vnto you a nouelty, for that you haue not beene accustomed to bee visited by women, hauing beene bredde as I haue vnderstood, in the Barbarian Ile; not onely among barbarous people, but besides among the steepe downe-falls and rockes: from whence, if as you haue drawn your comeliness and beauty, you haue also receiued hardnesse in your heart, I greatly feare that the mildenesse of mine shall not much profit me. Giue care vnto mee, bee not troubled, neyther turne thy selfe away; for it is no mon-
ster

fter that speaketh vnto thee, neyther is heere any person which will speake or aduise thee any thing beyond the limits of humanity and nature.

Consider, I speake vnto thee in Spanish, which language thou knowest: and this conformity is wont to beget affection amongst those that know not one another. My name is *Zenocia*, a Spanish woman by birth, for I was borne and brought vp in Alhama, a City of the Realme of Grenada. My name is knowne throughout all Spaine, and in many other places besides; for my knowledge permitteth not my name to bee hidden. Making then my selfe famous by mine actions; I vvent out of my country about foure yeares agoe, flying those maliues that keepe the Catholique flocke of this kingdome: My auncestors were Agarenes, my studies those of *Zoroastres* wherein I am excellent. Behold this sunne which now shines vpon vs: if in triall of my cunning you will haue me take away his beames and couer him with clouds, do but command mee, and I vwill make the darke night immediately follow this brightnesse: or if you desire to see the earth to shake, the sea to be altered, the windes fight, and mountaines meete, or other more dreadfull signes, which may represent vnto vs the confusion of the first *Chaos*, no more but speake the word, and you shall be satisfied, and I beleued. You shall also vnderstand, that in the City of *Alhama* there is alwaies a vvoman of my name who is inheritor of this Science, which teacheth vs not to be Sorcerers, as some call vs, but Enchanteresses, or Magicians, which names more aptly agree vnto vs. Those who are Sorcerers neuer performe any act whereby another may be profited, they practise their mockeries by things appearing ridiculous, as bitten beanes, pointles needles, headlesse pinnes, haire cut off in the new or vvane of the moone, vling characters which they vnderstand not. And if they sometimes attain their purposes, it is not by vertue of their plaine meaning, but because God suffereth the

the Diuell to deceiue them, to their greater condemnation. But wee which carry the name of Enchantresses and Magicians, are of an higher flight: we deale with the starres, contemplate the motions of the heauens, know the vertue of hearbs, plants, stones, metals, and words: and ioyning things actiue with passiue, it seemes wee worke myracles, which brings the world into admiration; from whence ariseth our good or bad renown: which is good, if by our knowledge wee doe well; and bad, if therewith wee doe wickedly. But because it seemes that nature enclineth vs rather to euill then good, we cannot so well gouerne our desires, but they will goe astray, and giue ouer themselves vnto euill. For who can take away the desire of reuenge from the heart of a man who is wronged and enflamed with choler? Who can hinder a despised loue to make himselfe beloued of her that scorneth him, if he can? Albeit to change the wills, and draw them from the things, as it should be to goe against free-will, so there is no science or vertue of herbes able to effect it.

At all these words vttered by the Spaniard *Zenocia*, *Anthony* beheld her with admiration, with a great desire to know what should be the issue of such a long discourse: which *Zenocia* prosecuted in this manner;

I tell you in conclusion, discreet Barbarian, that the persecution of those whom in Spain they call Inquisitors, haied me from my country; for when one goeth out by force, is rather a plucking thence, then a going out. I came into this Ile by strange windings, and infinite perils, looking alwaies if any followed me, thinking those dogs bit me by the gown, whom I feare euen vntill this present. I made my selfe knowne to the King that was predecessor to *Poliscarpus*: I wrought certaine maruells wherewith I astonished the people: I endeouored to make sale of my science; and therein I haue so well profited, that I haue gotten together aboute thirty thousand crowns of gold:

L

I being

I being wholly bent vnto this gaine, haue liued chastely without seeking after any delights, which I neuer would haue desired, if my good or euill fortune had not made you come into this country: for it is in your hands to giue me what destiny you please. If I seeme vnto you to bee hard fauoured, I will bring to passe that you shall iudge me faire: if thirty thousand crownes vvhich I offer seeme vnto you but a trifle, augment your desire, enlarge your couetousnesse, and begin to reckon at this present how much wealth may content you. For your seruice I will draw out the pearles that are inclosed in the shellfishes of the sea, I vwill bring to your hands the birds which part the ayre: I will make the plants of the earth to offer you their fruits: and I will pull out by force, all the most precious things that are shut vp in the botomes of the gulfes; I will make thee alwaies inuincible, milde in peace, and feared in warre. To conclude, I will amend thy fortune in such sort, that thou shalt bee alwaies enuid, and neuer be enuious: and in recompence of so many good things as I haue told thee, I require not that thou shouldst be my husband, but onely to receiue me for thy slaue; for in being thy slaue, there is no neede thou shouldst beare towards me the like affection as thou wouldst if I were thy vvife: and so I be thine, in what fashion soeuer it be, I shall liue contented.

Beginne then, braue *Anthony*, to shew thy selfe wise, in not shewing thy selfe vnthankfull. Thou shalt manifest thy selfe prudent, if before thou satisfie my desires, thou vvouldest see some experiment of mine actions. And in token thou vvilt so doe, reioyce my soule by some demonstration of thine affection, in permitting mee to touch thy valiant hand: and vvith these words shee rose vp to embrace him.

Which *Anthony* perceiuing, as though he had bin the coyest maide in the world, and more saluage then the very Barbarians amongst whom he was nourished, hee set-
led

led himfelfe to defence againſt this amorous woman, as againſt an enemy: and running to his boaw, which was alwaies neere him, if it hung not at his backe, hee put therein an arrow, and ſhot againſt the Magician about the diſtance of twenty pafes. The amorous *Zenocia*, fearing the threatning demeanor of this young Barbarian, turned her body, and let the ſhaft paſſe by: vvhereunto the vvnhappy *Clodio* comming into the chamber at the ſame inſtant, ſerued as a marke. It pearced his mouth and tongue, and made him leaue his railing and life in a perpetuall ſilence, a worthy puniſhment of his faults.

Zenocia turned her head, ſaw the deadly blowe which the arrow had made, feared the ſecond: and without making uſe of the wonders of her Art, full of confuſion and ſhame, ſtumbling here, and falling there, at laſt ſhe went out of the chamber with an intention to be reuenged of this vnciuill and cruell Barbarian.

CHAP. IX.

Old Anthonies reproofe to his ſonne, and of the Inchantment which Zenocia practiſed to make young Anthony ſicke.

A*Nthony* vvvas not well pleaſed at the blowe vvwhich he had giuen: and though he had ſhot better then hee was aware of, yet becauſe hee knew not the faults of *Clodio*, and hauing ſeene that of *Zenocia*, hee would gladly haue beene a better archer. He came to *Clodio* to ſee if any life remained in him: and finding him ſtarke dead, hee perceiued his error, and knew that hee was in very deede a Barbarian. With that his father entred into the chamber: vvho ſeeing the bloud, and dead body of *Clodio*, knew by the arrow that the blowe had beene his ſonnes handy-

worke. Hee demanded of him if hee had done it: the other answered yea: and being desirous to know the cause it vvas inmediately related vnto him. O thou barbarous fellow, said his father, (being full of astonishment and anger both at once) ; If thou killest those that loue thee, vvhat vvilt thou doe to thine enemies? If thou presume to be so chaste, defend thy chastity by sufferance, or by flight; for these perils are not repulsed by Armes nor Combats. It vvell appeareth that thou knowest not vvhat happened to the Hebrew young man, vvho left his garment in the hands of his lecherous mistresse. Wilt thou nor, thou vnskilfull youth, leaue off this euill strappen skin vvwhich couers thee; nor this boaw vvherewithall thou presumest to vanquish euen valor it selfe? Thou shouldst not arme thy selfe against the kindnesse of a vvoman already yeilded, vvho in that estate vvill goe through all inconueniences vvwhich may crosse her desires. If thou goe further in thy liues course in this kinde of demeanor; before thou die, thou vvilt for iust cause be esteemed barbarous of all those that know thee. I will not say that thou shouldst in any respect offend God, but that thou shouldst reprocue and not punish those that vvould disturbe thy chaste thoughts. And prepare thy selfe to receiue more then one battell: for thy youthfull yeares, and thy strong liuelinesse threaten thee many. Thinke not alwaies to bee sought vnto; for thou shalt sometimes be a suiter, & perhaps dye vvith thy designes, before thou shalt euer attaine thereunto.

Anthony heard his Fathers vvords, vvith eyes looking downward: and after by his silence he had made euident how he repented, and vvaz ashamed of his Barbarisme, he thus answered him:

Sir, take no thought for that vvwhich I haue done; my repentance is sufficient, and from henceforth I vvill strue to amend in such sort, that I will neuer shew my selfe barbarously cruell, nor pleasantly lasciuious. Let vs take order

der to bury *Clodio*, and make him the most conuenient satisfaction that vve may afford him.

The report of *Clodio* his death, by this time was noyed throughout the Palace, but not the cause: for the amorous *Zenocia*, vvvhich had published the one, concealed the other; onely saying that this young Barbarian had killed him, without knowing a cause why. This newes came to *Auristela*'s hearing, vvho had as yet in her hands the letter of *Clodio*, vvith purpose to shew the same to *Periander*, or the Prince of Denmarke, to the end they might punish his rashnesse. But seeing that the heauens had already preuented her, she tore the paper; and by a consideration both wise and Christianlike, vvould not bring to light the faults of the dead. And although *Policarpus* vvvas troubled at this accident, holding himselfe injured, that any should auenge their vvrrongs in his house, yet he would not enter into examination of the fact, but referred the same to the Prince of Denmarke; vvho at the intreaty of *Auristela* and *Transilla*, pardoned the young *Anthony*, and vvithout taking notice that *Clodio* vvvas murdered, caused him to be buried; beleeuing that hee had beene slaine by *Anthony* against his vvill, as he told him, who made no mention of *Zenocia*'s thoughts, for feare lest he should be thought an absolute Barbarian.

The rumor once ouer-past, they buried *Clodio*: *Auristela* was reuenged, if in her noble minde any desire of reuenge remained, as well as in the heart of *Zenocia*, vvho as the saying is, drunke vp the windes in studying how she might cry quittance with the young Barbarian; who two daies after felt himselfe sicke, and fell on his bed with so great weakenesse, that the Physicians before they could know his disease, despaired of his life. His mother melted into teares, whom the Father could not comfort, nor *Auristela* recreate. *Maurice*, *Ladislas*, and *Transilla* felt the like griefe. Vpon sight whereof, *Policarpus* had recourse to *Zenocia* his counsellor, praying her to find out

some remedy for *Antonies* infirmity, which the Physicians could not discover, by reason they were ignorant of the cause. Shee put him in good hope, assuring him that he should not dye, but his recovery must bee deferred for a while; which was receiued by *Poliscarpus* as an oracle.

Synfrosa took no great care for these euent; perceiuing that by meanes thereof the departure of *Periander* was delaied, in whose sight consisted the mitigation of all her paines. For although shee desired to see him depart, because he could not return before he went thence; yet her contentment in seeing him was so great, that by her good wil he should neuer haue gone from that country.

Now it fell out one day, that *Poliscarpus* with his two daughters, *Arnaldo*, *Periander*, *Anriscela*, *Maurice*, *Ladillas*, *Transilla*, and *Rutilio*, (who since hee had hatched the chicken which he should haue sent vnto *Poliscarpa*, though it were defaced, was wholly peniue, as guilty persons thinke all them that beholde them, knowe their faults) All these I say came together into sicke *Antonies* chamber; visiting him at the entreaty of *Anriscela*, vvhoe esteemed and loued also both him and his parents, being thereunto obliged by the good office which the young Barbarian had done, when he drew them out of the fire of the Ile, conducting them to his fathers caue: besides which as hearts and amities are combined through common aduentures; those which she had passed in the company of *Ricla* and *Constance*, and the two *Antonies*, were so great, that not onely she loued them by election, but also by bond and destiny.

Being then all together, as hath beene said, *Synfrosa* intreated *Periander* to declare vnto them some aduentures of his life; & principally, from whence he came the first time that he arrived in this Ile, where he won the prizes of the games that were made on that day whē the memory of the King, her fathers election, was solemnized.

Where-

Whereunto *Periander*, answering that he was contented, (to the great pleasure of them all, who desired to knowe the history of his fortune, and particularly of *Arnaldo*, who by this meanes thought to discouer somewhat of the birth and estate of *Auristela*) beganne in this manner.

CHAP. X.

Periander declareth the successe of his voiage.

THe beginning of my story (seeing you will needs haue me to declare it vnto you) shall then be: When my sister and I with her nource, embarked in a shippe whose maister was a notable pirate, though he seemed a merchant; wee sailed by the shore of a certaine Ile, to which we were so nigh, that we knew not only the trees, but the difference betwixt them. My sister, weary of her trauels by sea, desirous to refresh herselfe a little vpon the land, praied the captaine to suffer her to goe ashore. And as her praiers haue the force of a commandement, the captaine gaue consent, and caused vs to be landed in the small ships boat, with one mariner, my sister, *Clelia* her nource, and my selfe. Approaching to the shore, the mariner sawe a small riuer, which by a narrow mouth gaue tribute to the sea. A great quantitie of greene trees thicke couered with leaues, whereto the transparent waters serued as looking-glasses, gaue a shade on euerside. We praied the mariner to enter into this riuer, in regard the pleasantnesse thereof thereunto allured vs: which he also did; carrying vs vp against the streame. But hauing lost sight of the shippe, hee left his oares, and slaying the boat, spake to vs in this manner:

Bethinke your selues of the meanes to finish your voiage, and make accompt that this little boat which now

carrieth you, is your shippe : for you can no more returne to that which staies for you at the sea, if this Gentlewoman will not lose her honour, and you that call your selfe her brother, your life. In the end he tolde me that the captaine, of the ship would dishonour my sister, and kill me, that we should prouide for our remedy, and that he would follow vs into all places, and accompanie vs in all accidents. If wee were troubled at these newes, let him iudge who is accustomed to receiue mis-happes from the good which he hopeth. I gaue him thanks for his aduice ; offering to recompence him when we should be in better estate. Yea, said *Clelia*, very well : for I beare with me the iewels of my mistresse. And we foure consulting what wee were best to doe, I aduised the mariner that we should enter farther vp the riuer, and we should finde some place of security, if happely those of the ship should come to seek vs out. They will neuer come, said he : for there are no people in all these Iles, but thinke all those that anchor in these roads are pirates ; and seeing the shippes, they are all in armes to defend themselves, whereby vnlesse they set vpon them in the night, the pirates gaine little at their hands. I thought his counsell good : he took one oare, and I another to ease his paines, and werowed against the streame of the riuer. Hauing in this sort rowed about two miles, we heard a sound made by diuers instruments : and euen as soone wee discerned as it were a Forrest of mouing trees, which crosfed the riuer from one side to the other. But coming neere, we knew that that which seemed a Forrest of trees, vvas boats couered with boughes : and that the sound which we had heard, proceeded from instruments therein played vpon. Hardly had wee descried them, but they came vnto vs, enuironing our boats on all parts. My sister rising vp on her feet, beheld them ; and vnlookt for, shewed them such a diuine resemblance, that, as we vnderstood afterward, they tooke her for a goddesse, and cried out amongst

mongst themselves (as our mariner, which vnderstood them, informed vs) Who is this heere ? what deitie is now come to visit vs, & to reioyce with *Carino* the fisherman, and the vnmatchable *Seluiana* for their happy marriage ? In saying this, they tooke our boat, and set vs a land not farre from the place where wee met them. Wee had no-sooner set foot on the banke, but a troope of fishermen came about vs ; and one of them after another, full of reuerence and admiration, came neere to kisse the skirt of *Auristela's* gowne : who, notwithstanding the feare afflicting her vpon the newes giuen vnto vs by the mariner, shewed so faire, that I excuse their errour, vvho at that time receiued her as a thing diuine. By the riuers side a little apart we saw a marriage-bed vpholden vvith great postes of firre, couered with greene hearbs, and intermeddled with many kindes of sweet flowers, vvwhich serued for tapestrie to the earth. We saw also two young men, and two young women rise from a certaine seat, one of them extreemely faire, and the other very hard fauoured : as also the two young men, one was farre more courteous and pleasing then the other, and all foure were on their knees before *Auristela*. He, whom we said to be the most gentle, spake vnto her in this sort ;

O thou, whosoever thou art (which canst be none other then celestiall) my brother and I thank thee asmuch as we can possible for the fauour which thou doest vs in honoring our poore, but hereafter rich, weddings. Come faire Nymph : and if instead of the crystall palaces which thou leauelt in the deepe sea, thou findest in our habitations the wals of Oziers, and the rooves of shels, at the least thou shalt finde for thy seruice desires of gold, and good wills of pearles. And I make this comparison which seemeth improper, because I finde nothing better then gold, nor fairer then pearles.

Auristela bowed herselfe to embrace them ; confirming by her graue curtisie, and by her beautie, the reue-

reuerent opinion they had conceiued of her.

The fisherman lesse gallantly disposed, went aside to giue order that the rest of the company with their voices should exalt the praises of this new stranger, and that all the instruments should play in token of reioycing. The two women, as well the faire as the hard fauoured, kissed the hands of *Auristela*, who louingly embraced them with her wonted curtesie. The mariner, very well pleased with this good successe, gaue notice to the fishermen of the shippe which remained at the sea, saying, that those that were aboard the same were pirates, whose coming into that place he much feared, for the loue of this Gentlewoman who was of a great house, and a Kings daughter. For the better to encline their courages to her defence, he thought it necessarie to giue this testimony of my sister. They scarcely had heard this, but they left their instruments of reioycing, and betook themselves to such as are for warfare, sounding the alarme euery where along all the coasts thereabouts. In the meane while night came, wee withdrew our selues into the bridegroomes lodging: they placed sentinels euen to the riuers mouth: the engines for taking fish were baited: the nets laid: & the hookes fitted; all with an intention to welcome and make good cheare to their new guests. And the more to honour them, the two bridegroomes lay not this night with their wiues; leauing their lodging for *Auristela* & *Clelia*: and I remained abroad with them, their friends, and the mariner, to keepe watch and ward. And because the skie was cleare, in that the moone increased, and the earth was warm by fires of brakes kindled, vpon this new time of reioycing; it was thought good we should sup abroad in the open field, and the women vnder couert. This was effected with such abundance of viands, that it seemed the sea and land shroue which should haue the preheminence about other: one, in offering diuers kinds of meats; and the other, sundry sorts of fishes. When supper

per was ended, *Carino* tooke mee by the hand, and vvalking with me by the riuers side, after hee had made mee knowe by outward appearances that some great passion oppressed his soule, with sighes hee spake vnto mee these like words:

Because I account miraculous your comming hither in such a time, and vpon such an occasion, that thereby you haue deferred my mariage, I iudge assuredly, that my euil may be redressed by your counsell. Wherefore though you might hold mee a foole of bad iudgement and worse taste, yet I would haue you knowe, that of these two women whom you haue seen, the one foule, the other faire, destiny would so appoint, that the faire, called *Seluyana*, was my spouse: Neuerthelesse, I know not what to say, nor what excuse to make in mine error. I adore *Leoncias*, which is shee that is hard fauoured, neyther is it in my power to doe otherwise. Heerewithall I will tell you a truth, which beguiles mee not in beleeuing it: and this is, That to the eyes of my soule, for the vertues which I discerne in *Leoncias*, shee is the fairest woman in the world. Herein also is a further matter, that *Solerzio* which is the name of the other bridegroom, dyeth for loue of *Seluyana*. So that the wills of vs foure are bartred, because we would obey our Parents, who haue contriued these marriages betweene them. Neyther can I conceiue in what respect reason can agree, that a man for anothers pleasure, and not his owne, should cast on his shoulders a burthen that must endure all his life time. This euening we should haue consented to the thraldome of our wils, if your comming, not of purpose, but by the ordinance of heauen, as I beleue, had not hindred it: so that yet there remaineth some time for vs to amend our fortune. And for this cause I demand your aduice, because as a stranger, hauing neyther interest nor faction with any, you may better giue it then any other. And if I can discouer no path which may leade me to my remedy, I am
resolved

resolved to depart from these coasts, and neuer bee seene here as long as I liue, though all my kinred, and all my friends should die. I gaue an attentiu eare to this fisherman, and all on the sodaine his redresse came to my memory, and these words to my tongue; My friend, there is no iust ground why you should absent your selfe: at the least you ought not to attempt it before I haue conferred with my sister; who is the Gentlewoman that you haue seene. She is so wise, that it seemeth her vnderstanding is no lesse diuine then her beautie.

Herewith wee returned to the lodging: I declared to my sister what the fisherman had tolde me: & she found meanes by her discretion, to verefie my words, and giue contentment vnto them all in this manner. Shee vvithdrew *Leoncia* and *Seluyana* aside, vsing these speeches vnto them:

Knowe, my friends, (for I verely esteeme you such) that with the iudgement which God hath giuen me, hee hath accompanied the same with so cleare an vnderstanding of the minde, that, seeing ones face, I can read in his soule, and diuine his thoughts. And to approoue this truth by the witnesse of your selues, thou *Leoncia* dyest for *Carino*, and thou *Seluyana* for *Solerchio*. Shamefastnes maketh you speechlesse: but your silence shall be broken by my tongue, and your wils shall be made equall by my counsell. Let me contriue the businesse; for either I shal want discretion, or you shall haue an happy end in your desires. They, without answering one word, saue onely by kissing her hands a thousand times, and straightly embracing her, confirmed, that, what she had spoken of their affections, was the truth.

The night passed, and the day came, whose morning was ful of ioy: for the fishermens boats appeared in view, couered with new boughes, the instruments plaid their good morrow, the ioyful shouts were heard euery where. At the noyse whereot, those that should be wedded went

to take their places on the marriage-bed where they were the day precedent. *Seluyana* and *Leoncia* apparelled themselves with new gownes: my sister (as before) had a crosse of Diamonds at her necke, and two pearles at her eares of so great price, that vntill that present no person could bee found which could value them according to the worth. Shee held *Seluyana* and *Leoncia* by their hands; and placing her selfe on the theater where the marriage-bed was, she made *Carino* and *Solercio* to bee called, and come vp after her. *Carino* came neere with trembling and amazednes; as not knowing what shee had contriued: and the Priest was now ready to ioyne their hands that should be wedded, and to accomplish the ceremonies vsed in the church. My sister made a signe that she might be heard speake. Immediately they were all silent, & shee gaue the companie to vnderstand that by the will of heauen, and the proper agreement of those that were now to be married, as she saw by the chearefulnes of their faces, *Leoncia* should be married with *Carino*; and *Seluyana* with *Solercio*. Which shee had no sooner spoken, but all foure beganne to imbrace her in confirmation of her words, which were approued by all their kinsfolkes, the parties espoused in such manner as shee had spoken, and their wedding solemnized to the contentment of euery one.

After dinner, came forth from amongst the rest which were on the riuer foure barges, faire and pleasant to see, for their paintings with sundry colours, and the flagges and streamers where with they were decked; hauing ech of them six oares of a side, whose twelue rowers were attired in fine white linnen, of the same fashion that I came when I first entred into this Iland. I knew that these barges would runne for a prize, which might bee seene on the mast of another barge, distant from these foure about three horse-races. The prize was a greene taffata spangled with golde, so large that it kissed the waters. The noyse of the people, and sound of the instruments

was

was so great, that none could vnderstand the sea-captains commandement who came in another barge. The boats couered vvith boughes drew aside to the riuers bankes, leauing a void space in the midlt for the foure barges to runne vvithout hindering the sight of an infinite number of people; who, as vvell from the theater vvhere the nuptiall bed vvas, as from the two bankes of the riuier, vv ere diligent to beholde them.

The rowers had already taken holde of their oares, hauing their armes bare, on vvich might be seen great sinewes, and large veines; waiting for the token of parting, impatient of delay, and as fierce as an Irish dogge when his master vvill not let slip the leash that hee may take the game vvich he seeth before him. The signe in the end made, all the foure barges departed at the selfe same time, vvith such swiftnesse, that it seemed not they rowed by vvater, but that they flew in the aire.

One of them, that in the flag bore a *Cupid* blindfouled, got before the other, as it vv ere about thrice the length of the same barge. Which aduantage made those that looked on to hope that shee vvould first vvinne the prize: but the ends and euents of things doe not succeed according to mens imagination. For though it be a law amongst combatants, that none of the standers by should fauor the parties, either by vowes, or by any signe which may giue them the least aduice; Yet it is so, that those vvich vv ere on the brinke of the riuier, seeing the notable barge of *Cupid* to get before the others, beleeuing the same assured of the victory, cried out vvithout care or respect of any law; Loue is conquerour: Loue is inuincible. With vvich voice it seemed that those vvich rowed vnder his banner something fainted; vvhereas they should then haue rather enforced their courages.

The second barge, bearing *Interest* for her deuce, took holde of this occasion, and rowed vvith such strength, that she ioyned vvith the barge of Loue; and vvith the violence

olence wherewith it was driuen passed against it, breaking in pieces all her oares on the right side ; and so gotte before, beguiling all their hopes who before had lung, Loues victory; who now began to cry, *Interest* hath vanquished : *Interest* surpasseth Loue.

The third barge, whose ensigne was *Diligence*, in figure of a naked woman, seeing the happy successe of the *Interest*, encouraged the rowers, who inforced their strengths with such violence, that they were equally as forward as that of *Interest*: But by the bad gouernment of the steersman, they fell foule with the two former, that the oares of the one and the other became vnprofitable.

The fourth, which for her ensigne bore *Good Fortune*, seeing the encombrance of the others, when she was nie ready to faint and giue ouer the enterprize, turned something awry for feare to fall into the same accident ; and gliding by one side, got before the rest. The cries of such as beheld them were altered ; The *Fortune* carries away the prize before *Loue*, *Interest* and *Diligence* ; and not by her speed, but by her good lucke.

I pray you, Gentlemen, thinke it not amisse that I leaue her to her pleasure without disturbance, for feare she should trouble our rest if I should go forward in my tale ; and suffer me here to leaue the matter for this eue-ning, which I will finish if I can.

Periander spake this at such time as the sicke man fell into a terrible swooning : which when his father sawe, & shortly after ghesling from whence it might proceed, left them all, and went as appeared afterward to seek out the Magician *Zenobia*: with whom what successe he had, you shall see in another chapter.

CHAP. XI.

The recovery of young Anthony that was enchanted, and the practises of the witch Zenocia to hinder the departure of Auristela.

I Suppose, that if patience had not beene sustained by the pleasure which *Arnaldo* and *Policarpus* had in seeing *Auristela*, and by that which *Synforosa* tooke in beholding *Periander*, they had lost it by this time in hearing his discourse, which *Maurice* and *Ladislas* thought somewhat too long, and not much to the purpose; because to relate his owne misfortunes, hee had nothing to doe to recite other mens recreations. Neuerthelesse, herewithall they tooke pleasure in the comely manner of his relation. But the old *Anthony* who searched all abouts for *Zenocia*, hauing found her in the Kings chamber, came directly vnto her: & taking hold of her with his left hand, with the right he drew out a poignard, which he set to her throat, saying vnto her with a Spanish choler, and speech blinded with rashnesse; Witch, restore mee my sonne aliue, and in health, and that presently: if not, make your account that you are but dead. Looke if you hold his life in a packe of needles without eyes, or of pinnes without heads, or if you haue hid it within the hinges of a dore, or any where else; for none knowes but you. *Zenocia* fell in a transe vpon this word, seeing her selfe threatned with a naked poignard in the hands of an angry Spaniard: vnto whom with trembling shee promised to render vnto his young sonne *Anthony* both life and health; and besides had promised to giue vnto him the safety of all the world if hee had required it; so much her soule was possessed by feare. Wherefore shee said vnto him: Let mee alone, Spaniard, and put vp thy blade, for that which thy sonne keeps in his heart, hath brought

brought him to the estate wherein he is : for thou knowest that women beare mindes of reuenge; especially when they are carried vnto vengeance by being contemned. Maruell not if the hardnesse of his heart hath hardned mine : counsell him henceforth to be more curteous towards those that yeeld themselues vnto him , and goe in peace: for this next morning thy sonne shall be in good disposition. If hee be not, said *Anthony*, I will not faile to finde thee wheresoeuer thou hidest thy selfe; nor to be auenged of thee, whosoever be thy protector. Herewith he left her, and she remained so much engaged with feare, that forgetting the passed iniury, she drew out of the hingell of a doore the enchantments which shee had prepared, by little and little to consume the young Barbarians life, hauing bewitched her selfe by the charmes of his noble courage and beauty. The health of young *Anthony* reentred into his body as soone as the enchantments of *Zenobia* were out of the doore ; his face recouered the former colour; his eyes almost sunke into his head, their cheerefull quicknesse, and his decayed strength, the full and perfect vigour, to the generall contentment of all those which knew him. And one day his father and hee being alone, he said thus vnto him:

My sonne, aboue all things which I euer commanded thee, I desire that thou be carefull not to offend God at any time ; as thou mightest haue beene able to learne by the Christian Law which my fathers haue taught me, and wherein I haue laboured to instruct thee these fiftene yeeres past. This onely is true and sound, whereby those that enter into the kingdome of heauen are saued vntill this day, and so shall be in time to come. This holy law forbids vs to punish those that offend vs ; but commands vs to exhort them, that they may amend. For to punish, appertaines to the iudge : and liberty of reprehension, to all ; but yet with such conditions as I shall by and by tell thee. If any would allure thee to commit such offences

as might withdraw thee from the seruice of God, there is no need thou shouldst bend thy boaw, and pull forth thine arrowes, and much lesse to wound any by iniurious words: for in reiecting this counsell, and eschewing the occasion, thou shalt escape victorious from the skirmish, and assured not to fall again into the like distresse, wherein thou hast seene thy selfe. *Zenocia* had bewitched thee: and if God and my good diligence had not crossed it, in a few daies thou shouldst haue lost thy life. Follow mee, to the end we may reioyce our friends in seeing thee, and that we may know the aduentures of *Periander*, the story whereof shall be finished this night. *Anthony* promised his father, by Gods grace to put his precepts and counsels in practice, in despite of whatsoeuer perswasions any one should vse vnto him to the contrary.

During this time, *Zenocia*, full of shame and sorrow for the disdainfull pride of the sunne, and the cholericke rashnesse of the father, indeuoured to be auenged of the wrong which she thought eyther of them had done vnto her; and that by anothers hands, not her owne, without losing the presence of the young Barbarian. Being then resolued vpon this cogitation, she went to find the King *Policarpus*, vnto whom shee framed her speech in this manner:

My Lord, you know that since I came first into your seruice, & into your house, I haue alwaies with an incredible diligence procured, not to be separated from you. Also you know that in confidence of the truth which you haue knowne in me, you haue made mee as a treasurer of your secrets. Moreouer, as a wise man you further know, that in our particular affaires that concerne vs, the discourses which seeme to be the best, are oftentimes the worst, especially if I oue be intermedled therewithall: for this cause I would humbly pray you to pardon mee if I tell you, that in suffering *Arnaldo* freely to depart with his company out of your hauen, you seem to be voyd of your

your iudgement and accustomed foresight. Tell mee if you cannot haue the fruition of *Anrissela* now she is present, how shall you enioy her when shee shall bee absent? And how will she accomplishe her promise in repassing so many seas, and so many dangers, to returne hither, and be married to an old man? (for so you are in very deed, neither can we be deceiued in the truth of those things which we know in our selues) she hauing *Periander*, who it may well be is not her brother, and the young Prince of Denmarke, who loues her no lesse then to make her his wife. Suffer not (my Lord) that occasion, who now presents her selfe vnto you, turne the hinder part of her head vnto you, which is bald, in stead of the forepart which is hairy: you may finde cause both to stay them, and execute iustice all at once, in punishing the insolence and rashnes of this young Barbarian, one of their company, who was so bold as to kill in your house, him whom they called *Clodio*; and in so doing you shall get the renowne of a iust Prince, in whose heart not fauour, but iustice hath her abiding.

Policarpus attentiuely gaue eare to the malicious *Zenocia*, who by euery word she spake, draue so many nailes into his heart; & he thought already that he saw *Anrissela* in *Perianders* armes, not as her brother, but as her louer. Already he imagined he saw the crowne of the Realme of Denmarke on her head, and *Arnaldo* taking the fruit of his amorous designs. In the end, the rage of iealousie, so possessed his soule, that he was vpon the poynt to call for vengeance against those which had not any way offended him. But *Zenocia* seeing how well shee had disposed him to execute her counsellis, she willed him to deferre it vntill *Periander* had finished his history; from whence, peraduenture they might gather some knowledge of his estate: and that afterward at more leysure, and with more conueniencie, they would think vpon that which might be most fitting. *Policarpus* thanked her, and shee cruelly

amorous, studied with her selfe how to accomplish her owne and the Kings desire. In the meane while the night approached, they once more assembled together, and *Periander* did repeate certaine words before spoken, to fasten the thread of his discourse, which hee had left at the contention of the barges.

CHAP. XII.

Where Periander pursueth his history, and the ransishment of Auristela.

SHEE that harkened to *Periander* with most pleasure, was the faire *Synfrosia*, who hung on his words as those that were fastned to the chains of gold issuing from the tongue of *Hercules*; with such a grace did *Periander* recount his adventures, which he reioyned, as wee haue said, in following the same after this manner :

The good *Fortune* left *Loue*, *Interest*, and *Diligence*, making small vse of *Diligence*, nothing of *Interest*, and lesse then nothing of *Loue*, if there may any thing bee called lesse then nothing. The feast of the fishermen in their poeerty, exceeded in meriments the triumphes of the ancient Romanes : for sometimes the most contenting pleasures are found in homelines. But as the fortunes incident to men are tyed & hanging vpon fine threads, vvhich are easily broken ; so those of our fishermen were broken only to renew my mishaps. We spent this night in a small lland situate in the middelt of the riuier, beeing allured thereunto by the situation of a green pleasant meadow; the married men and their wiuues, making merry vwith their friends, and vsing all care possible to delight those who had so much benefited them by their vnitng in so happy and wished mariage : Wherefore they ordained that

that the feast should bee renewed and solemnized three daies more in the same Ile.

It was now spring-time at our being there: the beauty of the place, the brightnesse of the moone, the still noise of the waters, the fruits of the trees, and the sweet smell of flowers, each of these apart and all together inticed vs to resolute vpon our abode in this Ile so long as the feast should continue. But we had scarcely gone round about the Ile, when from a small wood there being, there issued out neere fiftie light-armed souldiers, as those that would robbe and runne away at once; who, like hunger-starued wolues rushing on the flockes of simple sheepe, carried away, if not in their mouthes, yet at least in their armes, my sister *Auristela*, *Clelia* her nurse, *Scluyana* and *Leonia*, as if their onely intent had beene to come for them: for they left behinde many other women whom nature had indued with singular beautie. And like as those that are surpris'd are ordinarily vanquished by the suddennesse of their surprisall, we were so troubled with this alarme so little expected, that vve were more busie to beholde these theeves then to assaile them. I, who was more moued by wrath then astonishment at this strange crosse, hastned after them; following with voice & looks, reuiling them in speech, though not able by my hands to doe them any outrage, vvhich I did to anger them, to the end they might bee moued to reuenge themselves vpon me: But they onely mindefull of their enterprise, or not vnderstanding my words, or hauing no care of reuenge, were quickly out of sight. The bridegroomes and I, with some of the principall fishermen, assembled our selues together, immediately consulting what vve were best to doe to repaire our losse and recouer our pledges. One of them said:

It is not possible but some pirates ship is at sea, and in such a place where they might land men, because it may be they knew of our assembly and festiuall. If it be so as

I thinke, the best remedy that wee haue is to send after them one of our boats, and offer them vvhatsoeuer ran- some they vwill haue for their bootie. I will be he, then said I, that shall vndertake this charge : for my sister is more deare to me then all things of the world. *Carino* and *Solerio* said as much ; they weeping openly , and I dying in secret.

VVhen wee tooke this resolution, the night beganne : yet vve entred into a boat, the bridegroomes and I with six rowers. But vvhen vvee came into the maine sea, it vvas darke night ; and not beeing able to discouer anie ship by reason of the darkenesse, wee resolved to stay till the next day, to see if vvee could descrie any one by the light. Fortune vvould that vvee discouered two, where- of one came from a roade of the land . and the other vvas making thitherwards. I knew that that vvhich left the land vvas the very same from vvhence vve issued, as well by the flagges, as because the sailes vv ere marked ouer- thwart vvith a red crosse : and those vvhich came to- vvards the land bore greene , and either of them vv ere *Rogers*. Thinking then that the same vvhich came from the Ile, vvas it vvhich vvee sought for, I caused a vvwhite flagge to be put on a poles end, comming to the shippes side to compound for the ranfome. The captaine came on the hatches : and as I vvas about to lift vp my voice to speake vnto him, I vvas interrupted by thundring of of a canon from the other ship vvhich desired that of the land. Answer vvas made thereunto at the same time ; & after that the two shippes beganne to play each at other vvith great ordinance, as if they had beene knowne to be mortall enemies. We turned our boat aside from the furie of the canon, behoulding the fight a far off ; and after the artillery had thundred well nigh an houre , the ships grappled: those vvhich came from sea, either more happie or more valiant, leapt into this shippe which came from land ; and in lesse while then could bee thought

thought, threw open all the hatches, and killed their enemies, not taking one of them to mercy.

They seeing themselves masters of the ship, beganne to make pillage of all that was any thing worth ; vvhich could bee no great matter, because from pirates is not much to bee gotten : although in my iudgement they wonne the richest bootie of the world, in finding there my sister, *Seluyana*, *Leoncia*, and *Clelia*, with whom they enriched their shippe ; thinking that in the beautie of *Auristela* they carried away an inestimable ranfome. I was willing to come neare with my boat to speake to the captaine who had got the victory : but as my fortune alwayes passeth with the windes, a strong gale came from the land which carried the shippe a great way off; in such sort that it was impossible for me to come nigh, or to offer him any ranfome for his prize.

Thus wee were inforced to returne without any hope to recouer our losses : for the shippe held none other course then the winde permitted. VVe could not marke the way they made, nor see any token whereby to know the thieues ; and, by knowledge of what countrey they were, to iudge what hope we had of our remedy. In the end the ship sailed by sea; and we sad and forlorne, entred againe into the riuer, where all the boats of the other fishermen abode our comming. I know not if I shall declare that which of necessitie I must say vnto you: A certaine courage then entred into my heart, which without change of my essence made me deeme my selfe somewhat more then a man. So standing vp on the boat, I made all the others to come about me, and spake to the fishermen these or the like words :

Euill fortune is neuer amended by slothe or idleneffe, and happie successe is neuer found in faint hearts. Euerie one is the crafts-man of his owne fortune, and there is no person but is capable to aduance the same to such feat as he listeth. Cowards, though they be born rich,

are alwaies poore, and the rest are beggers, I say this, my friends, to mooue you to better your estates, and make you giue ouer these poore nets and narrow boats that you haue, to seeke rich treasures, which are enclosed in a noble travell. I call his travell noble who is employed in haughtie enterprises. If the poore ditcher break the earth with the sweat of his face, and yet gaines not so much as will maintaine him a day; why should hee not handle the sword instead of the mattocke, and striue, together with riches, to winne a renowne which shall make him greater then others? As the war is a stepmother of cowards, she is also mother of such as are valiant, and the rewards thereby gotten are the greatest and most glorious that the world can afford. Vp then my friends and valiant youths, looke vpon the ship which carries away the deere pledges of your parents, and betake your selues to the other which by the ordinance of heauen they haue left vpon the shore. Let vs follow them and make our selues pirates; not thieues and couetous like them, but honest and vpriight men as indeed we are. VVe all vnderstand the art of sea-faring, we shall finde in the shippe visuall inough, and whatsoeuer is expedient for nauigation; because the conquerours did spoile them of nothing but the women. And if the wrong they haue done vs be great, the occasion offering it selfe to bee reuenged is yet greater. Let him then who hath a willing minde follow mee. I intreat you, and *Carino* and *Solercio* coniuire you: for I well knowe they will neuer forsake me in this worthy enterprife.

As soone as I had ended these words, a murmuring noise was heard throughout all the boats; proceeding from aduice taken among themselues what they had to doe: which being passed, one of them answered; Goe a ship-boord, noble guest, be our captaine and our guide, we will all follow thee.

This resolution so ready and vn hoped for, was to mee
an

an happy preface, and for feare that in prolonging to execute mine enterprize I might minister vnto them occasion to abate their courages, I went forward with my boat, which was followed immediately by forty others. I came to the ship to know it, I entred thereinto, looked & searched euery where what it had, what it wanted, and found whatsoeuer our desires could wish as necessary for the voyage. I commanded that none should return to land, for feare lest the lamentations of their wiues and children should interrupt the course of so braue a resolution. They all obeyed mee, and without any other leaue-taking, then in conceit, they departed from their parents, wiues, and children, without visiting them, which was a strange case: and that which needeth much courtesie of the hearers for beleefe, not one went ashore, nor provided any other clothes then those they wore when they came into the shippe. Where, without appointing each man to his seuerall office, they all serued for Pilots and Matiners, except my selfe, who by consent of them all was nominated their Captaine. I caused the shippe to be made cleane from the bloud and dead bodies which had beene slaine in the fight past. I ordained all the armour, as well defensiu as offensiu, to be sought out, which I diuided amongst them all, giuing vnto euery one such as I thought would fit them best. I reuiewed my prouision: and agreeable to the number of my men, I calt more or lesse how long time they might last vs. This done, with a seruent prayer to God, beseeching him well to direct our voyage. and fauour such an honourable attempt, I commanded them to hoyste the sailes which were tyed to the yards: and with no lesse ioy then courage, wee began to goe forward with full sailes by the same course which we thought the other ship kept.

Behold, my Lords, how I was first a fisherman, & with my sister, a broker of marriages, afterward robbed by the Pyrates, and then chosen captaine against them. For the

win-

windings of my fortune haue no poynt where to stay, nor any bounds to limit them.

This is enough, my friend *Periander*, said *Arnaldos*; for albeit you should not be weary to tell your mishaps, we are tyred in the hearing, to see them in such a number. I am, answered *Periander*, the onely *Rendemoni* where misfortunes haue their abode, and I beleue they finde no place but in my selfe: yet I esteeme them happy, for that I haue found againe my sister; for the euill which endeth without losse of life, ought not to be called euill. For my part then said *Tranfillsa*, this reason passeth mine intelligence: but I conceiue you should doe much amisse if you content not our desires, which wee haue to know the aduentures of your Nauigation; which, I suppose, are such as may afford matter to many tongues to relate them, and many pennes to write them. At night, Madamie, answered *Periander*, I will conclude my history if I can, which is but as yet begunne. And being all agreed to meet there the night following, *Periander* broke off his discourse.

CHAP. XIII.

Periander telleth of a notable accident happening vnto him vpon the sea.

THe health of young *Anthonie* returned vnto it's former strength, and therewithall the desires of *Zenocia* were ruined, and with those desires the feare of his absence: for amorous persons despairing of remedy, neuer can perswade themselves that hope is past, as long as they see present the cause of their passion. Wherefore procuring by all the inuentions her minde could imagine, that none of these strangers might depart from the City, shee againe counselled *Poliscarpus*, not to leaue unpunished the murder of the young and audacious Barbarian, saying:

ing: that although he inflicted not vpon him such paines as were answerable to his offence, but rather gaue place to that which fauour opposed against iustice, yet the least thing he could do, was to attache & chastise him, though it were but by threatenings. But *Policarpus* would not credit her in this point; replying that hee should wrong the authority of the Prince of Denmarke, and anger his deare *Auristela*, who loued *Anthony* as her brother. Besides, the blowe was given by accident & constraint, proceeding rather by misfortune, then any malice pretended: finally, there was none that complained, and that all those which knew *Lodico*, affirmed him to bee the greatest railer and slanderer in the world. How comes this to passe, replied *Zenocia*, that hauing the other day resolved and agreed to take him, and slay *Auristela* by his occasion, you are now so altered? They will be gone, shee will neuer come backe againe: then you will bewaile your perplexity, when tears shal nothing auaille, but to increase your euill, with longing and repentance that you haue not beleued me. The faults which louers commit in accomplishing their desires, merit not such a name: for it is not they, but Loue commanding their wills that committeth them. You are a King, my Lord, and the iniustices and cruelties of Kings, are christened by the title of severity. If you imprisn this young man, you shall giue place to iustice: and in deliuering him, to mercy: and in the one and the other, confirm the renowme you haue gotten to be a good Prince.

In this manner *Zenocia* counsailed *Policarpus*, who whether he were alone, or with company, went & came alwaies in this thought, without ability to resolute in what manner he might slay *Auristela*, without offending *Arnaldo*, whose power for good reason he feared. In the midst of these considerations, and those of *Synarosa* (who not being so subtil nor cruell as *Zenocia*, desired *Perianders* depart, that shee might begin to hope for his return)

returne) the time came when the same *Periander* should declare his history, which he prosecuted in this manner. My ship sailed swiftly on the water, as the windes pleased to carry her: none of vs hindred her way, but left it to fortunes arbitrement to direct our voyage; when from the top of the maine mast, we saw a Mariner fall, who before hee lighted on the hatches, was hanged by a rope which was fastened about his throat. I ranne with all the haste possible, cut the rope, and saved him from strangling: but hee aboade as one dead, and vvvas in a transe about two houres; at the end whereof, hee came to himselfe, and I asked him the cause of his despaire, whereunto he said thus:

I haue two children, the one three yeeres old, and the other foure, vvwhose poore mother is not past two and twenty, and their necessities are supplied by labour of these hands. Being now at this masts toppe, I turned mine eyes toward the place vvhere I left them, and haue seene them kneeling on the earth, holding vp their hands to heauen, praying for their father, and calling mee with mournfull and lamentable vvords. I haue seene also their mother weepe, calling mee the most cruell man liuing. This imagination hath so strongly possessed mee, that I am constrained to say, I haue seene so much: and now that I finde I am carried away in this shippe, and separated from them, not knowing vvhither vve go, together with small or no necessity that I had to come aboard; all these things haue so troubled my wits, that despaire put the rope in my hand, and I about my necke, to finish at once a world of so many paines.

This accident moued vnto pittie all those that heard him: and hauing comforted him with an vndoubted hope, that all should returne vvell contented, and rich; we appointed some to looke to him, lest hee should fordoe himselfe. And to the end others should not haue their conceits awakened hereby, with a desire to imitate him,

him. I told them that for any man to kill himselfe, vvas the greatest basenesse in the world: for a murtherer of himselfe vvitnesseth, that he hath no courage to suffer nor expect the euils which he feareth. And what greater euill can befall a man then death? Whilest vve are liuing, the hardest fortunes may bee bettered: but by despaire they are renewed, and become worse and worse. I speake this, my companions, to the end that the accident of this desperate fellow, astonish vs not in the beginning of our nauigation; for my heart telleth me that a thousand happy and fauorable aduentures are prepared for vs. The whole company by common voyce appointed one to speake for them all, who said thus:

Valiant Captaine, Things of much deliberation are found to haue many difficulties: and exploits attempted, partly must haue reference to Reason, & partly vnto Fortune. Ours cannot fall out amisse, you being our chiefe: and heereupon wee ground our good hopes, and the fauorable euents which you promise vs. Let our vviues abide with our children, let our fathers weepe, and let pouerty come vpon them all: heauen which feedeth the least wormes in the water, will haue care to nourish men vpon the land. Command what you please, appoint sentinells on the tops to see if they can descry any occasion whereby we may shew that we are not rash, but courageous. I thanked them for their good wills: and hauing sailed all that day, the next morning the sentinell cried from the maine toppe, *A saile, a saile*. They asked him what course it kept, and of what greatnesse it was. Hee answered, as big as ours, and that vve had it in the prow. Courage then my friends, said I, betake you to your weapons: and if they bee Pirates, shew your valour vvhich hath made you leaue your nets. I made them presently to put out as much saile as wee might beare: and two houres after, vve came vp to the shippe, vvhich we boured sodainly vwithout hailing them, and more then forty
of

of my souldiers leaped thereinto, vvhich found not any defence, nor any person on whom they might make their swords bloody; for that none vvere about saue Mariners and seruitures. And searching all abouts, they found in a Cabbin in two stockes of yron, one turned a little from the other, a handsome young man, and a woman more then meanely faire: and in another chamber they saw a venerable old man, laid vpon a rich bedde of such grauity, that his very looks made vs all to reuerence him. Hee stirred not from his bed, as being vnable so to doe; but railing himselfe a little, and lifting vp his head, he said thus vnto vs:

Put vp your swords gentlemen, for you shall not finde here against whom to employ them: and if necessity constrain you to seeke your good fortune by another mans cost, you are come to a place vvhere you may bee happy; not because you shall finde any riches in this ship, but because my selfe am here, who am *Leopoldus*, King of Danea. This name of a King bredde in me an extreame desire to know vvhat aduenture had brought him to these extremities, to be so alone, & without any defence. I drew neer vnto him, asking if what he spake were true: for though his graue countenance promised no lesse, yet the small preparations wherewith he sailed, made me call it into question. Command your people, answered the olde man, to be quiet, and giue eare a little while vnto mee, for in few words I will tell you great matters. My companions refrained, and they and I harkened attentiuely what he would say, and then he began in this sort:

The heauens made me King of Danea by inheritance from my fathers, like as they inherited it from their predecessors, and were neuer brought into the kingdome by tyranny, or any corruption of money. In my youth I married a woman answerable to mine estate, who dyed and left me no succession. The time passed away, and I contained my selfe many yeares within the limits of an honest

honest widower : but in the end through my fault (for none ought to accuse another of those faults which a mā committeth himselfe) I fell in loue with a Lady of Honor that serued my deceased wife, vvho at this day should haue beene Queene, if she had beene as shee ought, and should not haue beene made fast in the stockes, as you now haue seene. Shee then thinking it reasonable to value the young tresses of my seruant, aboue my vvwhite haire, became amorous of him; taking pleasure, not onely to robbe me of mine honour, but likewise to contriue meanes that I might lose my life, conspiring against my person with so strange and mischieuous inuentions, that vnlesse I had beene warned thereof in good time, my head had beene strooke from my shoulders, and hanged on a spirket in the winde, and they beene crowned King and Queene of my Realme. But God gaue mee grace to discover their drift, sufficiently afore-hand to preuent it : and when they knew that I was aduertised, they embarked one night in a small vessel which was ready for them, to auoyd the punishment of their crimes, and the fury of my wrath. I knew it, and flying along the sea shore vpon the wings of my choler, I perceiued that they had hoysed their sailes to the winde. I blinded with passion, and troubled with desire of reuenge, without making any wise discourse, or reflecting into my selfe, went aboard this shippe, and followed them, not with prouision and authority of a King, but with the hate of a particular enemy. At the end of tenne dayes, I found them in an Ile called the fiery Iland : and hauing apprehended them, and put them in the stockes, as you haue seene, I am carrying them into my kingdome, to make them serue for an example of lustice.

This is the very truth: the guilty persons are there, who shall witnesse as much in spite of their hearts. I am the King of Danea, and promise you an hundred thousand peeces of gold; not because I haue them now heere, but I will

will giue you my word to send them vnto you where you please. And for the greater assurance, take me among you into your shippe, and let the other goe with some of my men to fetch the ranfome, which shall be brought to such place as you vwill require.

My companions beheld one another, praying mee to answere for them all; though it were needlesse, because I might haue performed the same as their Captaine. Yet withall I would haue the aduice of *Cariao*, and *Solercio*, with some others of the chiefest, lest it should seeme I would abuse the authority which they had giuen mee: and I made the King this answer. My Lord, neyther necessity, nor desire of pillage hath moued vs to take weapon in hand, but contrarily wee seeke out the Pirates to punish them. And seeing you are so farre estranged from this kinde of people, not only your life is assured amidst our armor; but if need require, nothing shall hinder vs from employing them in your seruice: Albeit wee giue you hearty thanks for the rich ranfome which you promise; for being no prisoner, you are not bound to pay it. But in recompence that you get out of our hands more happily then you thought, wee beseech you to pardon these wretches that haue offended you; for the greatnesse of Kings shineth more in their mercy, then their iustice. *Leopoldus* would haue throwen himselfe at my feet, if his weakenesse, and my courtesie had not withstood it. I prayed him to giue me some powder and shot if hee had any, and to giue vs part of his victuals, which was presently effected. I counselled him also, that if hee would not pardon his two enemies, he should leaue them in my shippe, and I would put them in such a place where they should neuer hurt him: Which also he granted, saying, that the presence of him vvhich hath done the offence, reneweth the iniury vnto him that hath receiued it. I commanded my seruants also to returne vwith mee into our shippe, with the powder and victuals the King had giuen

given vs. And being about to take in the two prisoners already freed from the heauy stockes, a sodaine boysterous winde arose, vvhich separated both the ships, in such sort that they could no more come to each other. I took leaue of the King at my ships side, & he bade me farewell from his bedde: and so wee departed asunder, and I vvill now depart from you, for that a second exploit constraineth me at this present to take my rest.

CHAP. XIII.

Periander relateth how he found, amongst his Mariners, the King of Bitunias Neece, with other memorable things.

Periander did relate his peregrination in such a fashion, that all of them generally were delighted therewith, except *Maurice*, vvho vvhispering at his daughters eare, said thus vnto her: In mine opinion *Transilla*, *Periander* might haue made a discourse of his life in fewer vvords then he hath done; for that he should not haue dwelt so long in relating vnto vs each particular of the triumph of the barges, nor of the marriage of these fishermen: for the epilogues which are made for adorning histories, ought not to bee so large as the histories themselves. But I verely beleeeue that *Periander* had a vvill to shew vs the excellency of his wit, by the eloquence of his words. It should be so, answered *Transilla*; but vvhe ther he be copious or succinct, me thinkes hee performs all very well, and giueth pleasure to vs all.

The thoughts of *Policarpus* vvould not suffer him to bee much attentue to *Periander* his discourse: but *Synsrosa* was greatly delighted therein; hauing such an earnest desire to know the end, that shee entreated the company to meet together the next day, at which time *Periander* continued in this manner:

N

Con-

Consider, Gentlemen, my souldiers richer of renown then of gold, & my selfe in some suspicion, that my liberality was not much to their contentment: For as mens qualities are not alike, so I had sufficient cause to fear that they vould not bee well pleased at the liberty of *Leopoldus*, thinking it a matter of great difficulty to recompence a hundred thousand peeces of gold which hee had promised for his ranfome. This consideration moued me to say vnto them: Let none of you (my friends) be heauy for hauing lost the occasion to be made rich by the treasure which *Leopoldus* had offered vs: for I assure you that one ounce of good renowne is more worth then a pound of pearles: vvhich none can know but hee that hath begun to taste the glory which he hath of a good reputation. The poore man who is enriched with vertue, attaineth vnto this famous renowne: but contrarily the rich vvhoe is vicious cannot auoyd infamy. And liberality is one of the most excellent vertues wee can exercise, whereby to get and deserue a glorious renowne.

I had further continued, if a shippe which I discouered Northward, not farre from vs, had not made mee alter my discourse, by sounding the alarme. I had her in chase with all sailes bearing, and in short time came vp to her within Canon shot, causing a peece to be charged vvithout bullet, as a signe to strike saile as she did. I boured her, and saw one of the strangest sights that could be seene, and that was more then forty men hanged vpon the yards and tackling of the shippe. My souldiers leaped in vvithout any impeachment, and found all the hatches full of blood, and bodies halfe dead, halfe alieue, some hauing their heads parted in the midst, others their hands cut off, one spewing blood, another his soule: this fellow painefully sighing, and another crying. And this butchery seemed to haue beene done at dinner time; for that the meates did swimme in the blood, and their bleeding wounds as yet retained the sauer of the wine. They passed

passed through all this, treading on the wounded and dead persons, till they came to the castle at the poope; where they found twelue faire women, and before them all, one which seemed to be their commandresse, armed vvith a white corslet, so bright and polished, that it might haue serued for a looking-glasse: she had no vambrailles nor tailes, but onely a gorget vnder a head-peece, made of a serpents scales, couered with precious stones, yeelding diuers colours. She had a iauelin in her hand studded with gold nailes from the vpper to the nether end, and a short sword of bright Steele hanging at her side in a scarfe, in so comely a manner, and with so braue a shewe, that she alone was sufficient to slay the fury of my souldiers, who began to behold her with admiratiō I who looked vpon her frō my ship, went into hers to view her the better, finding her making an Oration in this manner. I well beleuee that we minister vnto you a cause of maruel; for this small number of women whom you see; is vnable to put you in feare. As for our selues, wee are lesse in dread of you, hauing reuenged the wrong vvich some were about to doe vs. But if you be bloudy minded, shed ours, take away our liues, and we will account them well bestowed, alwaies provided that you saue our honors. But to the end you may know whom you shall kill, vnderstand at once my name, & misfortunes. I am *Sulpicia*, niece of *Cratilius* King of Bituania. I being married with the great *Lampidio*, no lesse renowned for his birth, then rich in such goods as Nature and Fortune had bestowed vpon him; wee both went to see the King mine vnclē, with such assurance as one might take in the company of his seruants and subiects, who both by benefits and birth were obliged to serue vs. But wine and beauty, vvich are wont to make drunke the sobereſt mindes, defaced these obligations from their memory, imprinting in stead thereof, such lasciuious desires, that they conspired against our honor: and after they had tipled all the night,

began to execute their damnable intent by death of my husband. But as nothing is more naturall, then to defend the life; we armed our selues with their weapons, making our benefit of their drunkenesse, and small iudgement, wherewith they assaulted vs: & being succoured by foure seruants who abide in their faithfull duties, we were not onely protected, but reuenged in like manner, as well of those whom you see stretched along vpon the decke, as of them whom you view hanged on the yards. I haue riches which I can giue you, or to say better, you may take, not onely by force, but with our consent also: provided that you doe not dishonor vs; whereby you should lose your own, & get greater infamy then wealth. The words of *Sulpicia* had qualified me, though I had beene the greatest Pirate in the world. And then spake one of my souldiers: Let me be killed if we haue not heere once againe such a meeting as that of *Leopoldus*, with whom our Generall shewed a pattern of his courtesie: Sir, let *Sulpicia* goe free, for we desire none other thing, but the glory to haue vanquished our desires. I answered, that shee should doe so: and causing the dead bodies to bee taken away from the deck and yards, *Sulpicia* drew neere, full of admiration and astonishment, causing to bee brought after her foure chests, wherein were her iewels and money; which when shee had opened before mee, my fishermens eyes were strooken with such a flash, that it blinded in some of them their first purpose which they had to let her goe with her treasures: for there is great difference betweene giuing that which we haue in possession, and that vvhich wee hope to possesse. *Sulpicia* drew forth a rich collar of precious stones, and offered the same vnto mee, saying: Take this chaine, valiant Captaine, which I giue you, not for any other thing, but as a pledge of the good will wherewith I offer it. This is a poore vviddowes Present, vvhoe yester day was in the height of her good fortune, because shee was
in

in the power of her husband, and to day seeth her selfe subiect to the discretion of the souldiers who are about you, amongst whom you may diuide all this riches. To whom I thus answered:

The gifts of so great a Lady ought to be esteemed as fauours: And taking the collar, I said to my souldiers: This collar, my companions, is for mee, and nothing hinders me to dispose thereof as mine owne: yet I thinke it vnreasonable that so rich a booty should remaine to one alone. Let him keepe it that will, vntill such time as we haue found one that will buy it, and then we will diuide it amongst vs all. In the meane time, let not any one touch that which this Princeesse offereth vs, and this noble act shall exalt your renown vnto the skies. We would haue wished (said one of them) that by your counsell you had not preuented vs, to the end you might haue seene how gladly we conformance our wills vnto yours. Restore your selfe the collar to *Sulpicia*, to the intent shee may knowe, that the renowne which you promise vs cannot be compassed with a collar, nor limited by any bounds. I remained well content with the answer of my souldiers, and *Sulpicia* in much maruell that they had so little couetousnesse. Finally, she prayed me to leaue her 12. to serue her as her guard and mariners, vntill shee came to *Bithunia*; which I did: and in recompence shee furnished vs with good wines, and other victuals, whereof already we stood in want. The winde blew fauourably, as well for her voyage as for ours, which had no determinate place. We parted each from other; but first shee would know my name: which I told her, as also the names of *Carino*, & *Solerchio*. And she taking vs three by the hand, embraced the rest with her eyes, and shed teares, partly for ioy to see her selfe at liberty from those whom she accounted pirates, and partly for sorrow because shee had lost her husband. I had forgotten to tell you, that I rendered backe the collar to *Sulpicia*, which she, enforced by

my importunities, receiued; being in a manner ashamed that I did value the same so little as to restore it.

I asked counsell what course we should keepe: and it was concluded that we should follow the winde, because other ships on the sea sailed in that sort. At this time it was a cleere night without clouds: and sitting on the ships castle abathe, I called a mariner who serued vs as Pilote, and began to fixe mine eyes vpon the heauen. I will lay a wager, then said *Maurice* to *Tranfillsa*, that *Periander* will at this present make a description vnto vs of all the celestially spheres; as though it appertained to the purpose in these matters which he is to relate, to declare vnto vs the motions of heauen: and as touching my selfe, I would gladly he should make an end. For the desire I haue to be gone from hence, will not permit mee to hold him in talke, nor busie my selfe in search of the planets, or fixed starres, in regard that I know more my selfe then hee can tell me. Whilest *Maurice* spake this, *Periander* had a breathing time, and after began in this sort.

CHAP. XV.

Perianders pleasant dreame, which hee relateth as if it had beene true.

Silence and sleepe began to seize vpon my company, and I informed my selfe at his hands that was with me, in many matters necessary for the Art of Nauigation; when it began to raine in such sort, that it seemed whole cloudes of water were powred into the shippe. Heereat we were all troubled: and looking towards euery quarter, wee saw the heauen cleare, without token or appearance of any storme; which redoubled our astonishment and feare. Then he that was with me said: Without question

tion this raine proceedeth from certaine monstrous fishes called *Wreckers*; or *Phiseters*, which cast out this great plenty of water by certaine windowes which they haue about their eies: and if it be so, vve are in great danger to be cast away. We must shoot off al the great ordinance that they may be amazed at the noise.

At that instant I saw as it vvere the neck of an horrible serpent lift it selfe vp into the shippe, and snatch away a mariner hard by me, vvhich he swallowed into his belly vvithout chewing. The Pilot commanded they should shoot off, either vvith bullet or vvithout; because the noise, not the stroke, should vvarrant vs from this danger. Feare held the mariners clustred together vvith such confusion, that they durst not stand on their feet for fear of being haled away by these apparitions: yet some ran to the artillery, others to the pump to returne the water into the vvater. VVee spred all our sailes: and as though vve had fled from an armie, vve got farre from this neere danger, vvich vvvas the greatest that hitherto had befallen vs.

Towards the end of the day following, we found our selues hard by the shore of a certaine lland vnknowne to any of vs: where being desirous to refresh our selues, wee resolued to stay till the next morning; and without going farre from the land, we furled vp our sailes, let slippe our anchors, and laid to rest our tired and weary bodies, whereof sleep tooke a sweet and pleasant possession. In the end we all forooke the ship, and marched on the delightfull shore; the sand whereof (without any surmounting speech) was made of small graines of golde & fine pearles. And going further in, wee found meadows whose graspe was not greene like graspe, but as emralds; whose verdure was not maintained by fresh waters, but streames of liquid diamonds; which, crossing the meadows by many windings, resembled serpents of crystal. Shortly after we descried a forest of many different kinds

of trees. of such beautie that it astonished and reioyced our hearts. On one hung clusters of rubies that seemed to bee cherries, or cherries most like vnto rubies: on others hung apples, whereof some were of a rose colour, others like a topaze. Heere might pearles bee seene, smelling like amber, and colored like that which is in the heauen at sunne-setting. Briefly, all the fruits whereof wee had knowledge, were in their prime, without being hindered through the different seasons of the year: and whatsoeuer wee beheld pleased our five senses; the eyes with their beautie, the eares with the sweet noise of springs and riuers intermeddled with infinite notes of birds leaping from tree to tree, & from bough to bough; seeming to haue their freedome enthralled in this narrow roome, without any desire to recouer it: our smell, by the sweet sent of hearbs, flowers and fruits: the taste, by triall vve made of their pleasantnes: and our touching by handling them, for vvee imagined them pearles of Sur, and diamonds of India.

I am very sorry, said *Ladislaus* to *Maurice*, that *Clodio* is dead: for *Periander*, in these things vvhich he hath spoken at this present, had giuen him vvhereupon to set his vvits awork.

Be silent, said *Transilla*: for you also know not how to stop him, for he vvill make an end though you say vvhat you can.

This which I haue spoken, continued *Periander*, vntill now, is a matter of nothing: but that vvhich yet resereth vntolde, the vvirt of man is insufficient to vnderstand it, and curtesie vvill be vvanting to beleue it. Now turne your eies, and suppose you see issuing from the midst of a rocke (as vve saw, neither did our sight deceiue vs) a chariot. I cannot tell you of what stufte it vvvas made: the forme I can vvell describe, vvhich vvvas a great vessell broken by shipwracke, drawn by 12 great apes. Vpon the chariot vvvas a faire Lady crowned vvith baies beset vvith roses,

roses, and attired in a sumptuous gowne glistering vvith diuers colours: shee leaned on a blacke stasse, vvhereto vvvas fastened a table, vvherein vvvas vvritten this vvord, *Sensualitie*. Many faire vvomen came after her, holding sundry instruments in their hands, vvherewith they made a delectable musicke. My companions and I were astonished and immoueable, as if vvvee had beene images of stone. *Sensualitie* came vnto me and said; My enmity, yong man, shall cost thee, if not thy life, yet at least thy pleasure. Her company, as they passed by, plucked away seuen or eight of my mariners; and returning back, entred vvith their mistresse into the open place of the rocke. I vvvas turning my selfe towards those that vvvere next me, to demand vvhat they thought of this maruel: but I vvvas interrupted by another, namely, an harmony beyond comparifon more sweet then the former, made by a quire of damfels; in the midst of whom vvvas *Auristela*, leading *Chastitie* vvith one hand, and *Contiue* vvith the other: these maidens tolde me that they perpetually accompanied *Chastitie*, who vvvas there disguised vnder the figure of *Auristela*. The desire I had to cry out at the noueltie of so strange a maruell, awaked mee from sleepe: this faire vision vanished, and I found my selfe in my shippe vvith my companions, and not one of them wanting. You slept then, sir, said *Constance*. It is true, Gentlewoman, answered *Periander*, for all my good haps are in dreames.

Hee hath related it, said *Auristela*, in such a fashio, that he made me doubt vvwhether the matter vvvere true or fained. *Arnaldo* to all this did not speake a vvord; and considering the demonstrations vvherewith *Periander* made his discourse, he vvvas vnable to cleare those mistrusts vvwhich the deceased *Clodio* had infused into his soule. *Policarpus* also held his peace; employing his thoughts and lookes on the person of *Auristela*, vvwithout any care at all vvwhether *Periander* in his discourse vvwere long or short; albeit

albeit in very deed the Authour, who derideth others, is very impertinent in this historie, and sheweth himselfe ridiculous. And so he endeth this troublesome discourse, in saying that *Persander* was given to vnderstand, that some were weary of his long narration: who therefore purposed to abridge the same; and not, through default of iudgement that could not be excused, abuse the patience of such as hearkned vnto him, and for that cause beganne againe as compendiously as hee could in these tearmes.

CHAP. XVI.

Persander prosecuteth his history.

I Then tooke aduice with my companions what course wee should holde: and it was resolued, that, in regard wee went after the pirates, who neuer saile against the winde, it was necessary to follow them: and my simplicitie vvas so great, that I demanded of *Carino* and *Solerio* if they had seene their mistresses in my sisters company: they began to laugh at my demand: which constrained me to tell them my dreame. We vv ere two months at sea, and nothing befell vs of any great moment, but onely that during the same time we emptied more then threescore shippes of pirates; enriching our shippe vvith their spoiles, vvherewith my companions vv ere vvell contented, and nothing sorrie that they had changed their trade of fishermen to become Rouers, although they were not theeues but against theeues, neither did rob any but robbers.

Now vpon a night it so happened that the vvind surprised vs, vvhereby vve vv ere driuen more then a month continually by the same point of the compasse; till our Pilot obseruing the height of the pole, and reckoning the

the leagues vve had failed every day, found that vvee had runne foure hundred leagues, and vvere now far North in the climate of Norway. Whereupon he said; We are all vnfortunate: if the wind suffer vs not to returne back, or take some other way, we are but lost: for we are in the ycie sea vvhere we shal be congealed amidst these waters.

He had scarcely ended these vvords, when vvee felt as it vvere mouing rockes to dash against the sides and keel of our ship: vvhereby wee knew that the sea beganne to frieze, and that the mountaines of yce vvwhich were made therein hindered our shippes vvay. Wee quickly strooke all our sailes, for feare lest in meeting them our shippe should split: and this night the waters did congeale in such sort that they enclosed our shippe like a stone in a ring.

At the same instant the colde beganne to seize on our bodies, and sadnes to afflict our mindes: feare also performing his office, vve made account to liue no longer then the victuals vvwhich wee had, vvould last to sustaine vs, vvwhich immediately vvere rated and shared by order, so scantingly, that from thenceforth we beganne to die for hunger. VVe looked euery vvhere about vs, & perceiued nothing that might put vs in hope, except a black thing I knowe not what; seeming to be about seauen or eight miles off, vvwhich we iudged to be a vessell vvwhich a common misfortune had imprisoned aswell as our selues. This danger exceeded and surpassed the infinite number of those vvherein I saw my life ready to be lost, because a long feare more vexed vs then a speedy death: and that which threatned vs no lesse by pinching hunger than by length of time, caused vs to vndertake a resolution, if not desperate, at the least rash; which was, to goe out of our ship as soone as our victuals were spent, and walke vpon theyce, to see if in the other which we had descried, any thing might be found to supply our necessities, & make benefit thereof eyther by good will, or by force. This
we

we put in execution, and in an instant the waters might see marching dry-foot vpon them a little Squadron, yet good souldiers, in the head of whom I marched: and sliding, falling, and rising againe, wee came to the other ship, which was nigh as great as ours. There were some folke aboard, who, ghelling at the intent of our coming, cried out vnto vs in this manner:

What make you here, you desperate people? what seek ye for? come you hither to seeke your death, or rather is it to hasten ours? returne to your ship, and if you want victuals, gnaw your tackling, and eat the pitched boards if you can possible: for to thinke that wee shall deliuer you from hence, were a vaine imagination, and against the rules of charitie, which ought to beginne vvith our selues. They say that this yce must heere continue two moneths, and wee haue victuals but for fiftene daies: I leaue you then to iudge whether there be any likelihood that we should giue you any part with vs.

To whom I answered; Where the perills are extreame, all reason is troden vnder foot, neither is there any respect or consideration kept: receiue vs aboard with your good wils, and let vs eat friendly together that vvich you haue left vnspent, before necessitie constrain vs to winne it by force. I made them this answer; beleeuing they spoke vntruly as concerning the quantity of such victuals as they shewed vs: but they seeing themselves to bee more in number, and to haue the aduantage of the place, made no reckoning of our threats nor intreaties; but running to their weapons, did their best to defend themselves. My souldiers, who, as they were valiant and courageous, were now made rash through despaire, adioyning a new brauery to this temeritie, assailed the ship vvith such violence, that they vvonne it, almost vvithout receiuing any vvound; and in this first furie vvould haue slaine all those they found there, to spare so much victuals, if I had not stopped them.

We were afterward succoured by heauen, as I will tell you by and by. But first you shal know that this was the same Pirates shippe that had carried away my siller, and the two married vvives *Seluyana* & *Leoncia*. I had scarcely vnderstood so much, but I cried out vnto them: Where doe you keepe our soules, you Routers? What haue you done with my siller, and the two halues of these my friends? Then one of them answered vnto me, that their Captaine, who was now dead, had sold them to the Prince of Denmarke. It is true said *Arnaldo*, that I bought *Auristela*, her nurse, and the two others of Pirates, but not for such price as they were worth. Now in the name of God (said *Rutlio*) by vvhat windings and chaines is this rare history knit together? By that which you owe to the desire which all of vs haue to serue you (added *Synforosa*) somewhar abbreviate your narration, and let vs heare the end. I vvill doe so, answered *Periander*, for great matters may be comprehended in a few words.

CHAP. XVII.

Of Policarpus his traiterous plot, and of the flight of Arnaldo, of Periander, and of his company.

ALL this delay of *Periander*s discourse, was so much contrary to the pleasure of *Policarpus*, that he could neyther hearken attentiuely, nor aduisedly bethinke himselfe what he should doe for the restraint of *Auristela*, without pccidence of the reputation which he had to be noble and veritable. Hee weighed the quality of his guests: amongst whom hee preferred *Arnaldo* above the rest, as Prince of Denmarke, not by election, but inheritance. In *Periander*s carriage hee discovered a personage about the common ranke; and in *Auristela*s, a great Lady. Hee would willingly haue gained his desires by a
 plaine

plaine way, without inuentions or windings, couering all difficulties by the vaile of marriage. For though his age seemed to contradict the same, yet it alwaies better to marry, then to burne, at what time soeuer it be. Wherefore hee resolved with *Zenobia* to execute his designe, ere he gaue any further hearing vnto *Periander*. His drift was the second night after to sound a fallie alarme, and set fire in three or foure places of the Palace, to the end he might oblige those that should bee found there, to vse their best indeuor to quench it, and that in the midst of the noyse and confusion, ordinarily falling out in such accidents, hee would appoint men to carry away *Anrissela*, and the young *Anthonie*. In like sort hee ordained, that at the same time his daughter *Polycarpa*, like one moued with compassion, should giue vvarning to the Prince of Denmarke and *Periander*, of the danger hanging ouer their heads, and without speaking a word of the intended rauishment, shee should teach them the way to saue themselves in halting to the sea, where they should find a flye-boat at the hauen to take them aboard.

The night came, and three houres after the alarme began, which amazed the vvhole city: and at the same instant the fire tooke hold of the Palace, the flames whereof gaue augmentation vnto those which *Polycarpus* had in his soule. His daughter came with speed vnto Prince *Arnaldo* & *Periander*, to inform them of her fathers resolution, which was principally to get possessiō of *Anrissela*. They called her, with *Manrice*, *Transilla*, *Ladislas*, the two *Anthonies*, *Ricla*, *Constance*, & *Rutilio*, giuing thanks to *Polycarpa* for her aduertisement: they went all to the Hauen, following her counsell; where they embarqued as she had told them, in a flye-boate, whose Pilor and Mariners vvere suborned by the King, who had giuen them commandement, that as soone as these fugitiues should be shipped, they should lanch out into the sea, but yet not goe for England, nor otherwise be farre from the Ile.

But

But they performed all things in a contrary manner: for betraying the traitorous designs of their master, they informed the Prince of Denmarke, and *Periander*, all that which was intended against them, and carried them a great way from the shore. Which when *Polycarpus* knew, who had greater care of those that saved themselves amidst the waters, then of his owne Palace now ready to be consumed with fire, he caused all the ordinance in the other ships to be discharged against that which fled, and by this meanes increased the alarme within the City, where the inhabitants knew not by what meanes or accidents they might bee surprized. Amongst whom the amorous *Synforosa*, being yet more ignorant, repused her hope in her innocency, and her safety in her feet, mounting with feareful and staggering pases vpon a high tower of the Palace; where, in her iudgement she might bee secure from the fire that consumed the Kings house. With her, *Polycarpa* her sister was there inclosed, who related the flight of their guests: the newes vvhich killed the senses of her sister, and bred in her selfe a repentance to haue spoken so much. In the meane time, the smiling *Aurora* declared to euery one the approaching of the day, except in the soule of King *Polycarpus*, to whom she foretold a night of the greatest sadnesse that ever hee had. *Zenobia* bit her hands, banning her deceitfull science, and the false promises of her accursed maisters.

Synforosa was yet in a fowne, whose sister bewailed her mishaps; yet not forgetting such remedies as might recover her, wherewith in the end shee came to her selfe: and beholding the sea, shee saw the flye-boate vnder saile, which carried the halfe, or better part of her soule. And like a new *Dido* that complained of her fugitiue *Aeneas*, sending sighes to heauen, teares to the earth, and her voyce to the ayre, she vttered such like words.

O faire guest, which to my harm arriuedst on this coast: certainly thou art no deceiuer, for hitherto I was neuer so
fortu-

fortunate that thou wouldst speake vnto mee any amorous words, whereby I might bee deceiued: striketh thy sailes, or somewhat abate them at the least, that mine eyes may the longer behold this ship, whose view onely comforteth me, because thou art therein. Consider that thou flyest her which followeth thee, goest farre from her that seekes thee, and shewest hatred to her that adoreth thee. I am a Kings daughter, yet am content to become thy slaue. Respect not the burning of this City: for if thou comest backe, it hath serued for lights of mirth because of thy returne. I haue riches which I haue layed vp in such a place where the fire shall not come, for the heauens preferue them for thee alone. Then shee began to speake to her sister and said:

Thinke you not my sister, that the sailes are somewhat abated? see you not that he maketh not way so speedily as before? O God, hath he repented himselfe? or hath my will any power in it like a *Remora* to stay his shippe? Alas sister, said *Polycarpa*, beguile not your selte, for desires and deceits commonly goe together. The ship goeth hence, and there is no *Remora* of your wills that stayes it, nor winde of your sighes that driues it forward.

The King their father came vnto them in this discourse, vvhich would see from the same tower as well as his daughter, how not the halfe, but his whole soule absented it selfe.

Those, whose charge was to quench the fire of the Palace, had besides a further care to comfort him. But the Citizens hauing vnderstood the cause of this disorder, the bad desires of their King, and the worse counsells of the Magician *Zenocia*, the same day deposed him from his kingdome, and hanged *Zenocia* vpon a ships yard. *Synforosa* and *Polycarpa* were respected as Princesses, & their fortune was answerable to their deserts: yet not so that *Synforosa* came to an happy end of her desires, because the destiny of *Periander* did referue him to greater matters.

ters. In the meane time, those of the shippe, went away free and vnited at once, not ceasing to giue thanks to heauen, that had deliuered them from the wicked designs of *Polecorpus*. The skies were cleare, though there were a stout gale of winde.

The first obiekt of their voyage was England; where they thought to contriue such matters before intended, as should best besit them: and they sailed with so much quiet & so small feare, that they doubted not any storme. This faire weather endured three daies, and this winde blew fauourably vntill the fourth, which then began about sunne-setting to be tempestuous, and growe angry with the Sea. From thenceforth a suspition of some flaw began to trouble the Mariners: for the inconstancy of the sea, as also of our life, cannot promise vs any assurance for a long time. Yet, good fortune would, that vvhilest they were distressed with this feare, they discovered an Ile hard by them, which the Mariners knew immediately, and told them that this was the *Hermites Ile*, whether a French Knight, named *Renatus*, and also a Lady of France, named *Euclia*, had retired themselves; vvhose hillory is the rarest that euer was heard. The desire they had to know it, and to assure themselves from the tempest threatening them so neere at hand, caused them to turne their ships prow towards a roade, where they anchored without any impeachment. And *Arnaldo* being informed that in all the Ile there was none other person, but the two *Hermites*, and hauing a desire that *Aurissela* and *Transilla* might a little refresh themselves; commanded the skiffe to be call into the water, and that all should goe ashore to passe the night with better quiet out of the shaking and tottering of the sea. But the two *Anthomes*, *Ladislas*, and *Rutilis* remained behinde to keepe the ship, not yet resting assured of their Mariners fidelity, and hauing more pleasure to lye on the ships hatches, then on the land; especially the two Barbarians, who loued better
O the

the smell of pitch and rozin, then others doe the rezes and gilliflowers of their gardens. Those which had gotten to land couered themselues from the winde by shelter of a rocke: and the heat and brightnesse of the fire which they made of many boughes they had cut downe from diuers trees, defended them from the cold; so passing the night without molestation, as well because heretofore they were made and accustomed to like fortunes, as also for the pleasure which *Periander* gaue them in prosecuting his history at *Transilla's* request, albeit, calling to minde how at other times he had wearied them with the length of his discourse, he refused then to finish it: Nevertheless, the entreaty of them all, the occasion and time, were an inducement for him to begin againe in this manner.

CHAP. XVIII.

Periander prosecuteth his history: wherein hee recounteth how he tamed the vntamable horse of King Cratilius: and of their arrivall in the Ile of Hermitas.

IF it be true, that it much delighteth to speake of tempests in a calme, of hazards of vvarre in time of peace, and of sicknesse in perfect health; It shall bee now very sweet vnto me to recount my trauels, in this repose: For albeit I am not hitherto exempted from the same, I am somewhat eased at the least. And because this is one quality of our fortunes; When good things in any sort begin to increase, it seemes one calleth another, not finding an end whereon to rest: So it is in mishaps. And I thinke that those which I haue suffered vntill this present, now they are come to the last end of extreame misery, must necessarily be inforced to alteration: For when death which is last of all, followeth not extreame distresses, a change ought

ought to ensue: and that, not from euill to euill, but from euill to good, and from good to better. And that which I enioy at this present in my sisters company, who is the onely true cause of all my good fortunes and all my miseries, promiseth and assureth me that I shall come to the height of the most happy estate that I can desire. But to returne to my history: I say vnto you that I abode in the shippe of those Pirates who had sold my sister, the two spouses, and *Clelia*, vnto the Prince of Denmarke. And whilest my men searched for the ships victuals, wee discovered from towards the land, a troupe of more then foure thousand armed men marching on the yce. This sight congealed vs more then the Sea whereon we were: yet vve quickly betooke vs to our weapons, rather to testifie that wee were men, then for any hope whereupon to employ them. They vvalked onely vpon one foote, striking with the right on the left heele, whereon they did slide a great way: and then reiterating a like blowe on the other, they slid as before; so that they were at vs, and enuironed vs on euery side. Then one of them who (as afterward I knew) vvas their Captaine, drew so nigh our ship that he might be heard, hauing a white cloth waving on his arme in signe of peace, and spake vnto vs in the Polaque language in this manner:

Cratylus King of *Bituania*, and Lord of these seas, hath a custome to draw out the ships which the yce hath heere stayed, or at least the people and merchandise which are therein: and in recompence for hauing saued the persons from so great a perill, hee retaineth onely the merchandises. If you vwill accept this condition without defending your selues, you shall enioy both your life and liberty together, without any danger of imprisonment or death: If not, prepare vwell to defend your selues.

Content vvith this resolution, and the short discourse of him that spake, I answered; that he should permit mee to take aduice with my company: vvho shewed me, that

the end of all euils, and the greatest of them all, vvvas the end of life, vvvhich a man ought to preserue by all meanes possible; prouided that they be without infamy. And in regard there was no infamy in the conditions vvvhich they offered, and that wee were so certaine to lose our liues, and had so weake meanes of defence, the best course were to yeeld and giue place to euill fortune, as yet pursuing vs, peraduenture to reserue vs to some better occallion. I made almost this very answere vnto the Captaine; and at that instant they boorded our ship with more appearance of warre. then of peace: and taking downe all, they carried it away (not leauing the artillery & cordage) vpon oxen skinned which they spred on the yce, and then bound the goods thereon to draw them with ropes. And after they had robbed all our shippe, they put vs on other skinned; and shouting all at once, they carried vs to land, which might be about twenty miles from the shippe. In the end, we came to the shore that night, not going forth till the morning: but then we saw the land couered with an infinite number of people vvwho came to see this booty. King *Cratilus* came amongst them, on a faire horse, whom we knew by the royall ensignes and attire which he wore. By his side also came on horse-backe, a faire woman armed with white armour vnder a blacke vaile which couered them: Her faire appearance drew mine eyes after her, whom I beheld with such earnestnes, that I knew her to bee the faire *Sulpicia*, to whom a few daies before we had giuen the liberty which she now enioyed. The King drew neere to see vs, and the Captaine holding me by the hand, sayed vnto him: In this young man alone, most valorous King, it seemes to mee that I present the richest prize that euer any mortall eye hath viewed, vntill this present. Immortall God (then said *Sulpicia*, casting her selfe to the ground from her horse) eyther I haue no eyes, or this heere is *Periander* my deliverer: and the vttering of these words, and casting her armes about my

my necke, was all one. These vvelcomes obliged *Cratilius* to alight likewise from his horse, and receiue me with the same tokens & demonstrations of mirth. Now hope, wel-nigh extinguished for expecting any good successe, was departed farre from the courage of my fishermen: but recouering breath in behoulding this apparent ioie, wherewith they saw me to be receiued, they gaue thanks to God for this fauour vnlooked for. *Sulpicia* sayd vnto *Cratilius*; This young man is a subiect, whither courtie in the highest degree makes her retire; and liberalitie, a continuall abode. And although I haue made experience hereof, I will haue his onely presence make you to beleue it.

This is hee which gaue mee liberty after my husbands death: hee which despised not my treasures, yet vwould not take any thing; and which hauing receiued my presents, restored yet better vnto mee by his desire to giue me greater. To conclude: this is hee, who sitting himselfe, or to say better, sitting to his pleasure that of his souldiers, and giuing me twelue of them to keep me company, is the cause that I am now in your presence. I then blushing by reason of the excessiue praises which she gaue me, knew not what else to doe, but kneele downe before *Cratilius*, crauing his hand: which hee gaue mee, not to kilse, but to lift mee vp from the ground. In the meane time the twelue fishermen, which were of *Sulpicius* guard, went searching out their companions amongst the rest; and embracing each other as they met, they related their good or euill fortune. Those of the sea amplified their perill on the yce; and they of the land, their riches.

To mee, said one, *Sulpicia* hath giuen this chaine of golde. To mee, said another, this iewell, which is more worth then two such chaines of golde. To mee, said his fellow, she hath giuen so much money. Shee hath giuen mee more, replied another, in this onely iewell of Diamonds, then to all of you together.

This discourse vvas silenced by a great noife arising amongst the people, and occasioned by a strong horse which two footmen held by the bridle, but were not able to stay him. His haire was blacke and spotted with white spots like flies, which made him exceedingly faire. Hee came without furniture on his backe, because hee would not suffer any, except the King, to sit on the saddle: but after he was mounted, this respect was no longer obserued; for a thousand stops layd before him could not stay his running: whereby the King was so much displeased, that he would haue given a Citie to him that should rid him of this bad capering quality. Hee related all this vnto me in few words, and I resolued with more readinesse to do that which I shall tell you.

Hitherto *Periander* had proceeded, when at one side of the rocke, whither they had retired themselves, *Arnaldo* heard a noife of some person walking towards them: he rose vp, and taking holde of his sword, courageously attended the euent. *Periander* held his peace: the vvomen in feare, the men vvith bouldnesse expected vvhat might fall out. And by the vveake light of the moone, vvchich vvas so couered vvith clouds that shee could not be seene, they might perceiue two persons coming vnto them; vvhom they could hardly discerne vvhat they vv ere, if one of them had not said thus:

Gentlemen, vvhofoeuer you bee, trouble not your selues at our sodaine arriuall; because our coming hither is for none other intent but to serue you. This desert and solitary retract vvchich you haue chosen, you may make somewhat better in ours, being at the mountaines toppes. There you shall finde light and victualls: which though they be not delicate and of great value, yet at least they are necessary, and of good taste.

Arnaldo answered them; Are you happely that *Renatus*, and the same *Eusebia*, those two perfect louers, vvho praised renown hath at this day so loudly resounded? You had

had ghesseid better, quoth they, had you said, the two vnhappy: but howsoeuer, (happy or vnhappy) vvee are those vvhom you name. and such as in all kinds of good-will offer you whatsoeuer our pouerty permitteth vs. *Arnaldo* thought good to accept their offer, as being constrained thereto by the rigour of the time. All of them then arose; and following *Eusebia* and *Renatus*, vvho serued them as guides, they came to the top of a smal mountaine, where they found two hermitages, fitter to lead a poore life therein, then to reioyce vvith any superfluity. They entred into that vvwhich seemed vnto them the best; vvhere they found two lampes burning, that they might discerne what he had there, which was an altar & three images: one, of the Authour of life once dead and crucified; and the other of the Queene of heauen, placed before him who setts his feet vpon the whole vvorld; the third, of the well beloued disciple, who sawe more whilst he slept, then al other mens eies being awake. They kneeled downe: and after they had reuerently & deuoutly praied, *Renatus* brought them into a chamber ioyning to the same hermitage, whose entrie was ouer against the Altar.

Finally, in that small particulars doe not suffer long narrations, we will lightly passe ouer their light supper, and the good cheare they made: which vvas not great, but in the heartie affection of the Heremites; touching whom they marked their poore apparell, their yeares already touching the brinke of olde age, the beautie of *Eusebia*; which, amidst the ruines of age and pouertie, yet retained an appearance, that it had beene of rare perfection. *Anriscela*, *Transilla*, and *Constance* remained in this chamber, whose bed vvas the dry rocke, and many sweet smelling hearbs. The men fitted themselues in diuers places of the other hermitage, no lesse colde then hard. The night passed away in this manner, and the faire & cleare day approached: the sea also shewed it self so calme, that

it invited them by the smoothnesse to take shipping; as indeed they had donne, if the Pilote had not tould them that they should not truit the outward appearance of this faire weather: which, though it promised tranquillitie, would soon after affoord them contrary effects. All of them followed his counsell; knowing well, that the simplest mariner doth vnderstand better the art of nauigation, then the greatest clerke of the world. The Ladies forlooke their grassie beds, and the men their hard stones, and all together came from their cells to beholde from the mountaines toppe the sweet prospect and fruitfulness of this Ile, which might containe about twelue miles; but to full of trees bearing fruit, so fresh by reason of the waters wherewith it was euery where moistened, so delightfull for the verdure of the grasse, and so sweet and faire with diuersitie of flowers, that at one time in the same degree it was able to content the five senses.

Shortly after, the vénérable Heremites called their guests; and spreading herbs in the hermitage, they made a carpet on the ground; peradventure, no lesse pleasing, then such as are spread in Kings Palaces. Immediately they brought forth greene and dry fruits, and bread (which was not so tender, but it much resembled biscuit) crowning the table with vessells made of corke, full of fresh water. The ornament, the fruits, the pure & cleare waters (which in despite of the colour of the corke shewed their cleareness) and aboue all, necessitie, obliged, or rather constrained them to seat themselves round about the table.

After this sober, but sauory repast, *Arnaldo* praied *Renatus* to tell them the cause which had reduced him to so poore a life. Hee, being a Knight vnto whom curtelie is annexed inseparably, not suffering himselfe to bee twice intreated, began to make the discourse of his true history in this sort:

CHAP. XIX.

Renatus declareth the occasion why he became an Heremite.

WHEN aduersities past are related in prosperitie, it seemes the pleasure one hath in speaking thereof, is greater then the displeasure hee had in suffering them. I cannot say this of mine: because I declare them not in repose, but in the midst of my torments. I was borne in France, of noble, rich & vertuous parents, who brought mee vp in such exercises as appertaine vnto Knights. I measured my thoughts according to mine estate: vvhich withall neuerthelesse I aduentured to settle on *Eusebia*, the Queenes maid of honour, and with my eyes alone made her vnderstand that I adored her: but whether it were that shee marked it not, or that shee had no care of any such matters, I could neuer by lookes or vvords from her, perceiue that she vnderstood me. And though disgraces & disdaines are wont to procure loues death in the birth; wanting the staffe of hope whereby it augmenteth: it was farre otherwise with mee, for from the silence of *Eusebia* I made wings to my hope, vvhich lifted me vp in presumption to merit her. But the enuie, or ouer great curiositie of another french Knight named *Lipsemirus*, no lesse famous for his wealth then for the nobilitie of his house, attained euen to the knowledge of my thought, and without any due consideration thereof conceived more despite then pitie; which ought to haue been otherwise. For there are two euils in loue, and they both come to extremitie: one is to loue, and not bee beloued; the other to loue, and yet bee hated: and this last euill is greater then absence or ieaousie. *Lipsemirus*, vpon a resolution against mee that neuer offended him, one day went to finde the King; and tould him, that contrarie to the dutie which I should obserue toward his Maie-

Maieſty, and againſt the law which I ought to keepe as a Knight, I abuſed vnlawfully the honour and beauty of *Eusebia*, which hee would proue by the ſword; that hee might not by his penne defame her, whom he accuſed to be vnchalle. The King ſent for me vpon this accuſation, and told me what he had vnderſtood by *Lipſemirus*. I excuſed mine innocency; and for the honour of *Eusebia*, gaue mine enemy the lye, in as ciuill tearmes as poſſible I could. The prooſe was referred to Arms: the King would not appoint the field in any part of his kingdome, leſt he ſhould contradickt the lawes of the Church, forbidding it: but we our ſelues made choyce of one of the free Cities of Almaine.

When the day of combat was come, wee both appeared at the appointed place, with ſuch Armes as we had agreed vpon, which were ſword and dagger, without other trickes of Art. The Iudges and ſeconds hauing parted the ſunne, and performed all other ceremonies in ſuch caſe accuſtomed, leſt vs to doe our deuoyre. I entred into the field full of courage and confidence, infallibly knowing that I had reaſon and Trueth on my ſide. As for my aduerſary, I knew vvell that hee entered the liſts vvith more pride and arrogance, then aſſurance of conſcience. O heauen! O the vnſearchable iudgements of GOD! I did what I could, reſoling my confidence in God, and in the ſincerity of my deſignes: feare had no power ouer me, my armes were no leſſe ſtrong then they were wont, nor my motions leſſe nimble: yet heerewithall I found my ſelfe laid along on the earth I know not how, and the point of mine enemies ſword on mine eyes, which threatned mee vvith a ſpeedy and ineuitable death. Thrult, ſaid I (to this more happy then braue conqueror) the point of thy ſword, and plucke away my ſoule, which hath had ſo little ſkill to defend my body: look not that I will yeeld, or confeſſe an offence which I neuer did. I haue committed other faults
which

which deserue much greater chastisements: but I will not adioyne this vnto them, to beare false witnesse against my selfe; and I had rather die honourably, then liue dishonoured. If thou yeeld not thy selfe answered mine enemy, this point shall pearce thee vnto the braine, and make thee ratifie with thy blood, the truth of my accusation, and thine offence. With that came the iudges, who accounted me as dead, adiudging the garland of victory to mine enemy. Hee was carried out of the field on his friends shoulders, and I was left alone in the power of torment and confusion, with more sadnesse then wounds; but not with so much griefe as I supposed, in that it made me not lose that life which mine aduersary had left mee. In the end, my seruants drew me thence, I returned to mine owne house, not daring to lift vp mine eyes to heauen, thinking mine eye-lids were loaden with vvaights by displeasure of mine infamy. I was offended at my deare friends that spake to mee: the heauen which was cleere to others, was for mee alone couered with clouds of darkenes. I saw not three men together, but I thought two of them spake of mee. Finally, I found my selfe so pressed with my melancholy thoughts, and confused imaginations, that to free or ease my selfe, or to end them with my life, I resolved to forsake my country, and resigning my goods to my younger brother, to banish my selfe into these northerne coasts; whither I came in a shippe, with some of my seruants, to finde in these quarters a place retired from the world, where the shame of mine infamy might not finde me. I was casually brought into this Ile: the situation pleased mee, and by the assistance of my seruants I built this Hermitage, where I shut vp my selfe after I had dismissed them, with a charge to come and see me every yeere, that they might bury my bones after I were dead. The loue they bore me, the promises I made them, confirmed with gifts I gaue, obliged them to performe my commandements. They left mee
in

in this solitarinesse: where I found such company amidst these trees, these cleere fountaines and fresh riuers, that I was grieued in minde that I was vanquished no sooner, in that so great contentment should ensue after this displeasure. O solitarinesse! the ioyfull fellowship of the sad: O silence! a pleasing voyce to them whose eares thou touchest, vvithout being associated with lying or flatterie: what shall I say to aduance your praise! But I must first tell you, that my seruants returned a yeere after, bringing vvith them my adored *Eusebia*, vvhich is the gentlewoman here present, and reduced with mee into this hermitage: my seruants hauing informed her in vvhat estate they had left me, and she reacknowledging my desires, vvith a compassionate feeling of my mishap would beare me company in my paine, and so embarking vvith them, left her country, her parents, her vvealth, and more then that, her owne honour, to the vaine discourse of the common people (who almost euery day are abused) because in following me, shee confirmed in the worlds opinion, an error which vvvas neuer effected. I entertained her in such sort as she hoped for: and solitarinesse & beautie, which should haue inflamed our former desires, wrought a contrary effect, thanks be to God, and her honesty. We gaue our faith one to another in lawfull marriage; and we liue in this Ile in peace, & loue like two moving images, euer since these ten yeares: during all this time, not one hath passed, wherein my seruants haue not come to see me, with necessary prouision, vvwhich otherwise would often faile vs in this lland. They sometimes brought vvith them religious persons to confesse vs: we haue here ornaments to celebrate the diuine seruice: we sleep apart, and eat together: vve speake of heauen. & despise the earth: we trust in Gods mercy, and hope to haue eternall life.

Heere did *Renatus* finish his discourse; and *Rutilio*, vvhich vvith deepe silence had giuen eare to his history, began

began to cry out in this manner : O solitary life ! holy , free, and assured, which the heauen infuseth in the most delicate imaginations: vvhoe vwill loue thee ? vvhoe vwill embrace thee ? who will enioy thee ? Thou speakest well, *Rutilio*, then said *Maurice*; but these consideratious shold fall vpon great subiects : for it is no maruell if a shepheard frame himselfe to solitarinesse, or if a poore man that is hunger-starued in the City, retireth to the fields vvhere hee findeth better meanes to support his life. But if I should see an *Hanniball* of Carthage shut vp in a Cell, as I saw *Charles* the first in a monastery : then I should haue a subiect to maruellat ; but not that a common or poore person vvithdrawes himselfe from the world : for this in my iudgement affordeth no cause of admiration. In like manner, *Renatus* is none of that sort: whom not pouerty, but force of his melancholike imaginations hath brought to these coalls vnfrequented, vvhere he findes abundance in dearth, company in solitarinesse; and vvhere hauing nothing to lose, he hath nothing to be afraid of. *Periander* hereunto adioyned. If I were old as I am young, my fortune hath put mee into such occasions and distresses, that I would account it a great felicity to haue solitarines my companion, and silence my toombe. Neuerthelessse, my desires cannot permit me to resoluē heereupon ; and the straining of *Cratylus* his horse, with whom I left mine history, giueth me no leysure to change my life. All of them reioyced vvhen they heard this, because *Periander* would returne to his narration, so often begun, and not finished, which in this manner hee did pursue.

CHAP. XX.

Wherein is declared what happened to Periander with the horse of Cratilus.

THE beauty, stature, and fiercenesse of the horse which I haue described vnto you, made *Cratilus* so farre in loue with him, and stirred vp in him as many desires to see him gentler, as I had to serue him; thinking that heauen offered this occasion vnto me, that I might be acceptable vnto him, whom already I held as my master, and to deserue some part of the prayses which *Sulpicia* had giuen me. Wherefore I went directly to the horse, and got on his backe, without setting foot in the stirrop, because there vvas none: and I put him forward with such violence, that the bittes could neuer stay him: he carried me to the poynt of a rocke hanging ouer the sea. I rained him harder: and being vnable to hold him, both whether hee or I would or not, I made him take his leape in the ayre, into the depth of the waters. And remembring in the midst of the leape, that in regard the water was frozen, I should be broken in peeces with the fall, I held my owne and the horses death assured. But it came not so to passe: for heauen reseruing mee to other matters which he knoweth, permitted the legs of this puissant horse to withstand the blowe: neither receiued I any other damage, but a fearefull shocke, and no lesse danger in sliding. There was not one on the shore but thought I was dead: but when they saw me come backe, they reported this accident for a miracle, and my boldnesse as a rash follie. This terrible skippe of the horse, seemed to *Mourice* a very hard matter; who would gladly at the least hee had broken three or foure legs, to giue the more probability to the discourse of such an vnmeasurable and outrageous leape: But the reputation of *Periander* made his tale to be beleued.

beleueed. For like as it is a punishment incident to liers, that no man credits them when they speake the very truth; so it is also the glory of such as are veritable, that they are beleueed euen when they tell a lye. Now the thoughts of *Maurice* being vnable to hinder *Perianders* discourse, he thus continued the same:

I came backe with the horse to the shore: and by the same pafe which he had gone, I presented vnto him the same leape, and put him forward to skip againe: but it was not possible. But contrariwise, being at the poynt of the rocke, hee stroue so much to goe backe, that breaking the raines, and sitting on his buttockes, he remained as if he were nailed to the earth. Immediately he was all on a sweat from the feet to the head: and trembling for feare. being (before) a Lion, he became a Lamb; and of an vntamed beaft, such a generous and peaceable horse, that children would aduenture to gouerne him: & the Kings groomes hauing saddled him, got on his backe, and did what they would, finding in him swiftnesse and goodnes not knowne to be in any horie: wherein the King was much contented, and *Swipacia* ioyfull to see mine actions answerable to her words.

The Ice continued three months in melting: which were employed in finishing a shippe which the King had begun to scoure the seas; and in freeing them of Pirates, to enrich himselfe with their stollen goods. During which time, I performed certaine seruices in hunting, and shewed my selfe diligent, painfull, and experienced. For no exercise is liker to the wars, then hunting; on which, hunger, thirst, and wearinesse are inseparable dependants. Briefly, the curtesie of *Cratilus*, and the liberality of the faire *Sulpicia* were admirable, not onely to me, but likewise to all my company. In the end, when the ship was made, the King commanded the same to bee plentifully furnished with all things necessary, and made mee Capitaine generall, not binding mee to depend on any ones plea-

pleasure but mine owne. And after I had kissed his hands for so great a benefit, I besought him to giue mee leaue to goe in search of my sister *Aurissela* : whom I had vnderstood to bee in the power of the King of Denmarke. *Crastius* permitted me to doe what I would ; saying that I had obliged him to pleasure me in greater matters. *Sulpicia* would not suffer vs to depart without renewing her liberalities : and so, rich and contented, I and my company embarked, not forgetting any behinde. The first course we took, was for Denmarke: where I hop't to finde my sister , and heard newes how shee was taken by Ro- uers, as she walked by the sea-side. There my trauels renewed, and my sorrowes began afresh , which were accompanied with those of *Carino* and *Solercio* ; who beleued that their wiues were partakers of the misfortunes and imprisonment of my sister.

Their suspicion, said *Arnaldo*, was not amisse: and *Periander* proceeding ; We ran ouer, said hee, all the seas, compassed all the Iles thereabouts, euery day enquiring newes of my sister ; thinking that the bright beames of her face could not be couered, in whatsoeuer obscuritie she should be hidden. We tooke pirates, deliuered prisoners, restored euill gotten goods to the right owners, & filling our ship with a thousand different kinds of riches, my fishermen would returne to their nets , and to their owne houses ; because *Carino* and *Solercio* imagined they should finde their wiues in their country , whom they were vnable to finde in so many strange lands as we had discovered. But first of all we came to the Ile which (I beleue) men call *Scynta* : where wee vnderstood of the feast of King *Policarpus*, which moued in vs all an earnest desire to be there. But we could not arriue thither with our ship, by reason of a contrary winde : wherefore I & twelue onely, entred into a long boat ; all attired like mariners, as you haue already knowne. There I wonne the prize, and was crowned victorious of all, and heere-
vpon

vpon *Synforosa* tooke occasion to informe her selfe who I was.

After I was returned to my shippe, and my men being resolved to forsake mee, I prayed them to leaue mee the long boat in recompence of all the trauels which I had suffered in their company. They did so, and would haue left mee the ship if I would; saying, that if they left mee alone, it was for none other cause, but for that they iudged my designe to be particular; and so, impossible to execute, as experience had taught by the diligence wee had vsed.

In this resolution after I had embraced my friends, I embarked onely with six fishermen, who were thereunto drawne by the recompence which I promised them; and landed in the Barbarian Iland, vnderstanding the custome and false prophcie of the inhabitants, which you all doe like wise knowe. I crosst the Ile; was taken and thrust into the caue where men are buried aliuie. Certaine daies after, they drew me forth to be sacrificed: but the tempest hauing spoiled their rafts which they vse instead of boats, I was carried into the deepe sea vpon a piece of wood, with chaines on my necke, and manacles on my hands. I fell into the power of Prince *Arnaldo* heere present; by whose appointment I entred againe into the Ile in womans apparell, to learne some newes of *Auristela*, who the next morning was brought forth in mans apparell to be sacrificed. I there knew her: & grieft, to see her in that estate, made me preuent her death; in saying, that she was a maid, as her nourse *Clodia* who kept her company, had before assured. How they came thither, her selfe shall tell you if she please: that which befell vs in the Ile, you knowe. So, with this which I haue spoken, and that which resteth for my sister to manifest, you shall remaine satisfied of all that you can desire, touching the certainty of our fortunes.

CHAP. XXI.

How the brother of Renatus arrived in the Ile of Hermites, and brought him passing good newes: and how the Prince of Denmark resolved to returne into his Realme.

I Know not, if I can assure whether *Maurice*, and some others of the company were glad that *Periander* had ended his discourle: for the longest are oftentimes the most yrkesome, be they of neuer so great importance. And this cogitation perhaps hindred *Auristela* at that time to begin the story of her accidents, vvhich shee vvould not relate till a better occasion; being also diuerted by a ship vvhich they saw comming towards them, vvith all sailes bearing, in such sort that shortly after beeing arriued in a certaine roade of the Ile, it vvvas presently known by *Renatus*, vvho said vnto them: This is the shippe, Gentlemen, wherein my friends and seruants are accustomed to come and see me. The ship hauing saluted them of the Ile, and let downe their skiffe into the water, the shore was full of people, vvhere vve vvere all ready to receiue them. Those who were vnshipped might bee some 20. amongst whom there was one, whose demeanor witnessed that he was master of the rest; who had no sooner perceiued *Renatus*, but he ran to him with his armes abroad, saying vnto him: Embrace me, brother, at the least in fauour of the good newes I bring you. *Renatus* embraced him, knowing that this was his brother *Symbalde*, vnto whom he said; No newes, brother, can be more welcome vnto me, then to see you: for although in my present estate no mirth can glad me, neuer thelesse that of your presence is excepted from this rule. *Symbalde* after saluted *Euchia*, saying: Embrace mee also Madame, for you likewise haue your part in the newes I bring you; vvhich I will not shall make you languish any further, to prolong
your

your paine. Knowe then , that your enemy is dead by likenesse ; and that hauing remained speechlesse for six daies space. heauen gaue him liberty to speake againe six houres before he died : within which time hee confessed the malice and despite which had constrained him to accuse you falsely, with demonstrations of great repentance; acknowledging also that his malice had triumphed ouer your vertue by Gods secret iudgement : which hee vvas content, not onely to speake, but would haue the truth hereof remaine written in publike record. Which after it came to the Kings notice. he restored your honor, and declared also by a publike Act, that you my brother haue the victory of your conqueror, and *Eusebia* exempt not onely from the crime, but also from suspition, which any one might fasten vpon her renowne. Moreouer, he commanded me to seeke you out, and bring you into his presence, that he might by his magnanimity , recompence the pouerties and miseries of your absence. I leaue it to your consideration , if these newes ought to bee pleasing to you. They are such, said *Arnaldo*, that no prolonging of life can surpasse them, nor greatnes of riches be matchable vnto them : for honor lost, and recouered in greater measure then before the losse, hath nothing in the world comparable thereunto. And Signeur *Renatus*, vould God you might enioy it many yeares , and with you your matchlesse companion, who is an example and mirror of all thankfulness. All the other ioyntly reioyced with him like *Arnaldo*: & inquiring newes of such things as had passed in Europe, and other parts of the vworld , whereof being alwaies on the sea, they could haue no notice ; *Symbalde* answered, that of late there was no other talke, but of the warres of Transiluania, the stirres of the Turke, the death of *Charles* the fift Emperour of Rome and King of Spaine, who was a terror to the enemies of the Church; & the sadnes of old *Leopoldus* King of Denmarke, who for the absence of the Prince his sonne, was

at the poynt of death: which Prince had left his realme and his father, to follow the wandrings of a slaue of his, who was so little knowne that none could so much as tell who were her Parents. Hee told also diuers other newes of small importance, whereof some did make glad, others astonished such as heard him: but all together gaue them pleasure, except onely pensiue *Arnaldo*, who vnderstanding the sadnesse of his father, looked downe on the earth, and set his hand to his cheek: and hauing so continued for a time, he lift vp his head & eyes to heauen, and began to cry out that all might hear him: O Loue! O Honour! O fatherly compassion, how fast doe you gripe my soule! Pardon me, Loue: I forsake thee, not with purpose to separate my selfe from thee: Honor, tarry for mee; for to be amorous I will not leaue to follow thee. Father, comfort your selfe, for I will quickly returne vnto you. Subiects, attend mee; for loue neuer made any one a coward, much lesse shall I be in your defence: for I am the best & perfectest Louer in the world. I will goe and winne that which pertaineth vnto me, for the incomparable *Auristela*; and merit in becing a King, that which I cannot merit in being a louer: for it is impossible for a louer euer to attaine to a happy end of his desires vnlesse fortune fauour him. I will claime her as a King, I will serue her as a King, and will adore her as a louer. And if with all this I cannot merit her, I will sooner accuse my fortune then her iudgement.

All the assistants were amazed at these words, but *Synibaldo* more then the rest; to whom *Maurice* had told that this was the Prince of Denmarke. and shee there (shewing *Auristela*) the prisoner that had taken him. *Synibaldo* opening his eyes, and looking vpon her more neerly then as yet hee had done, iudged that that which in *Arnaldo* was esteemed folly, was great wisdome: for the beauty of *Auristela* was so perfect, that insensibly shee captiuated the hearts of all them that saw her; and all the faults

faults committed for her sake, found in her their sufficient excuses. The same day it was resolved that *Renatus* and *Emebia* should returne into France, and take *Arnaldo* into their shippe, to set him a land in his kingdome, who would carry with him *Maurice*, *Ladislas*, & *Transilla*: And that *Periander*, the two *Anthonies*, *Auristela*, *Ricla*, and *Constance* should prosecute their voyage in the ship which they had taken in the Ile of *Policarpus*. *Rutilio* seeing this departure, abode awhile, waiting which company would take him aboard: at length kneeling to *Renatus*, he besought him to make him heyre of his moueables, & appoint him to supply his place in his hermitage, where hee desired to amend and finish his vicked life. *Renatus*, no lesse liberall then *Chrillian*, granted all his demands, and said that hee wished he had left with him things of greater value; albeit he left him all necessaries to dresse the ground, and passe his humane life. *Arnaldo* further added; that if he might see himselfe peaceably possessed of his kingdome, hee promised to send him every yeere a ship with commodities to succour him. *Rutilio* thanked them all, every one embraced him, and the most of them wept to see the holy resolution of this new Hermit: for though wee amend not our liues, wee cannot choose but receiue contentment, when wee see another mans life to be reformed; vnlesse it fall out that wee haue attained to such desperate villany, that wee are become as gulfes, vwhereof one calleth another. They continued there two daies in fitting thēselues, ech of them to follow their voyage: & vpon the point of their departure they had great complements, chiefly between *Arnaldo* & *Auristela*; which though they were intermedled with amorous words, yet they were so replete with considerate respect, that they nothing troubled the minde of *Periander*. *Transilla* wept, so did *Maurice*, and *Ladislas* his sonne in law: *Ricla* sighed, *Constance* mourned, and the two Barbarians were feelingly affected. *Rutilio* hauing cloath-

thed himselfe in Hermites apparell which *Renatus* wore, vvvent from one to another, and taking leaue of them all, mingled sighes and teares together. Finally, the calme- nesse of the season, and a winde vvwhich might serue for diuers voyages, inuited them to go on ship-board. They hoysed their sayles, and *Rutilio* blessed them a thou- sand times from the highest part of his Hermi- tage, whence he beheld their departure.

And heere the Author of this rare
History, finisheth his se-
cond booke.

THE



THE
THIRD BOOKE
OF THE TRAVELS
of *Perfiles*, and
Sigismunda.

CHAP. I.

*The arrivall of our Pilgrims at Lisbone, and of other worthie
and memorable things.*



LIKE as our soules are ever in continuall motion, and cannot stay nor rest but in their center, which is God, for whom they were created: so also it is no maruell if our thoughts change, and that this man taketh, that man leaueth; one followeth, and another forgetteth. This is said, to excuse the inconstancy witnessed by *Arnaldo*, in leauing *Auristela* vpon a sodaine, whom

he had so long time serued, and with such violence desired. Neuerthelesse, it cannot be said that he forsook her; but that the desire of honor, which surmounteth all the passions of the minde, made his loue to sleepe at that instant.

Arnaldo speaking priuately vnto *Periander* in the Ile of the Hermites the night before their departure, had acquainted him with his purpose, and there had prayed him to reserue his sister *Auristela*, one day to be Queene of Denmarke; and that if Fortune should be so contrary to deprive him of his kingdome, and that he lost his life in so iust a demand, *Auristela* should value her selfe as a Princes widow, and such a one as should knowe how to choose a husband which were worthy of her. That hee knew already, and so he had told him often, that for her owne person, without dependance of other greatnes, she deserued not onely the kingdome of Denmarke, but the Empire of al the world. *Periander* gaue him many thanks in the best manner he could, promising to haue as much care of his sister as lay in his power; as that vvhich so neerly concerned a person who was so nigh of blood, and had so much reference to himselfe. In the meane time, he made not *Auristela* priuy to any of these speeches: because the praises which are giuen to the party beloued, ought to be spoken as proceeding from our selues, and not as comming from another. A louer shall neuer make himselfe beloued by another mans perfections: and those which he sheweth to his mistresse ought to be his owne. If he sing not well, hee must neuer keepe company vwith him that hath a pleasing voyce: nor with a faire & comely man, if he be not the like himselfe. These counsels nothing concerne *Periander*, who in the goods of Nature was richer then all men, and in those of Fortune gaue place but to a few. In the mean time the ships went in different courses, by one and the same winde (which is a mystery in the Art of Nauigation) breaking not the cleere,

cleere, but blew, cryſtall of the waters. The ſea was layd ſmooth in outward appearance: for the windes handled the ſame reſpectuely. not daring to touch but the *ſuperficiēs*; whoſe lips the ſhip ſweetly kiſſing, glided ſo ſwiftly thereon, that it ſeemed ſcarce to touch it. In this quietneſſe they ſailed 17. daies without altering their ſailes higher or lower; which is a felicity to them that frequent the ſea: who beeing exempted from all feare of ſtormes, there is no pleaſure equall thereunto.

At the end of this time, a Mariner who was on the maine top, one morning diſcouering the land, began to cry, Land, Land, we are at the country of Liſbone. Theſe newes made them all ſhed teares for ioy, eſpecially *Ricla*, *Conſtance*, and the two *Anthonyes*; for it ſeemed vnto them they were come to the Land of Promiſe, which they had ſo much deſired. Thou ſhalt now know, my ſwete Barbarian, (ſaid olde *Anthony* to his wife *Ricla*, embracing her) the manner how to ſerue God, by a larger inſtruction, though not different from that which I haue ſhewed thee. Thou ſhalt now ſee the rich Temples in which hee is adored; the ceremonies of the Church, and the charity of the Chriſtians. Thou ſhalt ſee in this Citie many hoſpitals, where the ſicke finde health, and thoſe vvhich die doe get eternity. There Loue and Honelty ſhake hands, and vualke together. There courteſie ſuffereth not arrogance to arriue, nor valor wil giue conſent that cowardize ſhould approach. All the inhabitants are pleaſing, courteous, liberall, amorous, and diſcreet. The Citie is one of the greateſt, and beſt frequented for traffick, of any that is in Europe. Therein are vnſhipped the riches of the Eaſt, and from thence diſperſed throughout the world. The hauen is able to receiue, not only ſo many ſhips as may be reckoned, but mowing forreſts of innumerable trees. The womens beauty porcureth Loue; and the mens valor, feare. Finally, this is the land which giueth, to heauen, a holy and rich tribute.

This

This is enough, *Anthony*, said *Periander*: tell vs no more, leaue the remainder for our eies, that some-vvay rest for vs to beholde which wee haue not heard. *Auristela* was very well pleased to see that shee drew neere to the firme land, without going from port to port, & from Ile to Ile, subiect to the seas inconstancie, and the mutable pleasure of the windes; the rather when she knew she might goe on dry land to Rome, and not betake herselfe to sea vnielſe ſhe would.

It was noone when they came to Saint Iohns: where the ſhippe was regiſtred; and where the captaine of the caſtle, and ſuch as came aboard with him, wondred at the perfection of *Auristela*, the gallantnes of *Periander*, the barbarous apparell of the two *Anthonies*, the ſweet lookes of *Ricla*, and the pleaſing beauty of *Conſtance*. They knew that they were ſtrangers, and were going in pilgrimage to Rome. *Periander* bountifully paid the mariners which had brought them thither, with the golde which *Ricla* had taken from the barbarian Ile, and reduced into coine in the Iland of *Policarpus*. The captaine of Saint Iohns certified the gouernour of Liſbon, who at that time was Archbiſhop of Braga, what ſtrangers were newly arriued; not forgetting the incomparable beauty of *Auristela*, nor of *Conſtance*, whoſe barbarous attire was ſo farre from couering, that it rather augmented it. Hee wrot alſo touching the braue diſpoſition of *Periander*, and the diſcretion of them all together; who appeared not to be Barbarians, but courtiers. The ſhip arriued at the cities key; and they went aſhore at Belen, becauſe *Auristela* was amorous of the renowne of this holy monaſtery: which before all other things ſhee deſired to viſit, there freely to worſhip the true God without the crooked ceremonies of her country. An infinite number of people were come forth to the hauens ſide, to ſee the ſtrangers landed at Belen: all of them ran thither to behould that nouelty, which drew the eyes and
deſires

desires of all men continually after it. Now this new troope of strangers came to Belen : *Ricla* meanelly faire, but in barbarous attire ; *Constance* yet more faire, in the same apparell ; *Anthony* the father with naked armes & legges, and the rest of his body couered with a vvoolues skinne : his son *Anthony* in the like, but hauing his boaw in his hand, and a quiuier full of arrowes at his shoulders ; *Periander* in a callocke and hose of greene veluet, and a small cap on his head, which could not hide theiewels of golde appearing in his haire : *Auristela* carried all the riches of the North vpon her apparell, all comelineffe in her body, and all the beautie of the world in her face. In effect all together, and each of them apart, caused astonishment and maruell in such as beheld them : but aboue all, the incomparable *Auristela*, and invincible *Periander*, dazled their eyes. They came to Lisbone by land, all sorts of people enuironing them. They were brought to the Gouvernour : who, hauing a long time admired them, could not but demand who they were, vvhence they came, and whither they would.

Periander made him answer, who had studied before hand what hee should say to such demands, as hauing done it often, and who vpon due occasions related his story, alwaies concealing his parents, & satisfying them that asked him any questions in that whereof they inquired. The Vice-Roy caused them to bee lodged in one of the best houses of the citie, pertaining to a noble Knight of Portugall : where the throng of the people was so great, that *Periander* gaue counsell, that the Barbarians should change their clothing into the habit of Pilgrims, for that their noueltie was the principall cause wly they were followed of the multitude ; moreover, to accomplish their voyage to Rome, no other vesture could better become them : wherefore within two daies after, they apparelled themselves as Pilgrimes.

Now it happened vpon a day, as they came out of the house,

house, a Portugall cast himselfe at *Perianders* feet; and embracing his legges, said thus vnto him :

What fortune is this, *Signeur Periander*, that you honour this land with your presence ? maruell not to see, that I call you by your name: for I am one of those twenty which recovered libertie in the Barbarian Ile, when it was on fire, and destroyed by your occasion. I was at the death of the Portugall Knight, *Manuell de Soza*, and departed from you in the *Inne* where *Maurice* and *Ladislas* arriued in search of *Tranfilla*, the wife of the one, and daughter of the other: Good fortune brought mee into my country: I certified his death to his kinsfolkes, they beleueed it; and though I had not assured them that my selfe had seene it, they would neuerthelesse haue giuen credit thereunto, because it is commonly incident to Portugalls to die for loue. A brother of his (who inheriteth his goods) made his funeralls; putting a stone of white marble in a chappell of his house, as if hee had beene entombed vnderneath: vpon the which is engrauen an epitaph, which I desire you all to see, because I beleuee it wil please you well. *Periander* by these words knew that the man spake truth; but hee remembered not by his face, that hee had euer seene him: but they vvent to the temple which he spake of, and sawe the chappell and tombe: vpon the which was this epitaph in the Portugall tongue:

Heere lieth aliue the memory of dead Manuell de Soza, a Portugall Knight: who, had hee not beene a Portugall, should yet haue lined. Hee died not by the hands of any Castilian, but by those of Loue which can doe all. Thou that passest by, seeke to knowe his life, and his death will grieue thee.

Periander sawe that the Portugall had reason to commend vnto him this epitaph, in which kinde the Portugall Nation account themselues excellent. *Auristela* demanded

manded of the Portugall, what feeling the deceased mans religious mistresse had of the death her louer : who answered, that within few daies after shee knew it, shee passed from this life vnto a better ; either through the austerities which shee alwaies endured, or for the griefe shee had of this accident.

From thence they went to the house of a famous painter, whom *Periander* caused to trace with his pencill in a great table the principall matters of his history. At one side was painted the Barbarian Iland burning amidst the flames ; and ouer against it, the prison. A little further off, were the rafts where he was found by *Arnaldo*, when he tooke him into his ship ; on another part was the frozen Ile where the Portugall died ; the shippe, which the souldiers of *Arnaldo* boared through ; the separation of the skiffe and the long boat : there might bee seene the combate of *Taurisa's* louers, and her death ; here the ship was cut at the keele, which had serued as a tombe to the faire *Auristela*, and all her company : there was the delightfull Ile, where *Periander* sawe in a dreame the two troopes of vertues and vices ; and hard by, the ship where the *Phisiers* swallowed vp the two mariners. He forgot not to paint, how they were shut fast in the frozen sea, the assault they gaue to the pirates ship which had carried away *Auristela*, nor their yelding vnto *Craules*. Hee painted also the fearefull skip of the furious horse, whom of a lion hee had made a lambe. The feast of *Polycarpus* was pourtraied in a little corner, and the crowning of *Periander* being victorious.

Finally, there was no action or memorable accident in this history, which was not represented in this table, euen to their arriual at Lisbon, in the same fashion as they entred : neither omitted hee the death of *Cledio* by *Antonies* arrow, the palace of *Polycarpus* burnt, *Zenobia* hanged on the ships mast, and the hermitage of *Renatus* now supplied by *Rutiso*.

This

house, a Portugall cast himselfe at *Perianders* feet; and embracing his legges, said thus vnto him :

What fortune is this, *Signeur Periander*, that you honour this land with your presence ? maruell not to see, that I call you by your name : for I am one of those twenty which recouered libertie in the Barbarian Ile, when it was on fire, and destroyed by your occasion. I was at the death of the Portugall Knight, *Manuell de Soza*, and departed from you in the Inne where *Maurice* and *Ladislas* arriued in search of *Transilla*, the wife of the one, and daughter of the other : Good fortune brought mee into my country : I certified his death to his kinsfolkes, they beleueed it ; and though I had not assured them that my selfe had seene it, they would neuerthelesse haue giuen credit thereunto, because it is commonly incident to Portugalls to die for loue. A brother of his (who inheriteth his goods) made his funeralls ; putting a stone of white marble in a chappell of his house, as if hee had bene entombed vnderneath : vpon the which is engrauen an epitaph, which I desire you all to see, because I beleuee it wil please you well. *Periander* by these words knew that the man spake truth; but hee remembred not by his face, that hee had euer seene him : but they vvent to the temple which he spake of, and sawe the chappell and tombe : vpon the which was this epitaph in the Portugall tongue:

Heere lieth aliue the memory of dead Manuell de Soza, a Portugall Knight : who, had hee not bene a Portugall, should yet haue lined. Hee died not by the hands of any Castilian, but by those of Loue which can doe all. Thou that passest by, seeke to knowe his life, and his death will grieue thee.

Periander sawe that the Portugall had reason to commend vnto him this epitaph, in which kinde the Portugall Nation account themselues excellent. *Auristela* demanded

manded of the Portugall, what feeling the deceased mans religious mistresse had of the death her louer : who answered, that within few daies after shee knew it, shee passed from this life vnto a better ; either through the austerities which shee alwaies endured, or for the grieve shee had of this accident.

From thence they went to the house of a famous painter, whom *Periander* caused to trace with his pencil in a great table the principall matters of his history. At one side was painted the Barbarian Iland burning amidst the flames ; and ouer against it, the prison. A little further off, were the rafts where he was found by *Arnaldo*, when he tooke him into his ship ; on another part was the frozen Ile where the Portugall died ; the shippe, which the souldiers of *Arnaldo* boared through ; the separation of the skiffe and the long boat : there might bee seene the combate of *Taurisa's* louers, and her death ; here the ship was cut at the keele, which had serued as a tombe to the faire *Auristela*, and all her company : there was the delightfull Ile, where *Periander* sawe in a dreame the two troopes of vertues and vices ; and hard by, the ship where the *Phisiers* swallowed vp the two mariners. He forgot not to paint, how they were shut fast in the frozen sea, the assault they gaue to the pirates ship which had carried away *Auristela*, nor their yeelding vnto *Cratilus*. Hee painted also the fearefull skip of the furious horse, whom of a lion hee had made a lambe. The feast of *Polycarpus* was pourtraied in a little corner, and the crowning of *Periander* being victorious.

Finally, there was no action or memorable accident in this history, which was not represented in this table, euen to their arriuall at Lisbon, in the same fashion as they entred : neither omitted hee the death of *Cleodia* by *Antonies* arrow, the palace of *Polycarpus* burnt, *Zenobia* hanged on the ships mast, and the hermitage of *Remitus* now supplied by *Rutitho*.

This

This table serued as an abridgement of their fortunes; vvhich excused them from relating the same to such as were importunate: and the young *Anthony* interpreted the paintings to such as were most curious. But vvhether the Painter shewed the excellency of his Art, was in the portraict of *Auristela*: in which those that vnderstand the science of painting, obserued an industrious and perfect worke, though therein shee had wrong done vnto her; for there was no pencils point among mankinde, which was able to attaine vnto the representation of her beauty, vnlesse it were guided by a diuine iudgement.

They sojourned at Lisbone ten dayes: all which time they spent in visiting the Churches, and preparing their soules to saluation. After which, hauing taken their leaue of the Viceroy, they departed from the Portugall Knight their host, and from the brother of amorous *Manuel*, with many kinde and louing speeches, & tooke their way to Castile. This departure was in the night, for feare lest the people that followed them, should put them to some hinderance; although the changing of the Barbarians apparell had somewhat abated their admiration.

CHAP. II.

The voyage of the Pilgrimes into Spaine, and the new accidents which there befell them.

THE tender yeares of *Auristela*, and the more tender of *Constance*, required Coaches, and greater furniture then they had, for so long a iourney as they had vntertaken: But the deuotion of *Auristela* which had caused her to promise that shee vould goe a foot to Rome from the place where shee found firme land, conformed the deuotion of the rest agreeable vnto hers, and vvas the cause

cause, that all of them together vwith one consent, as well men as women, made the same vow to goe on foot; adding also this condition, that they would ask almes from port to port, if necessity should so require.

Herewithall *Ricla* put vp her gold, and *Auristela* her crosse of Diamonds, & her pearles for a better occasion; buying onely wherewith to carry their provision, which their shoulders were vnable to beare. They fitted themselves vwith Palmers staues: vvhich serued to stay them, and for their defense, and for scabberds to the swords that were therein. And going out of Lisbon in this humble and Christian apparell, they left it desolate by absence of their beauties, and poore by losse of their presence: as was witnessed by the ditties and songs which the inhabitants composed vpon their departure.

In this manner accustoming themselves to endure the travell of two or three leagues a day, they came to Badajoz, vvhether the Castilian Gouvernour had already receiued Letters from Lisbon concerning the newes of their coming. Being entred into the City, they met in the Inne, a company of famous Comedians, who should play the same night in the Gouvernours house; who scarcely had seene the faces of *Auristela* and *Constance*, but the astonishment and admiration which was wont to surprize others, did surprize them also. But none permitted his minde to be so farre transported, as a Poet who followed this company, as well to reuiue old Comedies, as to make new; an exercise more diuine then honourable, and of greater paines then profit. Notwithstanding, the excellency of Poetrie is as pure as cleere water, or the Sun which passeth by all vnclane things, without being polluted. This is a flash of lightning, issuing from the places where it is inclosed, and shineth, but burneth not; an Art which is worth as much as men will make it worth; an instrument well tuned to accord, which sweetly reioyceth the senses, and ioyneth wealth and honor to his delights. I

say

say then this Poet whom hard necessity had caused to make exchange of the mountaines of Parnassus and the cleere living springs of the wells of *Aguippe* and *Castalia*, for the good wines of the Tauerns, was hee which most admired the beauty of *Auristela*, observing her in his imagination, and finding in his opinion that shee might make an excellent Comedian; without staying to consider if she knew, or not knew the Spanish tongue. He contented himselfe in her stature, was pleased in the strength and elegancy appearing in her beauty. Now in his phantasie, he apparelled her like a man: and presently dispoysing her of that habit, he gaue her another of a Nymph; which hee tooke away also, to attire her with the ornaments and maiesty of a Queen: not leauing any rayment but he gaue it vnto her, eyther to make her wise, or to make her a vanting foole: and generally he imagined her to be graue, merry, discreet, subtile, and vertuous; which parts are ill besitting a faire Comedian. O God, with what facility can a Poets wit discourse and transport it selfe to things impossible! and vpon how many weake foundations doe they erect the frames of their *Chimera's*! He findes euery thing ready, plaine and easie, in such sort, that the more Fortune disappoynts him, so much the more hope hee hath remaining; as appeared in our moderne Poet: who seeing the Table opened wherein the trauels of *Periander* were described, the sight heereof was as great a felicity vnto him as any thing hee euer beheld, through a desire then comming to his imagination to contriue them all into one Comedy. But hee vvas much troubled vvhats name to giue it: if hee should call it a Comedy, Tragedie, or Trage-Comedy. For although hee knew the beginning, hee was ignorant of the middlest, and the end; because *Auristela* and *Periander* were yet aliue, whose death should impose a name to that which should be represented concerning them. But that which most of all turmoyled him, was in thin-

thinking how hee should include a Counsellor and a groomme all together, amongst so many seas, and so many Iles of snowe & fire: yet for all this he nothing despaired to make his Comedy, and to bring-in such a companie in despite of all rules of Poetry, and the Art comickall.

During the time that he went and came by the Inne in this cogitation, he had meanes to speake with *Auristela*: to vvhom hee propounded his intention, shewing how comely and profitable it should be for her to be a Comedian. Hee told her, that in twice comming forth vpon the stage, the mines of gold vould raine vpon her from aboue; because the chiefe personages, all the youth, were like Alchimie, vvhich if it bee put to gold, is gold; if to copper, it is copper; and that the most part yeelded their affections to the Nymphes and Goddesses of the Theatres. He represented vnto her the pleasure of trauell, with three or foure Knights disguised, who should serue her as Louers, and as Pages. Aboue all, he aduanced beyond the clouds, the excellence and honor they would bestow vpon her, in giuing her the chiefest parts, and fairest personages to represent. Finally, he told her, that if the truth of the ancient Castilian Prouerbe vvere iustified, it vvas in faire Comedians: amongst whom, profit and honor is found in the same sacke.

Auristela made him answer, that shee vnderstood nothing of that he spake: he might well perceiue shee vvas vnskillfull in the Spanish tongue, and that when shee should know it, her thoughts aimed at other exercises, if not so pleasing, at the least more decent. The Poet became like a man in despaire, at the resolute answer of *Auristela*: and looking on the feet of his ignorance, hee defaced the vvheele of his vanity. They were to play this night in the Gouvernors house: who hauing vnderstood that our Pilgrimes were in the City, sent to intreat them to come to his lodging to see the Comedy, and receiue testimony of the desire he had to serue them, for that he had

Q

beene

been written vnto from Lisbon, as touching their worthinesse. *Periander* accepted heereof, with the consent of *Auristela*, and the aduice of old *Anthonie*, vvhom they obeyed as the most ancient. The Ladies of the City were vvith the Gouvernors wife; when *Auristela*, *Richa*, and *Constance* at their entrance blinded the eyes, and suspended the hearts of all the assistants: for the different good parts of the strangers, made them to seele these effects. Their humility also augmented the good vvill of those that gaue them entertainment, vvho thereby were obliged to afford them the most honourable places in the Comedy; vvich was, the representation of *Cephalus* and *Procris*, vvhen shee more ielous then became her, and he more inconsiderat then shee, darted at her such a blow, that he rooke away her life, thereby depriving himselfe of all pleasure of his owne. The Comedy being ended, the Ladies began to speake of each particular, touching the beauty of *Auristela*: and of all parts they made one totall, vvich they called *Perfection without default*. And the men said as much of the good grace of *Periander*. They praised also by reflexion, the beauty of *Constance*, and comely proportion of her brother *Anthonie*. They so-iourned three daies in the City, vvhere the Gouvernour shewed himselfe liberall, and his wife magnificent, by the Presents vvich they gaue to our Pilgrimes; vvho promised to enforme them of their aduentures, in what country soeuer they were. Being departed from Badajos, they took their iourney towards our Lady of Gadaloupe: and hauing travelled fise leagues in three daies, they vv ere benighted in a vvood full of infinite numbers of Oakes, and other vvilde trees. The heauen suspended the course and season of the time in the equall balance of the *equinoxes*; so that neyther heat nor cold molested them: and for a need, they might as wel passe the night in the fields as the city.

For this reason, and because they were farre from
the

the villages, *Auristela* would haue them stay in the Cabbins of the shepheards vvhich vvere in their view. Thither they went; and scarcely had gone two hundred pases, but the euening was shut in, so darke, that to guide themselves, they were constrained to direct their eye to alight shining in the shepheards house, to the end that the brightnesse thereof might serue as their north.

The obscurity of the night, and a noyse vvhich they heard, made them all to stay. The young Barbarian took his boaw, which was his faithfull and perpetuall companion: and incontinent a man came thither on horseback, whose face they saw not, who demanded if they were of this country. No truly, answered *Periander*, wee dwell a great way hence: wee are Pilgrime strangers, who are going to Rome, and first to our Lady of Gadaloupe. I doubt not (said hee on horsebacke) but there is much courtesie and charity in your mindes, because you haue such deuotion. Why not, said *Anthony*? consider sir, wherein wee may pleasure you, and you shall finde that your imagination hath not deceiued you. Take then (said the Knight) this chaine of gold, which is worth two hundred Crownes, and take also this pledge vvhich is vnualueable, which you shall carry if it please you into the City of Truxilla, to *Francis Pisarre*, or to *Don Iuan d'Oreillana*, who both are young and rich, and both knownen, not onely in that City, but throughout the world; (In saying this, he put into the armes of *Ricla*, a creature which by this time began to crye, and wrapt vp in swadling clothes, the riches or pouerty vvhich of they could not then discern) And you shall say to one of these two, it is no matter vvhich of them, that they keepe it vntill they know whose it is, which shall be very shortly. And pardon mee, for mine enemies follow me: to whom also you shall say, that you haue not seene me, or else that you saw foure men, which as they passed by, spake of Portugall. Farewell: I can stay no longer; for

though feare giue a man spurs, yet honor giueth the sharpest. And putting his horse forward, he went farre from them like lightning : but hee returned immediately and said ; he is not yet baptizd : and then went on his vvay as fast as his horse could runne.

Consider now the estate of our Pilgrimes. *Ricla* hath an infant in her armes : *Periander* the chaine on his neck : the young *Anthony* his boaw in his hand ; and the old, a purpose to vnſheath his sword which hee carried in his ſtaffe : *Auristela* was in a confuſion, and all of them wondered at this accident.

In conclusion, they reſolued to take their way to the ſhepheards lodging, who, (it might bee) would afford them ſome meanes to ſuccour this infant, which, by his little body and weake voyce, declared that it was but a very little time ſince he was borne. And following this determination, though it coſt them many a fal & knock, they at laſt arriued at the paſtorall houſes of theſe ſhepheards ; where not yet hauing asked lodging, a vvoman came thither on the other ſide, all full of teares, and halfe naked, but ſtriving to hide and reſtraine her weeping the moſt ſhe could : and in her onely peticote which was left, it was apparent that ſhee was rich and of qualitie. The light of the brakes afforded meanes to the Pilgrimes to ſee her face : which ſhe endeauoured alſo to hide, whereby they perceiued that ſhee was no leſſe yong then faire, though *Ricla* (who knew her to be elder) iudged that ſhe was about ſixteen or ſeuenteen yeares old. The ſhepheards asked if any followed her, or if ſhee ſtood in any diſtreſſe that required a preſent remedy.

To whom ſhee answered : The firſt thing that you haue to doe, is to put me vnder the ground : I meane, to hide me in ſuch fort that I may not be found of any that ſhall ſearch after mee. The ſecond, that you giue mee ſomewhat to eat : for I feele I am ready to die through faintnes,

Our

Our diligent care, said an old shepherd, shall shew wee are charitable; & quickly putting certain skins of goats and sheepe in the hollow part of a great Oake, he made them in fashion of a bed, whereon hee put this woman, and shut her therein; giuing her such as he could, which was soppes in milke, and had giuen her wine if she would haue had it. Afterward hee hanged other skinnes about the hollowe places of the tree, as though it had beene to dry them.

When *Ricla* had seene these things; and ghesling that this woman should bee the mother of the infant which she had in her armes, shee approached to the shepheard, and praied him to extend the charitie which he had shewed towards the woman, vpon this little infant before he should die for hunger; telling him in few words, in what manner one had giuen the same vnto her. The shepheard answered to her meaning, and not to her vvords; calling one of his companions, whom he commaded to take the infant, and to carry him to the goats fould, and cause him to suck one of them. This was no sooner done, but horsemen came to the same lodgings; inquiring for the woman and the Knight that carried the infant: whose last cry little wanted, but they might haue heard. But because no person told them any newes of that which they sought for, they passed further with very great haste; leauing the shepheards well eased of their care: with whom our Pilgrimes passed the night, being better accommodated then they looked for; and the other had more ioy then they hoped, in seeing themselues so well accompanied.

CHAP. III.

Who the Gentlewoman was whom they had inclosed in the tree.

THE pitifull shepherd, who was chiefest commander of the flockes, provided all things necessary for entertainment of his guests without any impeachment. The infant sucked the goats teats: the Pilgrimes and the woman shut vp, tooke such things as were given them. All desired to knowe the causes which had brought this fugitive and desolate beauty into this place, at such an houre, and in such an estate: but *Amisela* gave counsell not to enquire any thing of her vntill the morning: for if sudden alarmes will not suffer one to relate his ioyfull fortunes, much lesse will they permit any man to speake of those that be sorrowfull. And the antient shepheard, though he often went to the Oake where shee was inclosed, yet he enquired nothing of her affaires, but onely of her health.

To whom she answered, that albeit she had many occasions to be ill at ease; yet she should be very well, might she see her selfe deliuered from those that sought her, who were her father and her brethren. As for our Pilgrimes, they concluded with the shepheards before they slept, that he which had carried the infant to the goats fould, should beare it and the chaine, and put it to nurse with a sister of the antient shepheard, whose abode was in a village about two leagues from thence.

In conferring about this matter, in supping, and in the small time wherein sleep got possession of their eyes, and silence of their tongues, the night passed, and the day came: which was welcome to them all, except vnto her who was inclosed in the Oake; who scarcely durst behold the light of the Sunne. Herewithall hauing first placed

placed sentinels neere and farre from the company, to discouer if any came, they tooke her out of the tree, that she might take aire, and they knewe of her that which they desired. And by the brightnes of the day, they saw that of her face to bee admirable : so that they doubted whether to her or *Constance* they should giue the second place of beautie : for wheresoeuer *Amistela* was, shee euer got the preheminance. They made many intreaties to dispose her to declare her fortune : whom she satisfied in this manner ;

Although I cannot informe you of my life vvithout discouering vnto you my fault, yet I had rather confesse the same in obeying your curiositie, then leaue you anie subiect to complaine of my silence. My name is *Felicia* of the *Voyce* : my country, a citie not farre hence : my parents are more noble then rich : and my beautie, when it was not withered as at this present it is, was of some estimation in the world. Ouer against the citie where I was borne, liued a rich Gentleman, whose vertues vvere equall to his riches : This man had a sonne, who at this present sheweth himselfe no lesse an heire of his fathers vertues then of his goods. At the same village there was also another Knight with his sonne : both which liue in so honourable a mediocritie, that though they bee not aduanced by riches, yet they are not abased by pouertie. My father and brethren would marry me to this second young Gentleman ; contemning the intreaties vvich the first & richest made to haue me to wife. But I, whom the heauen reserued to this misfortune wherein I am, gaue my selfe to the rich man, vnknowne to my father or my brethren : for mother I haue none, to my greater mishappe. We met alone diuers times : for in like cases occasion is neuer wanting ; but contrariwise maketh things impossible to be easie for such an effect.

By these interviewes and thefts of loue, my gowne grew little, and my belly great, neither was mine infamy

lesse, if it may be tearmed infamy that two married louers
 conuerse together. In the meane while my father & bre-
 thren agreed to marry mee vvith the other, not speaking
 to me a vvord thereof; and that in such poast-haste, that
 they brought him the last night to their house in compa-
 ny of two of his neere kinsmen, vvith purpose to bettorh
 vs. I was exceedingly troubled when I saw *Lewis Anthony*
 come in, who is the man they would haue to be my hus-
 band: And my vexation vvvas the more when my father
 willed me to enter into my chamber, & dresse me, because
 immediately I should be married to *Lewis Anthony*. It was
 not about 2 daies ere I expected the houre to be brought
 a bed, and with the sodainness of this newes vn hoped for,
 I was like one dead. I went into my chamber, saying that
 I went to make me ready; & cast my selfe in the armes of
 my maid, to whom I communicated my secrets, and weep-
 ing said: Alas *Leonor*: this is the last day of my life: *Lewis*
Anthony is in the hall, waiting when I shal come forth to
 espouse him. Consider if this be not a rigorous distresse,
 & the most cruell that euer was seen to befall an unhappy
 woman: Alas my sweet heart, I die: I feele my daies are at
 an end; & with these words I cast a creature on the earth:
 which brought the maid into such a quandary, and blind-
 ed my iudgement in such manner, that I abode without
 knowing what to do, looking that my father or my bre-
 thren should come in; and that in stead of marrying me,
 they should send me to my buriall. Hitherto *Felician*a had
 continued her story, when the sentinels whom they ap-
 pointed to watch, gaue a signall that people came. Where-
 fore the old Shepheard would haue put *Felician*a againe
 into the oake: but the sentinels telling them the compa-
 ny tooke another way, they were all assured, and *Felici-*
ana thus prosecuted her discourse. Consider sirs in what
 perill I was that night: The bride-groome stayed for
 mee in the Hall, the adulterer (if he may be so tearmed)
 in a garden adioyning to the house (with none other
 intent

intent but to speake vvith mee; for hee knew not in what extremity I was, nor of the comming of *Lewis Anthony*) I was without feeling, my Damosell troubled with the infant in her armes, and my Father and brethren vringing meto come forth for this vnhappy marriage. Such a shocke as this, might ouerthrow a stout heart then mine, and a better discourse then I was able to make. In the middest whereof, my father came into the chamber before I was well come to my selfe, saying vnto mee:

Come forth daughter as thou art, for thy beauty will recompence thy want of ornaments. I belecue that the infants crying, which my chambermaid was gone to carry to *Rosario*, (so vv as hee called which begot it) came to my fathers hearing, which much troubled him; and taking a candle in his hand, hee looked vpon my face. Againe hee heard the infant cry; and taking hold of his sword, followed the voyce which hee had heard. The brightnesse of the sword dazeled my sight, and put feare into the middest of my soule: and as the desire to preserue life is naturall, feare to lose it, gaue mee courage to prouide a remedy. My father had scarcely turned his backe, but in the same case that I was, I went downe by a small paire of staires into a lower chamber, from whence I easily got into the street, and from the street into the fields, not knowing what way to keepe, nor vvither to take my journey. Finally, pricked on with feare, I went as if I had gotten wings on my feet, more then my weaknesse would haue promised. A thousand times I thought to haue throwne my selfe downe from a steepe place, to end my misfortunes with my life; & as often to sit down, or lye along vpon the earth, and suffer my selfe to bee found of those that sought after me: But perceiuing the light in these Cabins, I endeououred to seeke out, if not a redresse, yet at least some ease of my misfortunes; which thanks be to God, & your charitable curtesie, I haue found.

Heere the sorrowfull *Felisciana* ended her discourse, leaving

uing the company no lesse sad, then in admiration of her hard fortune. *Periander* then told how he had found the Knight, who had giuen them the infant and chaine of gold, as before you haue heard. Alas, said *Felician*, is it not peraduenture mine? and he *Rosario* that gaue it vnto you? If I should see him, it may be I should knowe him: not by the face, which I neuer saw; but perhaps by the swadling clothes: for in what blankets could my chambermaid wrap it vp, which could be vnknown vnto me? Besides, it may be the bloud vwill doe his office, and by a secret feeling make me knowe that which so neerly concerneth me. Heereunto the Sheeheard answered: The childe is now in my Farme house, in the custody of my sister, and my neece: I will cause them this day to bring it hither, where you may make the trialls which you desire. In the meane while, mistresse, take your rest: for my shepheards and this tree, shall be as clowds opposed against their eyes that seeke to finde you out.

CHAP. IIII.

How our Pilgrimes, together with Felician de la Voix, take their way to Guadalupe, and of a lamentable and memorable aduenture.

I Perceiue, brother, said *Auristela* to *Periander*, that misfortunes and perils haue not onely iurisdiction vpon the sea, but likewise on the land; and that ill chances as well are incident to those that are hidden in the vallies, as on them that are exalted aboue the mountaines. Shee whom they call Fortune, of whom I haue heard men speake so often, and who they say taketh away, & giueth good things, as she pleaseth, and to whom shee pleaseth; I say doubtlesse shee cannot but be blinde and phantastical, seeing she delighteth to lift vp those that are thrown to the earth, and cast downe them that are exalted aboue
the

the mountaines of the moone. I contemplate this poore gentlewoman, who within these few houres vvas in her house, accompanied with her father, brethren, and seruitures, hoping to giue some remedy to her poynant desires: and now I see her hidden in a hollow tree, fearing the flies of the ayre, and the least wormes of the earth.

I confesse, that this is not the fall of a Prince: but it is alwaies an accident which may serue for example to those who will serue such maids as are inhibited them. Al this, brother, moueth me to beseech you to haue due respect to mine honour, which I haue committed into your hands euer since I came out of the power of my father & your mother. And though I knowe your vertue by experience, as well in the solitarie deserts, as in peopled cities; yet I feare lest the alteration of time should change your thoughts, which of themselves are mutable. Your interest in this matter is as much as mine: my honour is yours, the same desire gouerneth vs, the same hope sustaineth vs. The iourney wee haue vndertaken is long; but not so but it may be ended: so that sloth or idleness doe not hinder it. Now the heauens, to whom I render a thousand thanks, haue brought vs into Spaine out of the dangerous company of *Arnaldo*. Now we may passe in security from all shipwracks, tempests, and pirates: for according to the renowne which Spaine hath gotten, to bee more peaceable then any other kingdome, we may promise vnto our selues an happy voyage.

I see well, sister, answered *Periand*, that you feare as a woman, but encourage your selfe as prudent. I would I were able, in allwaging your iust suspicions, to giue you new proofes of my will; although those that are past, may well suffice. As for *Feluciana*, we cannot but lament with her, for her misfortune, and carry the infant vnto Truxilla, as hee that gaue vs both it and the chaine, intreated vs. For as touching the residue, I thinke wee haue nothing else to doe in these villages. Whilest they were in these

these tearmes, the old Shepheard and his sister brought the childe which they had gone to fetch at the farmehouse, to see if *Feliciana* could knowe it. Twise or thrise she beheld it, and tooke off the bands wherein it was tied, and could not in any thing perceiue that she had born this childe, nor finde any motion of naturall affection towards it. No, said she, these are not the clothes which my chambermaid had provided to wrap vp that vvhich should be borne of me, neither did I euer see this chaine in the custodie of *Rosanio*. This pledge belongs to some other: for I should neuer bee so happy to finde it againe after I had lost it. Yet I haue often heard say, that *Rosanio* hath friends at *Truxilla*: but I remember not any of their names.

Hereupon the shepheard said, that seeing he that had giuen them the infant, had also charged them to carry it to *Truxilla*, he suspected that it was *Rosanio*: wherefore hee thought good that his sister, with two of his Shepheards, should beare it to *Truxilla*, to see if it should bee receiued by any one of these Knights to whom it was directed.

To this, *Feliciana* answered with sighes; casting her selfe at the shepheards feet, in signe that she approued his aduice. All the Pilgrimes were likewise of this opinion; and giuing the chaine to the woman, they furnished her for the iourney. She was set vpon one of the shepheards beafts, and they concluded that she should goe before to *Truxilla*, and that the Pilgrimes should follow, after they had beene at our Lady of Gadalupe. All this was executed as they had deuised, and that with expedition: for necessitie cannot endure any delay. *Feliciana* shewed her selfe much obliged to those which so sincerely had vvedded themselues to vndertake the charge of her affaires: and hauing vnderstood that the Pilgrims went to Rome, through an affection she had to the beautie and discreti-
on of *Auristela*, the curtelie of *Periander*, the amorous con-

conuerſation of *Conſtance* and *Ricla* her mother, and the praying ſocietie of both *Anthonies*, the father and ſon, and principally willing to turne her backe to that land where her honour was buried; ſhe beſought them to be admitted into their company, ſaying, that in as much as ſhe had been a Pilgrime in committing a fault, ſhe would be ſo in grace, if it pleaſed God to giue her leaue.

Shee had no ſooner made her thought knowne, but *Auriſtela* ſatisfied her deſire; as willing to exempt her from the aſſaults and feares that purſued her: onely ſhee made ſome difficultie how ſhee could take this iourney ſo ſoone after her childe-birth. But the ſhepherd tolde them that there was no difference betwixt the lying-in of a woman, and the yeaning of an ewe; and that like as the ſheepe immediately after lambing, goes forth vvith her fellowes as ſhe did before: ſo women may reſume their wonted exerciſes after their deliuey; but that vſe had brought-in theſe delicacies amongſt women, to play the nice wantons in their beds for certaine daies after they had childed. For you ſhall not finde, ſaid hee, that *Eue* vpon her firſt childe did keepe her bed, or was afraid of the aire, or vſed any of theſe precautions which are obſerued in theſe daies. And therefore, miſtreſſe, take a good heart, follow your intention: for it cannot but be holie, ſeeing it is ſo chriſtianlike.

To this, *Auriſtela* replied, that ſhe ſhould not ſtay behinde for want of a Pilgrimes habit: for I cauſed two to be made with this which I haue on, whereof I will giue her one, vpon condition that ſhe ſhall tell mee for what cauſe they call her *Felician* of the Voice, if this bee not the ſurname of her houſe.

This name, answered *Felician*, neither my houſe nor kinred gaue mee; but the common conſent of all thoſe that heard mee, for ſinging in ſuch ſort, that they haue left vnto me this name, *Felician* of the Voice. We are now come to ſuch a time, vvherein I ought rather to mourne
then

then sing: but if I euer dry vp my teares, you shall heare, if not ioyfull songs, yet at least sad complaints, vvhich while I ligh, shall make you reioyce.

Vpon this which *Feliciana* spake of her voice, euerie one of them had an extreame desire to heare her sing. but they durst not intreat her, calling to remembrance how shee had said, the time rather inuited her to weepe. The day following she put off her apparell, and put on those of a Pilgrime, which *Anrifestela* had promised her. Shee tooke from her necke a collar of pearles, and two iewels which might make her to be esteemed rich and of a good house, if any ones qualitie may be iudged of by such ornaments. *Recla* tooke them, as generall treasurer of all their goods: And *Feliciana* was the second Pilgrim; *Anrifestela* the first; and *Constance* the third; although in some mens opinions, *Constance* deserued the second: for as touching the first, no beautie of this age could contend with *Anrifestela*.

Feliciana had scarcely put on the habite of a Pilgrime, but this new estate produced in her, new thoughts; fortifying the desire which before she had to see herselfe in the way to Rome. Which when *Anrifestela* knew, with one consent they departed from the shepheards, and all together with easie pafe went to *Caceres*: and if at times anie of them were weary, they put them with their stuffe, or they rested awhile on the banke of some riuer or fountaine, or in some greene meadowe which thereto allured them. Thus repose and trauell, with sloth and diligence kept them company: sloth, in walking little; diligence, in iourning euery day. But as good desires haue not alwaies an happy end, at least for the most part, vvithout some obstacle impeaching the same; the heauens permitted that this little troope (which, distinguished into diuers kinds of beauties, had yet one onely intention) was hindred by this occasion which you shall now heare. The soft grasse of a delicate meadow had inticed them there

there to sit downe, and the cleere waters of a small streame refreshed their faces. A quicke set of diuers high bushes round about them, inclosed all parts like a wall, which was a fit and necessary place for them to rest in; vvhhen a young man, attired after the fashion of the Country, broke the hedge, and came and fell downe at their feete on his face, hauing a sword thrust in at his backe, whose point came out at his breast: and in saying. *My God be my comfort*, these words were ended vvith his life. And though all of them, astonished at this strange spectacle arose vp together to succour him, yet the first that vvas with him was *Periander*; who finding that he was dead, drew the sword out of his body. The two *Antonies* leaped ouer the hedge, to see if they could espye this cruell and trecherous murtherer: for the stroke being giuen behinde, sufficiently declared that he had bene slaine cowardly, and by treason: but not seeing any one, they came backe to their company; where the dead mans youth, stature, and gallant personage moued them to pittie. They searched him throughout, and found vnder his callocke of gray veluet, which he wore ouer his doublet, a chaine foure times double, of small gold linkes, whereon hung also a crucifixe of gold: and betweene his doublet and shirt, they found in like sort, within a boxe of Ebony richly wrought, an excellent picture of a woman, about which were writtē these foure verses:

*This liuing portrait of eternall beauty,
Sees, speaks, and burnes, and makes me cold like yce:
Which heere declareth by great nouelty,
So small a place such great force can comprise.*

By these verses *Periander* ghetted that his death proceeded from some amorous cause: they ransacked his pockets, and searched him againe all ouer, but found not any thing to giue them notice of his estate. And as they were
a fear-

a-searching, foure men came vvith crosse-boaws bent: by vvhich tokens olde *Anthony* knew that they vvere Archers of the holy Fraternity, vvhereof one cried out; Stay, you robbers and murtherers, make not an end to spoyle him: the time is come vvherein you shall be chastised for your crime. There is no such matter, answered young *Anthony*: heere is not any theefe; for to them that are such, vve are all enemies. It so appeares, replied the Archer, by this dead man, of vvhom you haue yet your hands all bloody, and his spoyles in your power, vvitnessing the murther. No, no, you are theeues and murtherers, and as such you shall be punished: neyther shall the cloake of Christian vertue vvhich you weare to hide your robberies, auaille you to any purpose. Young *Anthony* answered heereunto, by setting an arrow in his boaw, and pearcing him quite through the arme, though he aimed to haue shot him through the body. The other Archers beeing eyther taught vvisedome by the folly or temerity of their companion, or ninding to apprehend them vvith greater security, turned their backs, calling for ayde: At vvhich cry, as it were by miracle, more then twenty Archers of the same Fraternity vvere together: vvho in playing vvith their Crosse-bowes on those people that defended not themselves, tooke them easily, and carried them all to prison, vvithout hauing respect to the beauty of *Auristela*, and the other Pilgrimes, and conducted them vvith the dead body to *Caceres*; vvhere a Knight of the order of *S. James* vvvas Gouvernour: Who seeing the dead body, and the Archer vvounded, the information of the other Archers, and the tokens of blood vvhich vvere found on *Periander*, would (by his Lieutenants aduice) examine them by torture, although *Periander* alledged veritable matters in his defence, shewing the papers vvhich hee had to assure his iourney, and the permission he had obtained at Lisbone. Hee shewed also the Table vvherein their fortunes were painted, which

which was expounded by young *Anthony*. These proofes fufpended the opinion of the Iudges in fauor of their innocency. Their Treasurer *Ricla*, who little knew the conditions of thefe Cormorants, offring to one of them I know not how much money, thereby had like to haue marred all: for thefe pen-malters, perceiuing that thefe Pilgrimes had wooll on their backes, vvould shear them to the bones, according to their good cuftome: and had fo done indeed, if heauen had fuffered that the forces of their innocence had not furmounted the power of their malice. But it happened that an Hoft or Inne-keeper of the place hauing feen the dead body, & knowing it, went to fpeake vvith the Gouvernour, and faid vnto him: Sir, this man whom the Archers brought dead, parted yefterday in the morning from my houfe, in company of another, feeming to be a Knight. A little before his departure, he locked himfelfe with me in my chamber, faying vnto mein fecret; Mine hof, I coniure you by the faith which you haue, that if I come not againe in fix daies, you open this paper vvwhich I giue you, before the Iuflice: and in fo faying he gaue this which I put into your hands, vvherein I imagine you fhall finde fomething concerning this ftrange accident. The Gouvernour tooke the paper and opened it, finding therein thefe very words:

I came from his Maiefties Court fuch a day, and after went in the company of Don Sebaftien of Sorcençe, my kinsman, who prayed mee to accompany him in a certaine voyage, that touched his Honour and Life. I, to the intent I might not verifie certaine falfe fufpicions which hee had againft mee, and affuring my felfe in mine innocency, gaue way to his malice, and bore him company, beleening that he would bring me in fome place to kill mee. If this fall out, and my body be found, let him knowe that I am flaine by treafon, and dead without fail. And the fupfercription was,

Don Diego de Parraces.

R

The

The Gouvernor sent this paper vvith diligence to Ma-drill, where the Iustice immediately made search for the murthrer in his house: who comming home the same night that he was sought for, and hearing the noyse, turned his horse reines without alighting: since which time no man can tell what is become of him.

The crime remained unpunished, the dead man vvas dead, and the prisoners were set at liberty. The chaine of *Ricla* was broken for costs of Iustice; the pourtrait vvas left there to please the Gouvernours eyes; the Archers wound was recompenced; young *Anthony* tooke the Table againe: and leauing the people full of admiration, *Feliciana* hauing kept her bed during the continuance of the procelle, feigning sickenelse for feare lest shee should be knowne; they tooke their iourney towards Gadaloupe, talking by the way of that which had befallen them, and desiring some occation to heare *Feliciana* sing; who had sung, in regard there is no grieve which time will not abate, or end with the life: but onely because shee vvould obserue that which was due to her misfortunes, her songs were no other then teares and mournings. But they were somewhat mitigated by meeting vpon the way with the pitifull shepheards sister, who told them that she had left the childe in custody of *Francis Pisarre*, and *Don Iuan d' Orellana*; who coniectured that it could pertaine to none else, but to their friend *Resino*, according to the place where the pilgrimes found it, not knowing any other thereabouts who reposed such confidence in them. In conclusion, whose euer it bee (said the country woman) they told me, that hee that so boldly trusted them, should not be deceiued in his opinion of their liberality. If any thing yet remaine wherein I may serue you, here I am with the chaine; for I haue not yet made it away, because that of my conscience obligeth mee more then this of gold. To whom *Feliciana* made answere, that shee should keepe it, wishing that she might many yeares enjoy

enjoy it, without being driuen to such necessity as to forgoe it; because rich pledges of poore people tarry not long in their houses. The Country woman departed from them; by whom they sent a thousand commendations to her brother and the rest of the shepheards: and our Pilgrimes by little and little came to the holy land of Gadalupe.

CHAP. V.

The description of our Lady Church at Gadalupe, and of that which befell to Feliciano as she sung.

OVr Pilgrimes had scarcely set their feet in one of the two entries of the vally enuironing the high mountaines of Gadalupe, but at euery step they made, new subiects of admiration arose in their mindes: which then came to their height, vwhen they saw the great and sumptuous Monastery, vvhose vvalls enclosed the holy image of the Empreſſe of heauen; the holy image vvwhich is the enlargement of prisoners, the file of their irons, and ease of their passions; the health of the sicke, the counsell of the afflicted, and the mother of Orphans. They entred into her Temple: and in stead of Tyrian purple, Syrian Damaske, or Satin embroydered vvith gold of Millane, vvwhich they thought to finde hanging on her vvalls, they found crouches, vvwhich such as halted had left there, eyes and armes of vvax, vvwhich the blinde and lame had hung vp; and napkins taken from dead men, all afterward liuing, whole, free, and contented after extreame distresse, through the mercy of the mother of mercies. Our deuout Pilgrimes were so posselt vvith an apprehension of these miraculous ornaments, that turning their eyes to euery side of the temple, they thought they saw Captiues come
R 2 flying

flying in the ayre, vvrapped in their chaines to hang them vpon the holy valls ; the diseased there to hang their stults, and the dead their vinding-sheets, seeking new places vvhere to put them, because there vvas no more roome left in the Temple.

This nouelty vvchich neyther *Periander* nor *Auristela* had as yet seene, and much lesse *Ricla* and her children, held them all amazed : they could not haue their fill in beholding what they saw, nor in admiring what they admired. In this maruell kneeling down, they worshipped God, beseeching his holy mother, that in honor of this image, he vvould be pleased to turne his eyes vpon them. But the most vvonderfull of all this vvas, that *Felciana* kneeling vvith the other, her eyes full of teares, her hands on her stomacke, her lips closed, and the rest of her body vvithout motion or token that shee vvas a liuing creature, gaue passage to her voyce, and began to sing verses which shee had perfectly by heart : vvhereby shee suspended the mindes of all that gaue eare vnto her, satisfied the desire which they had to heare her, and made the prayes which shee had given her selfe, to be beleueed.

Shee had sung already foure Stanzes ; when certaine strangers entred into the Temple, who for deuotion, or by custome kneeled downe, harkening with admiration vnto *Felciana*, vvho continued her singing. And one of them vvchich appeared to be most in yeares, turning to another who was by his side, said thus vnto him: Eyther this is the voyce of an Angel confirmed in grace, or of my daughter *Felciana*. We need make no quession, answered the other, but it is very she; but she shall not long so continue, if mine arm faile me not at this blowe. And vvith these words he tooke hold of his dagger ; and with disordered pases, a pale colour, and troubled senses, ranne directly to *Felciana*. The venerable olde man made haste after him ; and staying him by the shoulders, he said thus : Heere is not, my sonne, a theater of miseries,

nor

nor a place of chastisement : Let time haue his course, because this traitresse cannot escape vs : be not so rash; and thinking to correct the fault of another, cast not on thy selfe the punishment of thine owne offence. These words, & the noyse therupon made, sealed vp *Felicianas* mouth, and troubled the Pilgrimes, with all those in the Temple, vvho could not withstand the father and brother of *Felicianas*, from dragging her out of the Church into the street, where instantly all the inhabitants of the place were assembled together vvith the Iustice; vvho tooke her out of their hands, that seemed rather to be her executioners, then of her parentage. Being in this confusion, the father exclaiming against his daughter, and the brother against his sister, and the Iustice defending her, till hee might haue perfect knowledge of the fact, six horsemen came into the same place: whereof two were known immediately, one to be *Francis Pifarre*, the other *Don Iuan d'Orellana*; who, arriuing in this tumult with another Knight whose face was couered with a scarfe of black taffata, enquired the cause. Answer was made, that the Iustice would protect this pilgrime from two men that were purposed to kill her; whereof one said he was her father, the other her brother. *Pifarre* & *Don Iuan* gaue attention hereunto, whilst the other masked Knight, alighting from his horse, drew his sword; and discouering his face, placed himselfe on *Felicianas* part, and cried out in this manner: To me, my masters, it is to mee that you should adreisse your selues to take reuenge for the fault of *Felicianas*, if to marry her selfe against the vvill of her parents deserueth death. *Felicianas* is my vvife, and I am *Rosario* as you see; vvho am not of so meane estate as not to deserue that you should grant that vnto me vvwhich I haue gotten already by mine owne industry. I am Nobly borne, and rich, neyther is it reasonable that *Lewis Arthony* should take away for your pleasure, that vvwhich I haue gained by my fortune.

And if you thinke I haue offended you, that I am come to this issue without your priuity, pardon mee; for the forces of loue are accustomed to trouble sounder iudgements. And because I saw you so much ouer-swayed in fauour of *Lewis Anthony*, this made me not to obserue towards you that respect which I ought: for which once more I pray you to pardon me.

Whille *Rosario* spake these words, *Feliciana* was as it were glued fast vnto him; houlding him by the girdle with her hand, wholly trembling, wholly fearefull, wholly sad, and herewithall wholly beautifull. But before her father or her brother answered a word, *Francis de Pizarre* embraced her father; and *Don Iuan d'Oreillana*, her brother, who were great friends. *Pizarre* said to the father; Where is your discretion, Signior *Don Pedro*? how is it possible that you should contriue your owne harme? See you not that these faults carry with them rather their excuses then their punishments? What is there in *Rosario*, which can hinder him from deseruing your daughter? and what will become of your daughter henceforward, if she lose *Rosario*?

These, or like words *Don Iuan* spake to *Feliciana's* brother, and moreouer said thus:

Signior *Don Sancho*, choler neuer promised an happie end of her imperuosities: this is a passion of the soule; & seldome can the minde passionately affected, performe any thing well that it vndertaketh. Your sister hath had skill to chuse a good husband: and for you to take reuenge for this, that they haue not obserued such respect as they ought you, it were to put in hazard, to overthrow the foundation of your quiet. Marke you sir, I haue a nephew of yours in my house, whom you cannot disclaime without disclaiming your selfe, I see doth so much resemble you. The answer which the father made to *Pizarre*, was to goe to his sonne, and take the dagger out of his hand; and immediately ranne to embrace *Rosario*; who,

who, falling at his feet whom he knew to be his father in lawe, againe asked him forgiuenesse. *Feliciana* kneeled downe before her father; weeping, mourning, and then falling into a transe. All the standers by were full of ioy: the father and sonne got the reputation to bee prudent, and their friends discreet. The Gouvernour brought them all to his house: the Prior of the monastery feasted them: the Pilgrimes visited the holy reliques, confessed their sinnes, and receiued the Sacrament. During this time, being of three daies continuance, *Pisarre* sent for the child which the shepheards sister had brought vnto him, and was the same which *Rosario* had deliuered to the Pilgrimes with the chaine, the night that he met them: who was so faire, that his grandfather, forgetting all iniuries, a thousand times bleisled the father and mother that had engendred him; and taking him in his armes, bathed his face with teares for tender affection; which hee dried with kisses, and wiped with his white haire.

In the end peace was made betwixt all those that were at variance: *Feliciana* with her husband, her father and her brother returned to their village, with the little infant, which *Feliciana* would beare with her; leauing with their friends no lesse ioy then they carried away.

CHAP. VI.

The continuation of our Pilgrimes iourney, and the memorable history of a Polonian.

THe Pilgrimes remained foure daies at Gadaloupe; during which time they began to see the maruells of this holy Monasterie: I say began, for to finish it is impossible. Fromthence they went to Truxilla: where they were feasted by the two Knights, *Francis de Picarre*, and *Don Inan d' Oreillana*, not without speaking of *Felici-*

ciana her successe, whose discretion, equall to her voyce, they much praised, and the good proceedings of her father and brother; *Auristela* highly exalting the offers which *Feliciana* had made her vpon her departure. From *Truxilla* they went to *Talauera*: where they found preparation was made to solemnize that feast in honour of the Virgin of virgins, which of old time was kept for the Goddesse *Venus*.

About fixe leagues from *Talauera*, they sawe before them a Pilgrim all alone, who sate vpon the green grasse of a small meadow; inuited thereunto either by delectableness of the place, or trauell of her iourney. They came where she was, and found her of such a gallant feature, that she obligeth vs to describe her. Her age seemed to passe the limits of youth, and approach to the brinke of olde yeares. Her face was of such a forme, that the eye of a Lynx could not see her nostrills: for she had none, but them that were so flatte that no man could lay hold thereof with pincers. Her eies stucke so farre out of her head, that they gaue a shadow. Her habite was a torne cloke reaching to her heeles, on which she bore a scrippe halfe couerd with leather, and so full of patches that one could hardly knowe whether it were of *Marroquin* or curried goats skins. Her girdle was a rope of bulrushes, which was more like the cable of a gallie, then the girdle of a Pilgrime. She had an olde hat on her head without band or scallop shell, and seame-rent shooes on her feet. In her hand was a Pilgrimes staffe much resembling a sheephooke, with an iron pike at the end. At her left side hung a very meane *calabace*, and a paire of beads on her necke, whereof the balles were as big as bowls. In effect, she was wholly tattered, wholly penitent, and (as afterward was perceiued) of wicked disposition.

Our Pilgrimes at their comming saluted her, and she returned their salutations with such a voice as might be hoped from her nose. They demanded whither she went
in

in pilgrimage : and moued through the beauty of the place, they late round about her, letting the beasts feed that carried their baggage which serued for their vvardrobe, expenses and ambrie; and satisfying their hunger, they chearefully inuited her to such as they had. Shee, answering to the question which they had moued vnto her, said thus :

My Pilgrimage is such as certaine Pilgrims put in vre, and is alwaies to the places neereſt at hand to excuſe their idlenes. I am now going to the city of Toledo, to viſit the ſanctuary : from thence I will goe to the holy Veronica of Geanes, and there ſtay till the laſt ſunday in Aprill : at which day ſhall bee celebrated, about three leagues from the towne of Anduſar, the feaſt of our *Lady of the head* ; which is one of the greateſt feaſts that euer were made in former times, or are now at this preſent. I would if I could poſſible withdrawe mine imagination from the place where it is ſettled, and ſet it forth by my words, to the intent you might knowe the reaſon which I haue to commend it : but I will leaue it to a better wit then mine. This feaſt is painted in a gallerie of the Palace at Madrill where our Kings reſide ; with all the particularities that can poſſibly be vttered. There is a rocke, vpon vvhofe top is a monaſtery, where this holy image is enſhrined, called *The image of the head* ; becauſe it taketh the name of the ſame rocke antiently tearmed *The head*, becauſe it is ſituate in the middeſt of an open and ſolitarie plaine, without any other rock or mountaine thereabouts : the height thereof is a quarter of a league, and the circuit is twiſe as much. It is placed in this large and delightfull ſeat, which is alwaies green through the moiſture of the riuer Châdula, which continually (as in reuerence) kiſſes the banks thereof. The place, the rock, the image, the miracles, the infinite number of people which haue recourſe thither farre and neere, and the ſolemne holy-day that I ſpeake of, make it famous in the world, but principally

pally renowned in Spaine, about all other places. The Pilgrimes were all in suspense at the relation of this new, though aged Pilgrime woman, and began to haue an earnest desire in their mindes to goe with her and see all these maruels: But their former longing to end their intended iourney, would not suffer the same to be hindred by other desires. After that I haue beene there, said the Pilgrime, I know not vvhither I shall iourney next: but I doubt not to find means how to employ mine idle time amongst the pilgrimes. It seemeth, said olde *Anthony*, that you doe not much allow of Pilgrimages. But I doe, said she, and know well that many of them are iust, commendable, and holy, as they haue beene in times past, and shall be hereafter. But I am bad with bad pilgrimes, which make a base profit of holiness, and an infamous gaine of vertue, robbing them of their almes who are poore indeed.

During this discourse, they saw a man on horsebacke in the high-way; who comming neer, as he would haue vailed his bonet to salute them, his beast, putting his foot in a hole, fell downe vpon the earth with his master. They all presently ranne to succour him, and the yong *Anthony* stopped his beast which was a strong mule, the others gaue him water to drinke; and found that his harme was not so great as they thought, saying, that he might get vp againe, and proceed on his iourney.

To whom he answered; It may be, God hath suffered me to fall in this plaine, to lift mee out of those downefalls whither mine imagination hath carried my soule: and though mine affaires doe not so concerne you, that you should desire to knowe them, yet I will haue you vnderstand that I am a stranger; a Polonian by nation. I departed from my country being a childe, and came into Spaine, as to the center of strangers, and common mother of other nations. I serued the Spaniards, learned the Castilian tongue, which I speake as you see; and moued

ued by a generall desire to see forraine countries, I went to Portugall vnto the city of Lisbon. And the same evening I entred, an accident happened, which if you beleue you shall doe much, and if you beleue it not, the matter is not great: for truth will bee truth although no man credit it.

Periander, admiring the compendious narration of this passenger, and hearing him with pleasure, villed him to proceed in that hee had to say: for they all beleued him, because they were all curteous, and experimented in worldly things.

Heerewithall the passenger hauing recouered his spirits, went forward in this manner; I say, the first night I entred into Lisbon, as I walked through one of the chiefe streets to change mine Inne, because that, where I had alighted, disliked me; a disguised Portugall (whom I met at a narrow passage, and not very cleane) thrust me so rudely, that he ouerthrew me to the earth.

The wrong hee did mee, stird vp my choler; I referred the reuenge to my sword, which I tooke into my hand, and the Portugall did the like very stoutly: and the blinde night, and blinder fortune directed my swords poynt on mine enemies face, who falling backward, yeilded vp his soule where it pleased God. Immediately feare presented before mine eyes that which I had done: I committed my safety to my legges, but knew not whither to goe: yet the noyse of the people, which seemed to run after me, gaue wings to my feet, and with vnreasonable steps I turned downe the street, searching where to hide mee, or some place where to make cleane my sword, to the end it might not accuse me, if by aduenture the Iustice should apprehend me. Being then well-nigh dead for feare, I perceiued light in a house of quality, into which I vvent, not knowing to what purpose. I found open an hall well furnished, from whence I passed into a chamber better adorned, and following the light appearing in another chamber.

chamber, I found in a rich bed a Lady, who sitting vp as one wholly in amazement, asked who I was, what I sought, whither I went, and who had giuen mee leaue with so little reuerence to come vnto her chamber. I answered her: Madame, I cannot satisfie you in so many demands, but in saying that I am a stranger, who as I think, haue left a man dead in this street, rather through his misfortune and pride, then by any fault of mine. I beseech you for Gods sake, and by that which you are, to saue me from the Iustice, which I suppose followeth after me. Are you a Castilian? said she in her Portugall speech: I answered, no Madame; I am a stranger, & a great way hence fro this Country. Though you were a Castilian a thousand times, said she againe, I would saue you if I might, and will saue you if I can. Get you vp on this bed, lift vp the hangings, and enter into a hollow place which you shall there finde, and stirre not from thence; for if the Iustice come, he will vse mee with respect, and beleue what I shall tell him. I presently did as she commanded me, lift vp the tapistry, and found the hollow place, and hid mee therein, holding my breath, and recommending my selfe to God, the best that I could. And being in this confused affliction, a seruant of the house entred into the chamber, crying, Madame, one comes from the slaughter of *Don Duarte*, and saw him ouerthrowen, hauing his head pearced vvith a thrust in his right eye; but hee knoweth not the murtherer, nor the occation of the quarrell, wherein the clashing of the swords could bee scarcely heard: only a child said, that he saw a man come running into this house. This must needs, without doubt, be the murtherer, answered the Lady, neyther is it possible that he can escape. Alas, vnhappy that I am, how often haue I feared that my sonne should be brought home vnto me dead! for from his pride nothing could bee hoped, but such like mistfortunes. In the meane time, they brought the dead body on three or foure mens shoulders, & layd it

it along on the ground before the eyes of the sorrowfull mother, who with a lamentable voice began to say; O vengeance, how thou knockest at the gate of my soule! but my word giuen will not suffer mee to satisfie thy desire. O griefe, that in all this dost straine and wring mee cruelly! Consider sirs, in what estate I might be, hearing the sorrowfull words of this mother, into whose hands I thought the presence of her dead sonne put a thousand kindes of punishments for her reuenge: for it was very apparant, that she could not be ignorant how I was hee that had murthered her sonne. But what could I then doe but holde my peace, and hope in my despaire? and principally when the ministers of iustice came into the chamber: who, speaking with reuerent respect, said vnto this Lady;

Madam, we haue beene so bould as to come into your house; induced by a chilles words, who said that the murtherer of this Knight did heere come in. Then I gaue eare most attentiuely, to heare what answer the mother would giue them; who, hauing a minde full of noble courage and christian pietie, answered in this manner; If this man bee comne into this house, at the least he is not in this chamber: any where else you may serch; but I pray God he may not be found: for one death can ill bee repaired by another, specially when the iniuries proceed not of malice.

The officers returned to search for me throughout the house, and my spirits which had left mee returned into me. The Lady commanded her sonnes body to be taken from before her, and put into his winding sheet and buried. She commanded also that they should leaue her alone, because shee was vncapable of comfort, and in no fitte estate to entertaine her friends and kinsfolkes who came to lament with her for the death of her sonne. Hauiing so done, she called one of her maids, in whom (as it appeared) shee reposed most confidence, and hauing
spo-

spoken vnto her in her eare, commanded her to be gone and locke the doore after her ; which shee did : and the Lady sitting vp in her bed, lift vp the tapestrie, and (as I thought) put her hand on my heart ; which, panting in my brealt, made her knowe the feare wherewith I was enuironed. Man (said shee with a soft and sorrowfull voice) whosoever you bee , you see that you haue taken frõ me the light of mine eyes, the respiration of my hart, and finally the life which sustained mee : But forasmuch as I vnderstand, it hath so fallen without any euil intent, I will oppose my word against my vengeance. Wherefore in accomplishment of the promise I made at your coming in, to saue you ; Bee gone from hence, put your hands before your face, that I may not bee inforced to knowe you againe : and followe my damosell, who will come presently hither, and put you in the street, & giue you a hundred crownes to defray the charges of your iourney. Your are not knowne, you haue no marke about you whereby you should bee bewraied : put awaie the feare that troubles you, for that might discover you. By this time the maid came, I came from behinde the tapestrie, couering my face with my hand ; and in signe of thankfulness, often vpon my knees kissed her beds foot ; and immediately followed the damsell, who by a backe doore of a garden put me into the street.

The first thing I did was, to make cleane my sworde, and with a quiet pace came into the street ; where I knew my Inne, and went in as though nothing had befallen me. The host declared vnto me the misfortune of the dead Knight ; setting out with many words the greatnes of his house, and his arrogancie : for which men beleeued he had procured to himselfe some particular enemy who had brought him to such an end. I passed this night, giuing thanks to God for the fauours he had afforded me ; considering the noble minde of my Lady *Guismar* of *Sosa* (for, as I knewe afterward, that was her name) who

who had done mee so much good. The next day in the morning I went to the riuier ; where I found a boat full of men , who went to embarke in a great ship of Saint Iohns, ready to depart for the East Indies. I returned to my lodging, sould my mule to mine host , returned to the riuier and to the boat ; and the next morning came to the great ship out of the hauen, which with full sailes followed the way which I desired. I remained fifteene yeares in India : during all which time I serued as a souldier with the valiant Portugalls, and diuers things befell me that might make a true and pleasant historie ; chiefly, of the prowesse of the Portugall nation, which in that country are inuincible, and worthy of euerlasting praise. There I got some golde, some pearles, and other things of greater value then bignes ; and taking occasion vpon my Generalls returne to Lisbone, I came backe vvith him. From thence I put my selfe in my journey to returne into my country ; determining first of all to see all the best townes of Spaine : I conuerted all my riches into money, taking Letters of exchange for my trauel which I began at Madrill, where after ward *Philip* the third kept his court. But destiny, being weary of carrying the ship of my fortunes with a prosperous winde through the sea of this life, made mee strike vpon a shelle which broke all in pieces.

Thus comming one euening to Talauera, in a place not farre hence, I alighted at an Inne which hath serued as the sepulcher of mine honour. O powerfull force of loue ! loue, I say, vnaduised and lasciuious : how easily dost thou turne aside a mans good determinations ? I say then, being in this Inne, a maid (being, as I thought betweene sixteene and seauenteene yeares of age, though afterwards I knew she was two and twenty) came in : who passing before mee, it seemed I smelt a meadow full of flowers in the month of May ; whose odour made me contemne the best drugges of Arabia. She comming to a
young

young man in the Inne spake to him in his eare ; & then with a great laughter, turned her backe, and entred into a house ouer against the Inne. The young man ran after her; yet was not able to ouertake her, but with a blow of his foot vpon her backe, which made her fall on her hands in the entry of her house. A young woman of the Inne saw this, who full of choler said to the young man, that it was ill done of him, and that *Louyse* deserued not to bee vsed after such a manner. I will vse her no otherwise if shee be mine, answered *Alonso*: hold thy peace, my friend *Martina*; for vpon such sturdy young wenches we must not onely lay our hands, but also our feet. And vpon this he left *Martina* and me by our selues; whom I asked if *Louyse* were married. No (answered *Martina*) but she shall be shortly with this young man, and by reason of the contract of marriage which their Parents haue made, *Alonso* takes liberty to sport with her somewhat too rudely, though he seldome beates her: but she well deserues it; for to speake truly, *Louyse* is a little too bold, and too much gadding. I haue told her enough, but all serues to no purpose, she will not leaue to follow her pleasure, if it come into her minde: But the best dowry which a woman can bring is honesty. And God be with my mother that bare me: shee would neuer permit me to looke into the streete, no not so much as through a cranny; much lesse would she suffer me to come to the threshold of the street dore. She well knew (she said) that a woman and a henne, &c. Tell me, Mistrisse *Martina* (said I) how, from a nouice kept so strictly, you come to make your profession in so large an Inne. There are many things to bee spoken concerning this matter, answered *Martina*; but I haue many other things to say without studying on these trifling particularities, if time did require, or that the grieve of my soule would permit me.

CHAP. VII.

*The Polonian continues his history: and of the Counsell that Perian-
der gaue him.*

THe Pilgrimes gaue attentiuē ear to the Polonian, and now desired to know the grief that afflicted his mind, as they knew that which he had in his body. To whom *Perian-der* said; Declare sir, what you will, and with such particularities as you please: for sometimes the recitall thereof augmenteth the grace of a story, as a salade of herbs is not amisse after the eating of a Pheasant. The cause of any story is, to obserue the propriety of the language in all that which a man speaketh. Follow then your discourse, tell vs of *Alonso* or *Martins*, beate *Lonyse* as you list, marry them or not marry them, we will take all in good worth. I say then, sirs, answered the Polonian, that all that night I did nothing else but meditate on the graces and beauties of this *Lonyse*, in my iudgement incomparable. I made a thousand enterprizes, buik a thousand Castles in the ayre in mine imagination: I married, had children, and finally resolved to giue ouer my first resolution, and to stay in *Talauera*, when I should be wedded with the goddesse *Venus*; for this maid seemed to me no lesse faire, though beaten & ill vsed by the yong man. After this night was past, I felt the pulses of my delight; finding that if I married her not, I should lose therewith my life, which I layd vp in the eyes of *Lonyse*; In such sort that reiecting all kinde of inconueniences, I determined to speake vnto her father, and demand her to wife. I shewed him my pearles and my riches, praysed my witte and industry, not onely to keepe, but also to increase them: and vvith these words, and the shew that I made vnto him of my goods, I made him more supple then a gloue. And that vvwhich made him most willingly to agree

S

to

to my desires, was to see that I asked nothing of him, but his daughters beauty; wherthrough I was more then wel pleased and satisfied with this marriage. See then *Alonso* his nose out of ioynt, and *Louise* my wife, to my great misfortune, and her shame: as the euent which followed within fifteen daies after, euidently declared; which was, that my wife hauing gotten my money and iewels, by the counsell of the same *Alonso*, ranne away with him from Talauera, leauing mee confounded and mocked, as being a subiect of the talk & laughter of all the people. This cousonage made mee haue recourse to vengeance: but I knew not on whom to take it, but on my selfe; and therefore a thousand times was in minde to hang my selfe. But Fortune, who peradventure hath kept mee, to make me amends for the wrongs she hath done me, hath permitted that mine enemies are arrested, and kept prisoners at Madrill: from whence I haue receiued letters to come thither and prosecute the iustice which I hope for; and thither I am now going, to wash away with their blood, the spots of mine honor; and remoue vvith their liues, from my shoulders, the burthen of their offence. I sweare by God, they shall dye, I will bee reuenged, and the world shall know that I cannot dissemble such hurtfull outrages, which pearce euen to the marrow of the soule. I now find my selfe better then I was vpon my fall, I must get on horsebacke: and let none speake vnto me of the intreaties of the religious, nor complaints of the poore, nor promises of the rich, nor commandements of great men, nor gifts of any; for I make lesse account of all these things, then of mine honor. And in saying this, hee rose vp to take horse againe, and follow his journey. But *Periander* tooke hold of his arme, and spake thus vnto him: You, that are blinded with your passion, see not how you are going to enlarge your infamy. Vntill this present you haue beene dishonoured, onely amongst those whom you are acquainted with at Talauera: and

now.

now you will bee so amongst your friends and acquaintance at Madrill. You will imitate the labourer, who all the winter cherished a venemous serpent in his bosome; and missing him at the spring, would go & seeke for him, in stead of giuing God thanks, not considering that it is great wisdom neuer to search for that which a man hath no desire to finde. It is a common saying, that for an enemy that flyeth, we should make a bridge of siluer: and the greatest euill that can befall a man, is to haue a naughty wife. What do you thinke will befall you when the Iustice hath deliuered your enemies into the executioners hands? that they shall be bound on the scaffold for an infinite number of people to behold, the sword shaking ouer their necks, and cutting off their heads, as if their blood could vvashe cleane your honour? What else can happen vnto you, but to make your vvrongs more publike? For reuenge may vvell punish offences, but neuer take them away; and they that attempt such actions, liue and remaine in mens memories, at the least as long as his life endureth who hath receiued them. Wherefore be your own man; and giuing place to mercy, runne not after iustice. I counsell you not to forgieue your wife, so as to take her againe into your house; for there is no law vvhich bindes you so to doe: But I counsell you to leaue her, vvhich is the greatest correction that you can giue her. Liue a great way fró her, & you shall liue: which you cannot do, being together; for you shall die continually. The law of diuorce vvas much practised by the Romanes. And though it vvere greater charity to pardon them, keepe them in, suffer and counsell them; yet first a man should feeble & assay the pulses of his patience and wisdom, whereof few men can assure themselves in this life; and principally in such like inconueniences. Finally, I would haue you to consider, that you goe about to commit a deadly sin, in taking away their liues; which ought not to be committed for al the profit nor honor in

the world. The angry Polonian was very attentue to the words of *Periander*; and beholding him with like heede-fulness, thus answered. Sir, you haue spoken aboue your yeares: Your wisdome and ripenes of vvit, surme unt the greenenels of your age. An Angel hath guided your tong, vvhereby you haue subdued my vvill: which is now none other then to return into my country, & there giue thanks to heauen for the fauor you haue done mee. Helpe me, if it please you, to get vp: for I haue lesse force in my patience, then in my choler. This wee will doe with all our hearts, answered old *Anthony*; who help him on his mule, after hee had embraced them all, telling them that hee would returne to Talauera, to settle his affaires, that hee might after goe from Lisbone by sea into his Country. He told them also that his name was *Martin Bandede*: and offering to them againe his seruice, he rode towards Talauera, leauing them all in a maruell at such matters as he had told them. The Pilgrimes passed that night in the same place, and two daies after arriued in company of the olde Pilgrime at the sanctuary of Toledo, and to sight of Tagus, renowned for cleere waters, and famous for sands of gold.

CHAP. VIII.

The description of the Territory of Toledo, and of the Riuer of Tagus, with other memorable things.

THe renowne of Tagus is not such that it may bee inclosed by any bounds; neyther that any nations vnknown, or retired to the farthest end of the world can be ignorant thereof; because it extendeth euery where, and is manifest vnto all, breeding in them a desire to know it. And as it is the vse of northern people, almost all of them, or at least men of quality, to bee exercised in the Latine tong, & in knowlege of ancient Poets: *Periander* was so like-

likewise, as being one of the chiefeſt of his nation. And as well for this cauſe, as alſo in that he had ſeen the works of the famous and neuer ſufficiently commended Poet, *Garcilaſo de la Vega*, which in this time came to light; as ſoone as he ſaw the cleere riuer he ſaid: wee vwill not ſay, there *Salicio* ended his ſong, but there *Salicio* began to ſing; there he ſurpaſſed himſelfe in his Eglogues; there ſounded his Viol: at the tunes whereof the waters of this riuer ſtayed their courſe, the leaues of the trees were without motion, the windes calmed gaue place for the admiration of his ſong, to paſſe from language to language, and from nation to nation throughout the world. O then thrice happy cryſtalline waters, and golden ſands, receiue this poore Pilgrime, who hath alwaies honoured you farre off, and commeth now ſo neere to ſalute you. And beholding the City of Toledo; O glory of Spaine, ſaid he, the light of her Cities (in whoſe boſome, during infinite ages, haue beene kept the reliques of the valiant Gothes) long maiſt thou liue in proſperity, and therein conſerue thoſe that come to viſit thee.

Thus much *Periander* ſpake before *Anthony*; who would haue ſaid the ſame as well as he, if he had known it: for the reading of bookes affordeth a more certain experience of things, then the ſight it ſelfe; becauſe thoſe who read attentiuely, conſider what they read; and thoſe which behold, ſettle their minds vpon nothing: for which cauſe reading ſurpaſſes the view. At that inſtant they heard the ſound of infinit muſicall inſtruments, which extended by the vallies that enuironed the City, with a troope, not of ſouldiers, but of maides comming towards them, fairer then the Sunne, attired after the Country faſhion, their boſomes couer'd with metall & laces, whereon ſiluer & corall had their place, with greater beauty then gold or pearles. Their haire was yellow as gold: which though it vvaue on their ſhoulders, yet part thereof was folded in garlands of flowers. The courſe cloth of Cuenca

glistered there vpon them this day, aboute the Damaske of Millian, and Satin of Florence. Finally, their rustlicall habits excelled the richest ornaments of the Court; because that if honest mediocrity appeared in them, extreame neatnesse might be seene there likewise. All were flowers, all roses, all gracious, & all together composed a sweet motion, agreeable to the sound of diuers galliards which proceeded from the instruments whereof wee haue spoken. About the danse marched sundry sheepherds, who were neighbors or kinsmen of those that danced, and were apparelled in white linnen, one playing on a drumme, another on a flute, and other country instruments. As they passed before the Pilgrimes in this equipage, a man who (as afterward appeared) was Constable of the towne, tooke one of these maides by the arme, to whom hee said with an angry voyce: *Ha Toſuelo*, I see you are little ashamed: are these dances to be profaned? These are not feasts to pry vpon maids; I know not how heauen can consent vnto this malice. If this be with my daughters priuity, belecue mee those that are deafe shall not heare you.

He had scarce ended these words, but another Constable came thither, who said vnto him: *Peter Connegno*, if the deafe heare vs it should be a miracle: let it suffice you that we heare our selues, and let vs know wherein my son *Toſuelo* hath offended you; for if hee haue done you any wrong, I am a man of Iustice, who am able and can tell how to punish him. Whereto *Connegno* answered: The wrong is already manifest; in that being a male, he is attired like a woman: and not onely so, but as a maide of the Kings in his Maiesties feast, amongst whom I feare my daughter is; because that these clothes which your sonne weareth, seeme vnto mee to be hers. And I would not that the diuell should make them both his owne, nor that they should come together without the blessings of the Church; for you know well that these close marria-

ges are for the most part vnfortunate ; and maintaine the kitchins of such as belong to the spirituall Court.

Heereunto a country maide, amongst many that there stayed to heare this discourse, answered for *Tosuelo* in this maner: If one may speak truth, my masters, *Mary Connegno* & *Tosuelo* are as truly man and wife, as my father and mother are. She is with-child, and not fit to danse: marry them, and let the Diuell doe with his owne what he will. In faith, maide, answered *Tosuelo*, you speake well; they are both equall, one of them is not an elder Christian then the other, and their wealth may be measured by one and the same ell. Well then, replied *Connegno*, some body call my daughter, she will decide all this; for shee is not speechlesse. His daughter came, who was not farre off: and the first thing shee spake was, I haue not bene the first, nor shall be the last who hath done as much. *Tosuelo* is my husband, and I am his wife; God forgie vs both if our parents will not. You haue reason, said her father; but shamefastnesse will sooner bee in the mountaines of Vbeda, then in your face. Neuerthelesse, in regard that this deed is already done, and that the Constable *Tosuelo* is of the same minde, I am content the busines shall goe forward, which you had no will to leaue behinde. By my faith, said the first maide, Master Constable *Connegno* hath spoken like a wife olde man: let these young couple giue hands one to another, and strike vp the bargaine, if it be not already done, and let vs go and finish our danse at the elme; for it need not to be disturbed for so small a matter.

Tosuelo yeelded to the maides speeches: the two louers were married, and the processe ended: and if all others would be concluded in like sort, the penne of the Advocates vould be dry enough.

Auristela and *Periander* were well pleased in hearing the arguing about these two louers, and no lesse admired the beauty of these Country maids, *Periander* would not

haue them enter into Toledo, because old *Anthony* would shorten his way, vrged by desire to see his Country, and his Parents who were not farre off; saying that it required longer time to see the rarities of this city, which their haste would not permit.

This very reason was the cause why they went not to Madrill where the Court then remained, fearing some by-matters to call them away, and hinder their iourney.

The old Pilgrime woman confirmed them also in this resolution, saying; there were meane men at the Court who had the reputation of great mens sonnes, though indeed they were but Coisfrels, slooping to the lure of the first beauty they saw, of what quality soeuer it vvere: for voluntary loue seeketh not after worthines of birth, but of beauty.

To this inferred old *Anthony*, that they should helpe themselves by the industry of Cranes, when changing the climate, they passe by the mountaine Libanus; where knowing they are watched for by certaine birds of prey, they passe in the night, euery one hauing a stone in his mouth to hinder their crying. Though (said he) the best industry we can vse, is to follow the riuer of Tagus: and leauing the City on the right hand vntill some other occasion, wee will travell to Ocagua, and from thence to Quintanar of the Order, which is my Country. The old Pilgrime hearing the determination of the voyage which *Anthony* would make, said that she would proceed in her owne iourney. *Ricla* by way of almes gaue her two pieces of gold, with which she departed.

Our Pilgrimes passed by Araniues: the sight vvhich of, because it was the spring time, gaue them admiration and ioy. They saw great streets of equall bigneise, backed by an infinite number of greene trees, the meeting and embracing of the two riuers, Henarez and Tagus, the beauty of the gardens, the goodnesse of the fruites, and variety of flowers, the ponds where there are more fishes

fishes then sands. Finally, *Periander* found true the renowne of this fair place extended ouer the whole world. From hence they went to *Ocagua*; where *Anthony* vnderstood that his parents vvere yet liuing, and vvas informed of other things which reioyced him, as wee shall presently tell you.

CHAP. IX.

How Anthony, together with his company, arriued at his village, and of the lamentable misfortune that befall to a Count.

THe ayre of the Country cheered the spirits of *Anthony*; and of all the others as well as his, in visiting our *Lady of Hope*. *Ricla* and her two children were full of ioy, thinking that they vvere now ready, one to see her father and mother in law, and the others their grandfather and grand-mother; touching whom *Anthony*, as we haue said, had heard newes that they were yet liuing. He knew also, that his enemy had inherited his fathers estate; and that since that, he died in amity with his friends, leauing his inheritance to a brother of his, who continued in the same affection.

With this good newes, and greater contentment then he durst promise to himselfe, the next day morning, he & his companions went forward on their way, vnto whom he declared all that he had learned concerning his affairs. His purpose was, to make himselfe knowne to his father, not vpon the sodaine, but by some meanes to prolong his contentment; knowing well that a sodaine ioy sometimes doth more easily kill, then a sodaine griefe. Three daies after, towards the euening, they came to his fathers house, who with his mother sate before the gate to take
the

the fresh aire, in the hottest time of the spring. They all came together, and *Anthony*, speaking to his father, enquir'd of him, if in this place they had any hospital where Pilgrimes might haue lodging. According to the deuotion of those that here inhabit, answered his father, all the houses are Pilgrimes hospitalls. And if there were no other, mine, according to the capacity, shall serue for all. I haue pledges abroad in the world, who I knowe not if at this present they seek who wil giue them house-room. Sir, said *Anthony*, wee haue beene tolde, that this place is called Quintanar. Are there not Gentlemen here, named *Ville-seigneurs*? I aske you this, because I haue beene acquainted with a Knight of this name, a great way from this country; who if hee were heere, I knowe well that neither I nor my companions should want lodging. And what, said his mother, is the name of this *Ville-seigneur*? He called himselfe *Anthony*, replied *Anthony*, and his father (as hee tould mee) was called *Diego de Ville-seigneur*. O my God! said she, rising from the place where she was, this *Anthony* is my sonne; who through a certaine misfortune hath remained more then sixteene yeares out of this country, which I haue bought with the price of my teares, sighes & praiers: God grant I may see him before I die. But tell me, my friend, is it long since you saw him? how far hence did you leaue him? is he in good health? thinks hee to returne hither againe? doth he remember his parents? hee may now come and see them; for hee hath no enemies to hinder him: and those which made him forsake his country, at this present are our friends.

All these words the olde father of *Anthony* heard; who calling his seruants commanded them to light torches, and bring these honourable Pilgrimes into the house; and comming to his son, straightly embraced him, saying: For you, sir, I had offered my house, as to the rest of your company; following the custome which I haue to feast all the Pilgrims which come this way: but for the ioy-
full

full newes which you haue brought mee, I will further augment my good will, and surmount my proper forces by my seruices. By this time the seruants had brought lights: and leading the Pilgrimes into the house, they found in the midst of a bafe court two faire damselfs, the sisters of *Anthony*, and borne in his abfence; who, feeing the beauty of *Aurifela*, the comely feature of *Constance*, and the faire countenance of *Ricla* their fiffler in lawe, could not haue their fill in kifling them. And whilett they flaid till their father and mother fhould come in after their new guefts, they faw them enter with a confufed troope of men carrying on their fhoulders a man fitting in a chaire as dead: whom they knew immediately to be the Earle who was heire to their vnckles enemy. The noife of the people, the trouble of their parents, the care to receiue thefe new guefts, difturbed them in fuch fort, that they knew not what to doe, nor of whom to enquire the caufe of this rumour. The parents of *Anthony* ranne to the Earle, who was wounded through his fhoulders with a builet which he had receiued in a skirmifh of two companies of fouldiers, lodged in the towne, againft the inhabitants; who, feeing himfelfe hurt, had commanded his seruants to carry him to the houfe of *Diego de l'Ille-feigneur* his friend: and his arriual was at the inftant when he began to lodge his fonne, his daughter in law, and his two nephewes, with *Periander* and *Aurifela*; who, taking by the hands the two fifflers of *Anthony*, prayed them to carry them out of this hurliburlie, and bring them into a chamber where no perfon might fee them. They did fo, admiring afrefh the beauty of *Aurifela* and *Constance*, in whom bloud by parentage began to fafhion fuch an affection, that fhe could not part from her aunts, who were both of the fame age, and almoft of equall beaurty.

The like happened to young *Anthony*; who, forgetting refpect and bond of hofpitalitie, ranne to embrace

one

one of his aunts. Which being seene by one of the seruants of the house, he said vnto him; Sir Pilgrime, leaue off these doings, for your profit: for my maister is not a man that can endure this: if not, I promise you that hee will restraine your bouldnes.

In faith, my friend, answered *Anthony*, that which I haue done is a small matter in comparifon of that which I thinke to doe, if heauen fauour my desires; being none other, then to serue these Gentlewomen, & al those of the house. In the meane time they had laid the Earle in a good bed; and sent for two chirurgians, who stanchd the bloud, and searched the wound: which they declared to be mortall, and past any mans help. All the towne was in armes against the souldiers, who were gotten out into the fields, and ranged in battell, waiting if those of the towne would assault them. The prudence and care of the captaines was to small purpose to induce them to peace: and the diligence of the Priests lesse preuaile with the inhabitants, which are troubled ordinarily vpon light occasions. Till the next day morning the captaines made their souldiers march elsewhere, and those of the towne kept within their bounds, notwithstanding the anger and desire of reuenge which they had conceiued against the souldiers.

In conclusion, shortly after by diuers pauses and sweet attempts, *Anthony* discovered himselfe to his parents, and brought before them his wife and children; the sight of whom drew teares from the eyes of the old couple. This pleasure so great and so little expected, this comming of their children so far from their hoped expectation, gaue them such height of admiration and ioy, that they almost forgot the misfortune of the Earle, who alwayes grew worse and worse. To whom herewithall the old man shewed his children; offering him againe his house and that he had, because it was not possible to beare him to his owne; so little hope they had of his life. *Auristela* and

and *Constance*, as their estate obliged them, stirred not from the Earles beds-head; though it were contrary to the aduice of the chirurgians, who ordained that hee should be left alone, or at the least haue other then womens company. But the ordinance of heauen, vvhich by causes to vs vnknowne ruleth the things of the earth, decreed that the Earle came to the last point of his life; and that one day before he died, being already assured of his death, he called *Diego de Ville-seigneur*: to whom (they two being alone) he vsed such like words;

I came from my house, with purpose this yeare to goe to Rome; where the Soueraigne Bishop hath opened the chests of the churches treasure, and imparted infinite fauours which are wont to bee gained there. I was going thither in meane fashion, rather like a poore Pilgrime, then a rich Knight. I came into this towne, and found the skirmish betweene the souldiers there lodged, & the inhabitants. I would needs intermeddle my selfe; and to saue the liues of others, am comne to lose mine owne; which this blowe traiterously giuen me will depriue mee of. I knowe not whose act it was: for the brawles of a multitude carry with them the same confusion. I am not sorrie for my death; but onely to consider what it may cost if any one would vse chastisement therefore, either by reuenge or by iustice. Heerewithall, to do as I ought, and that which I possibly can on my behalfe, as a Knight and a Christian, I forgiue my murtherer, and all those that are entangled in his fault. My will is also to make thankfull acknowledgement of the good offices and seruices I haue receiued in your house. And the manifestation of this gratefull acknowledgement shall not bee done as I would, but as I can. In the two trunks which are there, wherein I carry my wardrobe, are twenty thousand ducats in gould or in iewels, which require not a great roome. And if, as well as this little, there were included the aboundance which the bowells of the mountaine

taine Potoli containe within them, I would do with that abundance, which I will doe with this little. Take it; Seignior *Diego*, or cause your neece *Constance* to take it; which I giue her for her marriage dowrie. Moreouer, I will giue her a husband of my choosing; and such a one, that though shee shall bee very shortly a widow, yet shee shall remaine honourable. Cause her to bee called with a Priest, to marrie me vnto her: for her worth & her beauty deserue that she should be Lady of the Vniuersē. Maruell not at this which you heare: beleuee that vvhich I say: neither think that it is too strange a nouelty, to see a Lord of my qualitie married to a damosell in whom all vertuous parts, that may make a woman amiable, doe meet together. Heauen will haue it so, mine inclination induceth mee, and I coniure you by all that I can, that your affection impeach it not.

Ville-seigneur was euen ready to die at these vvords; and beleueed that the Earle had lost his iudgement, and that the houre of his death vvas come: because in this estate, the most part of men speake either notable sentences or notable follies. Wherefore hee made him this answer: My Lord, I hope in God to see you recouer your health; and then, that vvith clearer eyes, and vvithout any paine to trouble your senses, you may see the riches vvvhich you giue, and the vvife vvhom you choose. My neece is not your equall, nor of abilitie; vvvhich makes her farre from deseruing to be your vvife: neither am I so couetous as to purchase the good you vvould do me, at the price of the peoples talke, who are for the most part alwaies ready to thinke the vvorst: vvhom mee thinks I heare say, that I keepe you in my house, vvhere I haue troubled your vvits, to oblige you heereunto by deuices of couetise.

Let them say vvhat they vvill; replied the Earle: let them euer deceiue themselues: then they shall remaine deceiued in this which they vvill say of you.

Well

Well then said *Ville-seigneur*, I will not be so ignorant, as not to open to good fortune knocking at the dore of my house.

Heerewith he went out of the chamber, and imparted all that the Earle had told him, to his wife and children, *Periander* and *Auristela*: who aduised him, that vvithout losing any time, hee should take occasion by the hayre, and go and fetch a Notary and a Priest, who should come to dispatch this businesse. In lesse then two howres *Constance* was married with the Earle, and the mony and iewels in her possession, with all circumstances and assurances which were possible to be made. There was no other mulicke at this wedding, but mourning and lamentation; for that the Earles life hastened to the gate of death.

Finally, the next morning after the espoufalls, the Earle hauing receiued all the Sacraments, died in the armes of the Countesse *Constance* his wife: who couering her head with a blacke vaile, kneeling downe on the earth, her eies towards heauen, began to say, I make a vow. She scarcely had ended this word, ere *Auristela* said vnto her: What vow will you make, Madame? To enter into religion, answered *Constance*. Stay there, doe it not, replied *Auristela*: for such works as are done touching the seruice of God, ought not to be vnaduised or precipitate, nor accomplished in such sort, that it should seeme some accidents haue mooued them: And this of your husbands death, will make you promise matters, which it may bee, you neyther can, nor would afterward performe. Leauethis to Gods will and your owne, which shall direct you, with the counsell of your Parents, and your owne wisedome, to that which shal all bee meetest for you. In the meane time, let order presently be giuen for your husbands buriall, and put your trust in God; who hauing made you a Countesse so lately, when you little thought vpon it, knoweth well to giue other aduancements, and other husbands of longer continuance, then he who hath now
left

left you; whom before your mariage you knew that hee could not longer keepe you company. The Countesse yeelded to this reason: and as they appointed the Earles funeralls, his yonger brother came, who had vnderstood the newes of his hurt, at Salamanca, where he was a student. He wept for his elder brothers death: but the contentment he receiued by the inheritance and estate left vnto him, quickly dried vp his teares. Hee knew of his marriage with *Constance*, embraced his sister in law, not contradicting in any thing, the dead mans will. But leauing money behinde for his cariage, to bee laid in the toombe of his ancelltors, he departed thence to go to the Court and aske iustice against the murderers.

Vpon sight of the processe, the Capitaines were beheaded, and many of the inhabitants of the Borough were punished. *Constance* retained the dowrie, and the title of a Countesse.

Periander intended to goe on in his voyage; whom neyther *Anthony* the father, nor his wife *Ricla* would accompany, because they were weary of so many peregrinations. But it was not possible that the young *Anthony*, or the new Countess could quit the society of *Auristela*. *Anthony* had not yet shewed to his grandfather the table of their fortunes: but vpon a day when hee opened the same, he told him that the meanes & aduentures, wherby *Auristela* came into the Barbarian Iland, when shee there met with *Periander* (he in the attire of a woman, and shee of a man) was there wanting: Which *Auristela* declared vnto them in fewe words, saying; That when the Pirates had carried away her and *Clelia*, with *Seluyana* and *Leoncia*, from the coast of Denmarke, they parted the booty amongst them in a desert Iland; and not being able to make their partition equall, one (said she) of the principall amongst them, contented himselfe with my person, and gaue money ouer and aboue to the other. I was alone in his power without any companion of my misfortune

forme the vowes which they had promised. When the time came that they should depart, not without teares of kindenesse, streight embracements, and sadde sighes; especially of *Ricla*, who seeing her children goe hence, thought shee vvvas disseuered from her soule. Their grandfather blessed them all: for it seemes, the benedictions of ancient persons haue this prerogatiue, To make euents haue the better successe. They tooke with them a household seruant, who might shew them the way: in prosecuting whereof, they left the house, and their solitary Parents; intermeddling the griefe to forsake them, vvith the contentation they had to accomplish their voyage.

CHAP. X.

Of that vvwhich befell to Periander, Auristela, young Anthony, and to his sister, continuing their journey to Rome.

Long iournies alwaies bring with them diuers accidents: and as diuerities are compounded of different causes, their effects of necessity also must bee different. This appeareth in our History: the euents whereof, cut our thred asunder, and put vs in doubt how to fasten it againe: for all things are not good to bee spoken, and may bee passed ouer in silence without wronging the history. There are some actions vvwhich for their great waight are to bee concealed; and others which ought to bee deliuered because they are of small importance: albeit the excellency of an history is such, that whatsoever shall be therein written, it may passe in fauor of the truth which it carrieth.

This cannot bee done in a fable: which must order
the

the actions with so much pleasure & likelihood of truth, that in despite of lying, which maketh a discord in the vnderstanding, it may make a true and delightfull harmony. Making then a profitable vse of this verity, I say that our Pilgrimes, following their iourney, came into a place neyther too bigge, nor too little, whose name I remember not: and in the middelt of the way where they were enforced to passe, they saw a world of people, who harkened to the discourse of two young men apparelled like slaues that had beene ransomed; who expounded the pictures of a painted cloth which they had spread vpon the ground. It seemed they had taken from their neckes, two heauy chaines, lying hard by them, as speaking tokens of their misfortune. And one of them, appearing to be foure and twenty yeares of age, shaking a bulls pizzle which he had in his hand, yarked it with such dexterity, that the claps resembled those which a coachman maketh with his whippe, when hee threateneth his horses.

Amongst those that heard their story, were two Bayliffes of the place, both vvell stricken in yeares, though one lesse then the other; before whom one of the slaues began his Oration in this manner:

Gentlemen, this City whose pourtrait you see, is the Towne of Argier, the feare and terror of all the coasts of the Mediterranean sea, the generall hauen of Pirates, and the common refuge of theeues, who from this little Port vvith there you see painted, issue vvith their shippes to robbe all Nations, aduenturing to passe beyond *Hercules* pillars, and assaile the llands far off; vvith because they are enuironed with the deepe ditches of the great Ocean, thinke to be in safety from the Turkes shippes. This vessell which you see shortened, because the painting so required, is a Gallion of twenty bankes of oares, vvhole Captaine is this Turke whom you see on the decke with an arme in his hand, vvith he strooke off at one blowe

from a Christian, that it might serue as a bastinado to strike others who are tyed to the bankes, feareing to be surprized by these foure Gallies vvho haue him in chase as you see. This first rower of the first banke, whose face is disfigured with blood, which the blowes of the dead arme hath made all bloody, is my selfe who was swabber of the Gallion: the other who is next mee, lesse bloody, as being lesse beaten, is my companion whom heere you see. Harken my masters, and giue attentiu eare: it may be this lamentable story will tro your eares, conuey to your soules the apprehension of this dogge *Dragut*, so is the Captaine of the Gallion called; a Pirate no lesse famous then cruell, and no lesse cruell then. *Phalaris* or *Busiris*, tyrants of Sicilie. Me thinkes I heare the outrages which he belched out against the Christians, calling them Iewes of base mindes, of small worth, and of lesse faith: and for the more horror and dreadfull feare, he beateth liuing bodies with dead-arnes.

One of the two Bailiffes who had beene captiue a long time in Argier, said then softly to his companion: It seemes that this slaue hitherto hath spoken the trueth as touching things in general; but I will examine him more particularly, & we shall see if he deceiue vs. For you must knowe that I was in the same Gallion, & remember not that I there saw any other swabber then one *Alonfus Aloncin*, borne at old *Malaga*: and turning to the captiue, he said vnto him; Tell mee my friend, whose vvere the gallies that had him in chase? vv as it by their means that you recouered your liberty? The gallies (answered the captiue) appertained to *Don Sancho* of Leyna: we got not our liberty at that time, for they could not catch him: but we obtained it afterward; for we saued our selues by carrying away a Gallion which came from Sargell to Argier laden with corne; we came therewith to Oran, and from thence to Malaga, where my companion and I tooke the way for Italy, with purpose there to serue our King

King in following the warres. Tell me my friend, replied the Bayliffe, were you both taken together? did they first carry you to Argier, or to some other towne in Barbary? We were not captiues together, said the other slaue: for I vvas taken hard by Alicanta, in a shippe laden vvith wooll, vvhich vvas in her voyage for Genes; and my companion at the suburbs of Melaga, vvhere hee was a fisherman. Wee knew one another in Tetouan in a prison, vvhere vvee became friends; and a long time after haue runne one and the same fortune: But Master Bayliffe examineth vs for seauen or eyght shillings that haue beene giuen vs, and vvould know vvhat mony we haue. Not so, sir Gallant, replied the Bailiffe: all the turnes of the rope are not yet giuen: Harken to mee, and tell mee how many gates are there in Argier? how many springs? and how many vvells of fresh vvater? It is a foolish question, answered the first slaue; there are as many gates as houses; and so many springs, that I know not the number; and so many vvells, that I cannot remember them any more. The troubles I haue vndergone, haue made mee forget my selfe: and if Master Bailiffe will bee against Christian charity, farewell; there is as good bread made heere, as in France.

Then the Bailiffe called a man of the company, vvho seemed to serue in stead of a Crier, and sometimes as the hangman when occasion vvas offered; and said vnto him: *Berruenco*, goe into the towne, and bring hither presently two asses, the first you finde; for by the Kings life I sweare, I vvill make these two Gallants vvaik along the streets, vvho so boldly vvould vsurp the alms of those that are poor indeed, telling vs lies; themselues being as sound as an apple; and more strong then sound, if they vvould take paines to get their liuing. I haue beene siue yeeres a slaue in Argier, and finde not that they giue mee any true tokens in any thing they haue spoken. Vpon my soule, answered the slaue, is it possible that Master Bailiff would

haue vs rich in memory, that are so poore in money? and that for one trick of knauery, not importing the value of three halfe pence, he would dishonour two such notable schollers as we are; and by the same meanes depriue his Maiesty of two such braue souldiers, who goe to aduventure our liues in Italy, or in Flanders for the Catholike religion? Wherefore if I must needs vtter the truth (which is Gods daughter) you shall vnderstand, Maister Bailiffe, that we are not slaues, but schollers of *Salamanca*; who in the midst of our studies haue suffered our selues to be ouer-swayed with a desire to see the world, and learne warlike affairs, as we are acquainted with those of peace. For easie contriuing whereof, and to put our intents in execution, vve bought this painted cloth of certain captiues, perhaps as much counterfeits as wee; informing our selues of certaine particularities of Argier, which we thought sufficient and necessary to make our deceit to be the better beleueed. We sold our bookes and furniture at easie rates: and being laden with this marchandise, we are come to this place. Wee are purposed to goe further, if Master Bailiffe command vs not any thing else. That which I will command, replied the Bailiffe, is that you shall haue an hundred blowes with a whip, and that in stead of the pike which you goe to aduance in Flanders, you shall be made to handle an oare; wherewith, peradventure, you shall doe the King better seruice, then with the pike. Master Bailiffe, replied the young man, would at this present shew himselfe as a Law-giuer of Athens, to the end that the rigour of his integrity may come to the hearing of the Lords of the Councell, which may procure him credit amongst them, that so they may commit vnto him affaires of waight, where hee may shew his seuerity and his iustice: but know, Maister Bailiffe, that *summum ius summa iniuria*. Take heed my friend what you say, quoth the second Bailiffe; here are no luxurious Iustices: the Bailiffes of this place haue beene, are, & shall be

be alwaies chaste: speake lesse, and yo u shall speed the better. Then the Crier returned, who said; Master Bailiffe, I haue not found any Ailes in the towne, saue onely the two Attornies, *Berneco* and *Crispo*, who are walking together. I sent thee, thou blocke-head, answered the Bailiffe, to bring Ailes, and not Attornies: but goe backe and fetch them hither, both for the one, and the other; for I will haue them present at the pronouncing of this sentence, which shall be without faile, and not left vnexecuted for want of Ailes: for thanks be to God, wee haue enow in this place By that God of whom you speake, Maister Bailiffe, said the young man, wee pray you that your severity may passe no further. Consider that vvee haue not stollen so much that we can put our money to vsury, or buy any inheritance: Wee hardly get so much as can sustaine our wretched life, by this our inuention: which neuerthelesse is as painfull as that of an Arts-man, or day-labourer. Our fathers neuer brought vs vp to any Art: wherefore of necessity wee must referre to our industry, that which we would commit to our hands, if vvee had any occupation. Punish those that harbour theeues, robbers by the high waies, false witnesses, idle persons, and such as are good for nothing; all which serue to no other end, but to increase the number of cast-awaies in the common-wealth: and dismitse these wretches who are going to serue his Maiesty by the strength of their armes, and vigor of their spirits; for there are no better souldiers then those that passe from their books to the wars. Neuer any scholler became a souldier, but was a braue fellow; because the powers of minde, and strength of body ioyned together, make an admirable composition: whereby *Mars* is made merry, peace vpholden, and the weale-publike augmented.

Periander, and all the standers by much maruelled, not onely at the young mans reasons, but also at his readinesse and facility wherewith he spake; who thus proceeded:

ded : Maister Bailiffe, strip vs, ransacke vs, beholde vs, and search well to the very seames of our apparell; and if you finde in our possession six rialls of plate, giue vs not onely a hundred ierks with a whip, but also six hundred. See now if the purchase of so small a gaine ought to bee punished by the gallies or whipping. Wherefore once againe I beseech you not to be passionately rash, in doing that for which afterward perhappes you should be sorry. Wise Iudges do chastise offences, and not reuenge them: such as are discreet and pitifull make their cleere iudgement appariant betwixt rigour and clemency.

On my faith, said the second Bailiffe, this young man hath well spoken, though he hath spoken much : and so farre am I from consenting that they should bee vvhippt, that I will haue them to my house, and helpe them to passe in their iourney ; vpon condition that they goe directly forward, without going to and fro like a plough, from one side of the land to another: for if they so doe, they are hereto carried by vice, and not by necessity. To whom the first Bailiffe (now qualified and full of compassion and pity) thus answered : I will not haue them goe to your house, but to mine ; where I will teach them a lesson as touching the particularities of Argier, to the end that heereafter no man may trip them in their fained history. The two young men thanked him : hee vvvas praised by all the company : and the Pilgrimes had their part of contentment for dispatch of this businesse. The first Bailiffe, turning towards *Periander*, said vnto him ; You maister Pilgrime, doe you not carry a cloth wherein you will shew vs another history, and make vs beleeeue it is true, though it bee contriued by the same falshood ? No, said *Periander*, who saw *Anthony* take out of his bosome at that instant the Patents which they had for their voiage: which hee deliuered into the Bailiffes hand, saying vnto him ; By these papers you may see who we are, and whither we goe ; though vve need not shew you, because

caule we aske no almes, nor haue any necessity to craue any: and so as free passengers they may freely suffer vs to passe.

The Bailiffe took the papers: and because he could not read, he deliuered them to his companion, who had as little skil as he, so that they came to the town-clerks hands; who, perusing them, gaue them againe to *Anthony*, saying; Mr. Bailiffes, there is as much worth in the bounty of these Pilgrimes, as greatnes in their beauty. If they will spend this night in my house, it shall serue to lodge them; and my willing heart, for their good cheare. *Periander* thanked him for them all: there they staid this evening, because it was somewhat late; where they vvere feasted with neatnes, abundance and welcome.

CHAP. XI.

Of the great perill that encountered our Pilgrims at the Realme of Valence, and how they were deliuered from it.

THE day came, and thanks therewithall for the lodging and good cheare which the Towne-clerke had made to our Pilgrimes: who proceeding on their way, as they came out of the towne, they met with the counterfeite slaues, whom they had seene the day before; who tolde them that they were so well instructed by the Bailiffe touching matters of Argier, that from henceforth they could not be taken in a lie. They all came together to a way diuided into two: the slaues took that of Carthagene, and the Pilgrimes that of Valence; to vvhich they came the day following, when the morning came forth; vvhich shewed herselfe aboue the Horizon, driving away the starres, and preparing a path whereby the Sun should make his accustomed race.

Their guide, who was cal'd *Bartholomew*, seeing so ioi-
full

full a Sunne arise, embroydering the clouds of heauen with diuers colours, that theeye could not behold a fairer sight, began to say ; The Preacher, who some dayes past made a sermon in our village, spake very truly, when he said, that the heauens and the earth shewed forth and declared our Lords greatnes. I promise you, if I knewe not God (as my Parents and the Priests haue taught me) I should come to knowe him in behoulding the greatnes of the heauens, and of the Sunne that enlighteneth vs ; which, appearing no greater then a buckler, is by manie degrees bigger then the whole earth. And which is more, being so great, they say it is so light, that in foure and twenty houres it moueth aboute three hundred thousand leagues. I knowe not what to belecue in this matter, whether it be true or false: but so many honest men speak it, that, though it seeme to offer violence to the vnderstanding, I beleue it. But that vvvhich makes me vvonder most, is, that there are people vnder vs, called Antipodes ; vpon vvvhose heads vve vvalk ; a thing seeming to me impossible : for, to beare so heauie a waight as ours, it were requisite they should haue heads of brasle.

Persiles fell a laughing at the rusticall Astrologie of their guide, and said vnto him ; *Bartholomew*, I vvould gladly finde out reasons to make thee vnderstand in what error thou art, and the true position of the world : for which it were needfull to fetch the principles a great way off. But applying my selfe to thy capacitie, I vvill refresh my minde, and will tell thee one poynt, vvvhich thou must hold as infallible : and this it is ; that the earth is the center of the heauens. I call the center a point that cannot be diuided, where all the lines from the circumference doe meet. But it seemes to me that thou yet vnderstandest not the matter : wherefore leaving these rearmes, let it suffice thee to know, that all the earth hath the heauen aloft ouer it ; and wherefoeuer men bee, they are couered vvith heauen as vve are, as vvell at the Antipodes

podes, as else where. *Bartholomew* vvas vvell pleased at the speech of *Periander*: which no lesse contented *Aurifield*, the Countesse and her brother.

With these and other like things, *Periander* beguiled their way, when he heard a waggon at his backe, accompanied vvith six Harquebusiers, and a man on horse-back, who had a dagge hanging at his saddle-bowe; who overtaking *Periander*, said:

Gentlemen, if you carry with you any Conserue (for I learne by your countenances that you are Knights, rather then poore Pilgrimes) giue it it me I pray you to succour a boy in a transe, here in the wagon, who is condemned to the Gallies for two yeares, with other twelue souldiers, who a few daies past were found agents in the death of an Earle. *Constance* could not forbear weeping in calling to minde the death of her husband, almost as soone dead as married: Neuerthelesse, her charity hauing more power ouer her, then the desire to be reuenged, she ranne to the baggage: from whence she drew forth a box of conserues; and comming to the waggon, asked, who is he that is in a transe? To whom one of the souldiers answered: There at this corner; hauing his face anointed with such grease as the waggons axle-tree is dressed wih: because hee will not that death shall seeme faire in him when he shall die; which will be very shortly, according as hee is obstinately resolved to eate nothing. At these words the young man lift vp his face: and taking from his face a broken hat which couered the same wholly, he seemed to the eyes of *Constance* hard fauoured, and greasie, of vvhom hee tooke the box and said, God reward you Madame; and putting on his hat, came againe to his melancholy, returning to the same corner; where hee expected death. The Pilgrimes had certaine other speeches besides vvith the keepers of the wagon, which were ended vpon their parting diuers vvaies.

From thence in some few daies they came to a
place

place inhabited by Moores in the Kingdome of Valence, which was about a league from the sea ; where not onely they found lodging, but all the houses in the place contended amongst themselves who should give them entertainment. Which occasioned *Anthony* to say ; I knowe not who speakes euill of those people who seeme to mee to be all Saints.

Those very same persons, quoth *Periander*, who receiued our Lord in Ierusalem with Palmes, within fewe daies after nailed him on a crosse : But let vs take the entertainment which this good olde man offretlivs ; (speaking of an ancient Moore) who in a manner drew them into his houle by force, and made demonstration to welcome them, not like a Moore, but as a christian. A daughter of his came to serue them, who vvas apparelled Morisco-fashion ; and vvas so faire, that the fairest Christians esteemed it a great good fortune to resemble her. For nature distributeth her graces aswell to the Barbarians of Scythia, as to the citizens of Toledo. Now this faire Moore, taking *Auristela* and *Constance* by the hands, locked herselfe vvith them in a lowe hall ; and being alone, looked round about vvithout letting goe their hands, fearing she should be heard. After, being assured from the feare vvich she shewed to haue posselted her, she said vvnto them :

O my friends, and how are you come hither like simple sheep to the slaughter ? See you this olde man vvhom to my shame I must call my father ? marke how merry he is, and full of such good vvelcomes : knowe, that he pretends no other thing then to be your executioner. This night fve or six pirates ships shall carry away all the persons & riches of this place ; not leauing any thing vvich may induce them to returne backe to fetch it. These unhappy people thinke that in Barbarie is the pleasure of their bodies, and saluation of their soules ; not remembering that of many vvhole townes vvell-nigh, that haue
passed

passed thither, none of them hath given them any other newes but repentance and complaints of their losses. The Moores of Barbary resound the glory of their Land: to haue a taste whereof, the Moriscos of this country runne thither, and fall into the traps of their misfortune. And if you desire to eschew yours, go forth speedily from this house, and retire your selues to the Church: you shall finde there the Curate who will defend you; for he only, and the Notary of the place, are olde Christians. You shall finde also there *Charife* who is mine Vncle, a Moore onely in name, but a Christian in his workes. Declare vnto them all that is past, and tell them that *Rafala* gaue you this information; for thereupon you shall be beleueed and protected: and turn not my words to mockery, vnlesse you will in good earnest persist in being abused to your cost: for there is no greater abuse, then to be vnwilling to be freed from abuse, or to free himselfe from being abused when it is too late.

The astonishment and action wherewith *Rafala* spake these words, sunke into the mindes of *Auristela* and *Constance* in such sort, that they beleueed her; and gaue her no other answere but thanks: and quickly calling *Periander* and *Antonie*, they told them what was passed, and went out of the house with all that they had, without any apparent occasion. *Bartholomew*, who had better desire to rest, then to change his lodging, was much discontented at this change, but he obeyed his Masters. They came to the Church, where they were receiued by the Curate and *Charife*, vnto whom they related all that *Rafala* had told them. The Curate answered them; Many daies are past since the alarme came to vs of the comming of these Pirates: and though it be their custome to make these assaults in the euening, yet I was farre from thinking vpon any such matter. Come in children, for we haue a strong Tower, and the Church gates are so well fortified vwith iron, that they cannot burne them, nor throwe them
downe

downe without a very great strength. Alas, then said *Charise*, and when shall it come to passe that mine eyes may behold this land freed from these thornes and bushes which oppresse it? When will that time come, wherein according to the prediction of a great Astrologian my grandfather, Spaine shall bee wholly Christian, it being the onely corner of the world, where the Catholike Religion (at least in outward appearance) is best obserued? I, Gentlemen, am a Moore, which I would to God I could deny: but yet I relinquish not therefore to be a Christian; for God giueth his graces to whom hee pleaseth, and maketh the Sunne (as you know farre better) to shine on the good, and on the euill, and sendeth raine on the iust and vniust: And my trust is in him, that my grandfathers Prophecie shall not be in vaine. Hee foretold as I said, that about this time should raigne in Spaine a Prince of the house of *Austria*, whose valiant courage should resolue vpon the difficultie to driue away the Moores, like him that pluckes the serpent out of his bosome before hee gnaw his intrailes; which separateth the darnell from the corne, and plucketh vp the weedes from the good feedes. Come young Prince, and wise King, put in execution the braue Decree of this banishment: and let none object against thee, the feare of seeing this Country desert, & without men to til it. For though it be a thing to be considered of, the effect of so great a worke will make it vaine, shewing by experience of a few yeares, that the land shall bee peopled with new Christians, vnder whom it shall recouer her fruitfulnessse, and be brought in better estate then it is at this present. If the Lords thereof haue not so many subiects, those whom they shall haue, shall at the least bee Catholike, vnder whose support the waies shall be assured, Peace may carry her wealth in her hands, and no theeues shall take it from her.

This being spoken, they made fast the gates, got vp in-
to

to the tower, and hoysed vp the draw-bridge. The Curate tooke the holy Sacrament with him, in a relike of lilke, they furnished themselves with stones & guns, and *Bartolomew* leaving their beasts well rubbed and vnsaddled at the Church dore, hee locked vp himselfe with his masters; and with quicke eyes, ready hands, and resolute courages, expected the assault, whereof they had bin aduertised by the Moores daughter.

Midnight passed, which the Curate measured by the course of the starres: and viewing all the sea, which might be seene from that place, he saw not so much as a clowd, but he thought it was the Turkes ships; for which cause, halting to the bells, they rung them so loud, that all the shores and vallies ecchoed againe. At the sound whereof, the Garrisons appointed to defend these coasts, assembled together, and ranne all abouts: But their diligence could not impeach the ships from comming to shore, and landing their men. Those of the place which looked for them, being laden with their best and richest moueables, were received by the Turkes with great shouts, and with the sound of many drums, & other warlike instruments. They set fire on the towne, and on the Church gates; not for any hope to get in there, but that they might leaue no euill vnexecuted, which their power was able to effect.

They left *Bartolomew* to become a foot-man: for they cut asunder his horse legges, ouerthrew a crosse of stone which was at the townes end; and with a loud voce calling vpon the name of *Mahomet*, yeelded themselves to the Turkes, without perceiuing their poore exchange, nor the dishonor whereunto they exposed their viues and children. *Anthony* and *Periander* discharged at them diuers shots of muskets, which were not all in vain. *Bartolomew* threw downe many stones all about the place where he had left his horse, and *Charisse* let flye many arrowes. But *Lisistela* and *Constance* let fall more teares, pray-

praying God whom they had there present, that he would free them from so euident perill, and saue his holy Temple from the fire; which indeed escaped burning, not as if it had beene preferued miraculously, but because the gates were of yron, & that the fire was not great enough. It wanted but little ere the day approched, when the ships hastily betooke themselues to sea: at which time they saw two persons running towards the Church, one from the sea coast, the other from the land; who comming neere, *Chariffe* knew one of them to be his niece *Rafala*, who came with a crosse in her hand, crying that through Gods mercifull goodnesse shee was free, and a Christian: the other was the Notary of the towne, who by chance had laine that night abroad, and retired himselfe vpon sounding of the alarme. Hee wept, not for losse of his wife and children, for they were in another place; but for his house which he found robbed and burned.

They stayed till it was farre forth day, that the shippes were farre from the shore, and that the watch-men had assured the coast: Then they came downe from the tower and opened the Church, where entred the faire *Rafala*, bathing her face with teares of ioy, increasing her beauty by her sodain feare. Her prayers ended, she embraced her Vncle, and kissed the Curates hands. The Notary neyther kissed any bodies hands, nor saluted any person, because the greefe for losse of his goods had wholly possessed his minde.

The alarme once passed, their spirits returned to their naturall place; and *Chariffe* recovering new breath, and returning to his grandfathers prophecie, in a manner with a diuine inspiration, began to say:

O generous Prince, inuincible King, purge this kingdom of Spaine, and root out from thence this accursed generation. Prudent Counsellors, no lesse noble then wise, the new *Atlas* vpholding the weight of this Monarchy, make easie by your sage aduice this necessary transmigration,

gration; That these seas may bee full of gallies laden with the vnnecessary burthen of this Agarene of-springs; and that these wicked herbes, which hinder the plenty and increase of Christian fruitfulnessse, may bee throwne vpon contrary shores. And if the small number of Hebrewes which went downe into Egypt, multiplied in in such sort, that sixe hundred thousand families vvere numbred at their going forth; vvhat may bee feared as touching these, who are moe in number, and liue at more ease? The Religious, the Indies, or the warres, haue not the tenth of them: they all marrie, they all multiply; whereupon it followeth, that their number in short time will become innumerable.

The Pilgrimes sojourned yet two daies in this place, providing themselues of whatsoeuer was wanting; specially *Bartholomeu*, who had lost his beast for carriage: and hauing thanked the Curate, and praised the good desires of *Chariffe*, but particularly embracing *Rasala*, vvith most hearty thanks they departed from them all, and prosecuted their iourney.

CHAP. XII.

Of the arrinall of our Pilgrimes at Barcelonne, and osher memorable things.

THE pilgrimes proceeding on their way, conferred betweene themselues of the danger past, speaking of the courage of *Chariffe*, the valiancy of the Curate, and the zeale of *Rasala*; of whom they forgot to aske how shee had escaped the Turkes hands, who assaulted the towne: but they considered that because shee knew before-hand of their comming, she had hid her selfe in some place, afterward to accomplish her intent, which was to liue and die a Christian.

V

They

They came hard by Valence, where they would not enter, to auoyd occasions of staying there: but they wanted not some that knew how to informe them of the large situation thereof, the excellency of the inhabitants, the pleasant places round about it, and finally all that which made the same faire and rich aboue all the cities in Spaine: especially they praised the beauty of the women, their manner of attire, and the sweet pronounciation of their speech. From thence they resolu'd with longer iournies, though it cost them the abatement of their ease, to goe to Barcelonne, where they made accompt to take shipping in the gallies which were bound for Genes. At their comming out of Towne-Royall, a faire and pleasant City, a shepheardesse of Valence, faire as the Sunne, came before them: who without other speeches, complements, or ceremonie, yea without saluting them, but yet with a comely grace answerable to her beauty, said vnto them: My maisters, eyther I aske, or giue you. To whom *Periander* answered: Faire shepheardesse, if it be iealousie, neyther demand it nor giue it: for in demanding you shall lose your credit; and in giuing it, your merit. And if hee which loueth you haue any iudgement, knowing your worthinesse, he will loue you: and if hee haue none, why would you haue him loue you? You haue truly spoken, answered the Shepheardesse; and bidding them fare-well, turned her backe, and was quicklie out of sight amongst the trees from whence she came, leauing the Pilgrimes in a maruell at her demand, readinesse of wit, and beauty. Many other things befell them in the way to Barcelon, which are not worth the vwriting; saue onely that in their passage, they saw the holy mountaines of Montferrat, which they adored a farre off, but would not ascend them, lest they should there stay too long. They came afterwards to Barcelon, at such time as foure Spanish gallies came vpon the coast which saluted the City with great Ordinance, and cast foure skiffes

skiffes into the water : whereof one was garnished vwith tapestry of Leuant, and skarlet cushions, wherein came, as after ward appeared , a faire woman, of small age , and richly attired, with an old Lady, and two waiting maids. An infinite number of people came out of Barcelon, according to their custome, as well to see the Gallies, as those that were aboard them : and the curiosity of our Pilgrimes made them come so neere the skiffes, that they might almost haue taken the Lady that came ashore , by the hand ; vwho beholding them all, and *Constance* especially after she was come on land, said vnto her :

Come hither faire Pilgrime , that I may carry you with me into the town ; for I purpose to pay you a debt, whereof I beleeeue you haue small remembrance : and let your Cameradoes come also, for there cannot fal out here any occasion which should moue you to leaue so good company. Yours (answered *Constance*) as farre as I perceiue, is of such worth , that it should bee default of iudgement not to accept thereof. Let vs goe whither you please, my companions will follow vs, for they are not wont to leaue me.

This Lady took *Constance* by the hand, and hauing the company of diuers Knights that came forth to receiue her, and the principall men of the gallies, they walked to the City. All the way long *Constance* could not forbear looking vpon this Lady, and yet could not call to minde that euer she had seen her. Shee & those that landed with her, were lodged in one of the chiefe houses of Barcelon, and it was not possible that she would suffer the Pilgrims to go elf-where : to whom vpon the first occasion offered, she spake such like words ; I will deliuer you, my friends , from the admiration wherein you are, by reason of the speciall care you see me haue to serue you, & tell you that my name is *Ambroise Augustina* : I was borne in a City of Arragon, my brother is *Don Bernard Augustin*, Generall of these Gallies vwho are heere arriued : *Contarin*

of Arbolanche, a Knight of Alcantara, fell in loue with me, vnknowne to my Parents: and I guided by the influence of my starres, or to say better, by my flexible condition, seeing I should lose nothing in louing him as my husband, I made him Lord of my person & my thoughts. And the same day that I was espoused to him, he receiued a Letter from his Maiesty, which commanded him to go immediately into the Ile of Malta, where hee beleued that the Turke should land, and carry thither a regiment of Spanish footmen, who might passe from Lombardy to Genes. *Contarin* executed this commandement with so great obedience, that hee would not gather the fruits of marriage, before he put it in effect: and without making any reckoning of my teares, departed at the same instant wherein he receiued the Letter. I thought the skies were fallen vpon me, and that my heart was betweene them and the earth, as betweene two prestes. A few daies passed, that adioyning imagination to imagination, and desire vpon desire, I put one of them in practise: the accomplishment whereof, as it tooke away my honor for the time, it might as well haue deprived me of my life. I absented my selfe from my house vnknowing to euery body: & being appareled like a seruant, I got intertainment with a drummer of a company, which then was in a village about eight leagues from mine. In few daies I could strike a march as well as my master, and learned to be a drummer like him. Another company ioyned with ours, both which marched to Cartagene, to embarke in these foure gallies of my brother: with whom my purpose was to passe into Italy, and seeke my husband, whose good nature I hoped would not take my desire in euill part, nor finde fault with my bold attempt; being so blinded with my passion, that I perceiued not the perill of being knowne, whereunto I exposed my selfe, in case I should take shippe in my brothers gallies. But as there is no difficulty which amorous hearts finde not easie, nor feare which

which they doe not contemne, I passed ouer all things that withstood mine enterprize, vanquishing all sorts of inconueniences, and hoping euen in my despaire. But as the euents of things make an alteration of the first intentions; mine, being as ill deuised as executed, brought me to such tearmes as you shall now heare. The souldiers of the companies whereof I spake, had a cruell skirmish against the inhabitants of a place where they vsed husbandry, about their lodging; from whence a Knight came forth, of whom the report went that he was an Earle, and was wounded to death. There came an Inquisitor from the Court, who tooke the Captaines, the souldiers dispersed themselves, of whom he caught some, and mee amongst the rest, who was no cause of the mischief. They were condemned to the gallies for two yeares, and I was wrapped vp in the same condemnation with them. In vaine I lamented my misfortune, seeing how contrary to my intent the delignes which I had contriued, had fallen out. I would haue killed my selfe: but the feare of a worse life, made the knife to fall out of my hand, and tooke the rope from my necke. I besmeared my face, and made my selfe as hard fauoured as I possibly could, shutting vp my selfe in the waggon where they put vs; intending to weep so much, and eat so little, that teares and hunger might effect that which the knife and rope were vnable to doe.

We came to Cartagene, where the gallies were not yet arriued: they put vs into the Kings house, where vvee staid with our keepers, expecting euery houre the time of our misfortune. I knowe not, sirs, if you remember a chariot which you met right against a Tauerne; where this faire Pilgrime (shewing *Constance*) succoured a prisoner that was in a transe, with a box of conserues. I remember it well, said *Constance*. Knowe then, said the Lady, that it was my selfe whom you succoured. From vnder the couering of the waggon I beheld you all, and ad-

mired you all : for your perfection cannot be looked vpon without admiration.

In the end the gallies arriued with a brigantine of Moores which they had taken by the way. The same day all the souldiers were put in chaines, and attired like Ro- uers, after they had first taken from them such apparell as they wore ; a sad and grieuous *Metamorphosis*, but supportable : for the paine which endeth not the life, by custome is made easie to be suffered. When they came to take off my clothes, the master of the gallie commanded my face to be washed : for I had not so much strength as to lift mine armes to my head. The Barbar, who dressed all the slaues, looked vpon me, and said ; I shall marre but a few rasours with this beard : I knowe not wherefore they haue sent this childe hither, as if our gallies were of sugar, and our oares of hony. What fault hast thou committed, thou theefe, that deserueth this punishment ? without doubt I belecue thy concealing of anothers faults hath brought thee to this miserie. And conuerting his speech to the gallie-maister, he said vnto him ; Sir, I thinke you were best to leaue this boy at the poepe, with a chaine at his foot, to serue our Generall : for he is altogether vnprofitable at the oare.

These words, the consideration of my hard chance, and grieve to see my selfe brought into this extremity, so oppressed my hart, that I fell in a swoone, and became as dead, about foure houres : during which time they applied vnto mee diuers remedies to bring mee againe, and found (which I had felt with greater anguish, had I not lost my feeling) that they had gotten a woman in stead of a man. I came againe out of my transe : and the first object represented to mine eyes, were the faces of my brother & my husband, who held me in their armes. I know not at that houre why the shadow of death couered not mine eyes. I know not why my tounge cleaued not to the rooffe of my mouth : but I well know, that I knew not

not what I said, when my brother on the one side asked me; O sister, what apparell is this? and that my husband on the other, demâded; O wife, what a change is here? My sister, & your wife, then said my brother to my husband. This newes was no lesse strange vnto mee, then the beholding of them in this estate. It is true, that so being, it should be a contentment which might recompence the displeasure which I had to see them in such a manner. Then hauing recovered some part of my strength, I said vnto him: Brother, I am *Ambroise Augustina* your sister, and I am also the wife of Signeur *Contarin* of Arbolanchez: his worth (my good brother) and your absence gaue him vnto me for a husband, who yet left mee without consummation of our mariage: and I being too vnaduised and hardy, aduentured to seeke him out in this attire. And then I told them all the history which you haue vnderstood: and my fortune which now began to shew her selfe more fauourable, made me obtaine at their hands both beleefe and pittie. They told me how my spouse had beene taken by the Moores with two shallops wherein he was imbarqued to saile to Genes, and that he had not recovered his liberty but the euening before, and that he had not seene my brother, but at the very time when they found me in a swoune. In these gallees was the Lady which commeth with me, and her two neeces, for Italy, where her sonne hath the charge of the Kings demeanes of Sicilie. They attired mee with those clothes which are hers: and they haue this day set vs a land to refresh our selues, and to the end their friends which they haue in this City, may be merry with them. If you go to Rome, I will cause my brother to carry you to the hauē that is neereſt vnto the walls thereof. I will pay you for the boxe of Conserues, in conducting you with me to my house, or to such other place whither you would goe. And though I passe not into Italy, my brother will not faile to conduct you thither at my request.

Behold, my friends, the discourse which I had to make vnto you: and if you thinke it hard to be belieued, I maruell not at all; though indeed the truth may bee sicke, yet it cannot die.

Heere the faire *Augustina* concluded her speech: and there our Pilgrimes began to particularize the circumstances of her history, augmenting their admiration, with the embracements which *Constance* and *Auristela* gaue vnto the faire *Ambroise*, who by her husbands consent, departed to her owne house; because a woman how faire soeuer she be, serueth for nothing, but to be an impeachment of the warres.

This night the seas altered in such sort, that the Gallies were constrained to goe farre from the shore, which in those quarters is not safe to anchor in. The courteous Catalans, a terrible Nation to such as molest them, but kinde vnto such as are peaceable, who easily exchange their liues for honor, and to defend both life and honor surmount themselues, visited and feasted the Lady *Augustina*, and were thanked afterward by her brother and her husband.

Auristela, warned by so many experiences as she had made of the tempests of the sea, chose rather to passe by France, then to embarque in the gallies. *Ambroise* returned to Arragon, the gallies followed their voyage, and the Pilgrimes their iourney, entring into France by Parapignan.

CHAP.

CHAP. XIII.

Of the arrivall of our Pilgrimes in France, and how they met with three faire Ladies.

FROM Parapignan our Pilgrimes entred through Languedocke in Prouince : where in an Inne, they found three french Ladies, of such surpassing beauty, that they had borne away the garland, if *Auristela* had not beene there. According to their apparell and attendants they seemed to be gentlewomen of quality : who seeing the Pilgrimes, no lesse admired the comely feature of *Periander* and *Anthony*, then the beauty of *Auristela* & *Constance*. Approaching one to the other, and hauing saluted with French courtesie, and Spanish ceremony; the French Ladies in the Castilian language, asked who they were: for this tounge is comon enough among the French that are most curious, and ordinarily make more account of strange things then of their owne. And whilest they conferred together, *Periander* inquired of one of their followers, who they were, and whither they went; who answered in this manner :

The Duke of Nemours, a braue and wise Prince, but friend to his pleasures, being newly come to his inheritance, is determined not to marry by another mans will, but his owne; though he haue beene offered great matches with increase of estate and wealth, and that heerein hee contradicteth the Kings minde, saying, that Kings may well giue wiues to their subiects, but not an affection to receiue them. In this phantasie, he hath sent diuers of his seruants into seuerall places of France, to seek him out a vwise, who should bee no lesse famous in beauty then in birth, to the end he may espouse her, without respecting her goods: for the dowre of her nobilitie and beautie will content him. He hath vnderstood the beautie

ty of these Ladies, whose names are, *Belaminia*, *Feliflore*, and *Deleasira*; and sent me vnto them, to the end I might see them, and cause their pictures to bee drawne by a famous painter who commeth in my company. They haue also learned the Dukes intent: and as farre forth as I can perceiue, each of them wisheth the happinesse to espouse him. Neuerthelisse, because you are here, I haue determined to giue a present vnto my maister, vvhich shall deface out of his thought all the beauties that anie man can paint; in offering vnto him the pourtrait of your Pilgrime, the vniuerfall and onely Lady of all humane beauty: and if shee bee by birth as Noble, as she is faire, the seruants of my maister shall haue in this respect no more to doe, nor he ought else to desire. Tell me vpon your faith whether she be married, how she is called, and the name of her parents.

Periander, trembling heereat, thus answered; Her name is *Auristela*, her voyage is to Rome, she would neuer discouer her parents: I can assure you she is of a free condition; but in such manner free, and such a mistresse of her owne affections, that she will not subiect the same to any Prince of the earth, for that she hath already vowed herselfe to the King of heauen. And thus much I can well iustifie: for I am her brother, and knowe her most hidden and secret thoughts. Wherefore it would nothing auaille you to paint her, vnlesse to trouble your maisters minde, if perhappes he should haue a phantasie to desire her, without respecting the basenes of our parents. Yet for all this, answered the other, I will carry with mee her pourtrait, though it were onely for curiosities sake, and to cause this new miracle of beauty to bee spread ouer all France.

Herevpon they parted; *Periander* being desirous quickly to bee gone out of that place, lest hee should giue the painter any leasure to draw *Auristela's* picture.

Bartholomew hastily went to make ready his horse; grum-

grumbling against *Periander* because he was so vrgent vpon him. The Dukes man seeing *Periander* preparing himselfe to goe from thence, went to speake with him, and said, Sir, I would willingly haue intreated you to stay at the least one night in this place, to the end my painter had time to draw out your sisters face. But goe in your good time: for hee hath tolde me, that by seeing her once onely, hee hath so apprehended her in his imagination, that hee will drawe her aswell alone as if hee should beholde her euery day. *Periander* in his minde cursed the capacitee of the painter; yet gaue not ouer his journey, taking leaue of the three beautifull french Ladies, who closely embraced *Anriscela* and *Constance*; offering to beare them company to Rome, whither they also would goe to purchase the benefit of the Iubilee, and if it so pleased them they might walke together.

Anriscela gaue them thanks in as curteous a manner as she possibly could; saying, that her will depended vpon her brothers, and that neither shee nor *Constance* could tarry with them, because their brothers were going. In this sort the Pilgrims departed from the Frenchwomen: and six dayes after they came to a place in Prouince; where that befell them which you shall see in another chapter.

CHAP. XIII.

Of the misfortune that befell Periander and Anthony, who were neere to haue lost their liues in a memorable aduenture.

OVER Pilgrimes trauelled six daies through France: which is so well peopled, so thoroughly furnished with things necessary, and so delightfull, that houses of pleasure are euery where to be found; where the Gentlemen

men reside commonly almost all the yeare, without hanning any care to dwell in the towns or cities. At the end whereof they came to one of these houses not far distant from the high-way. It was about noone : the sun-beams fell vpon the earth almost perpendicularly, and the shadow of an high tower allured them to stay vnder it during the heat of the day. *Bartholomew* vnloaded his beaſt : and ſpreading a carpet on the ground, they ſate round about it, ſatisfying their great hunger with ſuch prouiſion as they had beene carefull to beare with them. But they had ſcarcely eaten the firſt morſell, when *Bartholomew*, caſting his eyes aloft, preſently ran away, crying that euery one of them ſhould withdraw themſelues. They looked vp towards heauen, and ſawe a ſhape fall, which was vpon the ground hard by *Perianders* feet, before they could diſcerne what it might be. It was a verie faire woman throwne downe from the top of the tower, which fell to the ground vpon her feet without any harme ; being vpholden by her clothes in the aire, as it were by miracle. The leap neuertheleſſe made her wholly aſtoniſhed and terrified, as alſo thoſe were who had done nothing elſe but onely ſee her fall. And at the ſame time they heard another woman, who cried, Help, Help ; this mad man will throwe me downe : and they ſaw her hauing faſt hold of a man, who ſtroue to make her take ſuch a ſkip as ſhe had done that was belowe with the Pilgrimes ; who, being a little come to herſelfe, ſaid vnto them :

Sirs, if there be any one of you that dares to goe vpa-loſt by the gate which is at the towers foot, he ſhall ſaue my childrens liues, and other weake folkes that are within.

Periander, vrged by the nobleneſſe of his courage, entered at the gate : and ſhortly after, he was ſeene at the top of the tower faſt grappled with this man who appeared to be out of his wits, from whom he ſtroue to cleare himſelfe,

selfe, hauing taken a knife out of his hands. But fortune, which would finish this tragedie with a bloudy & deadly act, ordained that they both should come to the earth; falling at the towers foot, the mad man hauing his hart pearced with the knife which *Periander* had in his hand, and *Periander* shedding at his eyes and nose great abundance of blood: for hauing no large garments to vpholde him, the blowe tooke the effect, and left him for dead.

Auristela, seeing him in that case, beleeuing vndoubtedly that he was slaine, cast herselfe vpon him with her mouth close ioyned to his, to gather into herselfe some remainder of his soule, if any were yet left. *Constance*, yeelding to passion, yeelded not to motion in running to succour him, but abode fastened to the same place wherein she was when they fell; her feet sticking to the ground like roots, or as if she had beene an image of marble. *Anthony* her brother hastened to lift them vp, and to separate the liuing from the dead. *Bartholomew* alone was he which testified his griefe by teares.

They all being in this bitter affliction, and as yet not any tounge hauing published the inward grief, they saw a company of people that came vnto them; who passing by the high-way, had seene in the aire those that fell, and came to see the end. These were the faire ladies of France, of whom we haue before spoken; *Deleasire*, *Belarminia*, and *Felislora*. Immediately they knew *Auristela* & *Periander*, whose beauties remained eternally imprinted in the imagination of al those which had once beheld them. And they had scarcely set foot on the ground to succour those whom they saw in this extremitie, but that all of them together were assailed by seauen or eight armed men, who caught holde of them at their backes. This assault made *Anthony* take in hand his boaw & arrowes, which he had alwaies ready either for offence or defence. One of those that were armed, hauing taken *Felislora* by the

the arme, and put her on his saddle-pummell before him, said to his companions; This matter is dispatched: this woman here sufficeth mee: let vs returne backe againe. *Anthony*, who neuer accepted of discourtesie for payment, laying all feare aside, set an arrowe in his boaw; and holding out his left arme as straight as he could, he drew the string with his fingers vnto his eare, in such sort that both ends of the boaw came almost together: and taking the rauisher of *Felislora* for his White, he shot so right, that without touching the Gentlewoman, faue onelie a peece of the veile that couered her head, he pearced the body of him that carried her away, through and through. One of his companions ranne to reuenge him: and before *Anthony* had leasure to helpe himselve once more with his boaw, he gaue him such a blowe with a sworde vpon his head, that hee laid him along vpon the earth, more like one dead then liuing. Which *Constance* seeing, she gaue ouer to be an image, and ranne to her brother. For parentage heateth the bloud; which is wont to frieze in the greatest amitie: and both the one and the other are tokens of vnmeasurable affection.

By this time the armed men were come out of the house: and the seruants of the three Ladies, ioyning with them, put themselues in defence of their mistresses. The rauishers perceiuing their captaine to be dead; considering that in respect of the number of those that were in ranke against them, they could get nothing in this enterprise, and that it were folly to aduenture their liues for him which had lost his owne, they turned their backs, and forsook the field. Hitherto we haue heard but fewe blowes of the sword in this combate, and little noyse of warlike instruments: the grieve which the liuing are wont to suffer for the dead, haue not troubled the aire, the tongues haue laid vp their complaints with silence. Only certaine sighes and mournings issued from the hearts of *Antristela* and *Constance*, either of vvhich held her brother

ther in her armes, vvithout abilitie to ease her grieve with one onely plaint. But in the end, heauen hauing vnbound their tongues, *Auristela* begame to complaine in this sort:

Alas, my brother ! what a fall is this ? vvho hath cast so many hopes vpon the earth. How cometh it to passe, that the greatnes of your lineage hath not opposed it self against your misfortune ? The lightnings fall on the highest mountains, and make the greatest ouerthrowes where they finde most resistance. You are a mountaine, but a mountaine of humilitie ; vvhich, vnder the shadowes of your discretion, hide your selfe from the world. You go searching your fortune in mine : but death hath stopped your pase, and is leading mine to the buriall. How assured vvill the Queene your mother bee hereof, when shee shall heare newes of your death ! Alas ! vnhappy that I am, aboue all those which haue deserued this name ; that am left alone in a strange countr̃, like the iuie, vvhich hath lost that vvhich should vpholde it.

These vvords of *Queene*, *Mountaines*, and *Greatnesse*, made all the standers by attentiuē, which heard her: and the admiration increaled by the complaint of *Constance*, who had her wounded brother in her lappe ; labouring vvith *Felstora* to stanch the blood of his hurt. Alas, said she my brother ! at how deare a rate doth fortune sell me the pleasures she did me these daies past, by the losse of your life ? Come againe to yourselfe, my brother, if you will haue me liue : if not, grant, O pitifull heauens, that one and the same destinie may shut vp our eyes ; and one and the same graue, our bodies.

With this last word she fell downe in a transe, and no more nor lesse did *Auristela* : so that they seemed to bee as much dead, or rather more then those that were hurt. The Lady which fell from the tower, who was the principall occasion of *Perianders* fall, commanded her seruants (who by this time vvere come out of the house)

to

to carry him to the bed of the Earle *Domicio* her husband, commanding also that some of them should carrie the same *Domicio* to his buriall. *Bartholomew* tooke *Anthony*, his master, in his armes : *Felislora* gaue aid vnto *Constance*; *Belarminia* and *Delesira*, to *Auristela* ; and so sorrowfully entred into the house,

CHAP. XV.

Of the wounding of Anthony and Periander, and of their recovery, with other things worthy of note.

THE reasons which the three French Ladies gaue to the two afflicted Pilgrimes, *Auristela* and *Constance*, were to small purpose : because fresh griefes cannot afford any roome for comfort ; and sorrowes that come vpon vs vnawares, admit no perswasion though it bee neuer so reasonable. Let vs therefore leaue them awhile to their weeping, whilst that the faire *Claricia* may relate vnto vs the cause of her husbands folly ; which (as shee tolde the French Ladies) came by this meanes, that before *Domicio* married her, he was in loue with a kinswoman of his, who also loued him with an intent to bee his wife : Who, dissembling the iniury shee had receiued by his marriage, sent him from time to time a number of seuerall presents, though fairer in shew then of any great value. Among the which shee sent him shirts, as *Desanira* did to *Hercules*: wherof he had no sooner put on one, but he lost his senses, and remained as a dead man about two daies, though it were taken off from him immediately ; vpon an opinion that a slaue of *Lorena* (so was this kinswoman called) was an enchantresse, and that shee had bewitched it. Indeed hee recovered life as soone as the shirt was taken from him : but with his wits so troubled, that he performed no action but like a foole ; yea, as a cruell,

cruell, furious, and enraged foole, so that it was necessary to chaine him vp. And that this day hee hauing broken his chaines, and come vp into this tower where she was, had cast her downe out of the vwindowes, vvhere but for the fauour of heauen vvwhich succoured her by meanes of her large garments, shee had broke her necke. Shee told them also, how this Pilgrime was gotten vp into the same Tower to deliuer a damosell, which the foole would also haue enforced to leape downe: but the successe was so unfortunate, that the Earle and the Pilgrime dashed themselves on the earth; the Earle beeing wounded vvith a deadly blow, and the Pilgrime hauing a knife in his hand which it seemed he had taken away from the Earle. In the meane time, *Periander* was in his bedde without knowing any body: The Physicians had recourse to due remedies: they set, in their due place, the bones that were out of ioynt: they appoynted him drinckes fit for his euill: and feeling his pulles, they found hee had some remembrance, principally of *Auristela*, to whom with a weake voyce he onely said, that he died in the Catholike faith, and in that which he had confirmed vnto her by an oath, to loue her vnto death.

They stanchd also *Anthones* bloud: and the Chirurgians hauing searched the vvound, assured his sister that it was not mortall, and that by Gods helpe he should be quickly healed, not forgetting after the Spanish custome to demand rewards for this good newes: which *Felislora* gaue them, preuenting *Constance*, who for all this forgot not also to giue them gits, nor they to receiue them, because they would not be any thing scrupulous.

The wounded persons were a moneth or more in the healing, vvithout being forsaken by our French Ladies, the amity was so great which they had contracted together, and the sweet content which they had found in the conuersation of *Auristela* and *Constance*, and their two brothers; especially *Felislora*, who could not depart

from *Anthones* beds head, louing him, but yet with such an honest loue, that it extended no further then good will, and the obligation of a friendly office which shee had receiued of him, when his arrow deliuered her from the hands of *Robertin*; who as she told them, was a knight her neighbor, who had a long time sought to marry her: but hauing knowne him to be of a cruell, vnconstant, and phantasticall disposition, as well by the report shee heard bruted abroad, as by the experience which her selfe had made, she would not consent to his demand. And shee thought, that pricked forward by her disdaines, hee had followed her in the way, to carry her vvith him, & to do that with her by force, which he could not obtaine with good will; but that *Anthones* shaft had stayed his wicked designs, which moued her to witnesse her thankfulness in this manner.

When those that were hurt were recouered, and that their strength vvas renewed, they reuiued their desires, at the least in this, to prosecute their iourney; which also they put in effect, prouiding themselves of all necessaries. Neyther would the French women relinquish the Pilgrimes; whom now they obserued with admiration & respect, because by the words of *Anrissela's* complaint, they conceiued that they must needs be great estates: for sometimes Maiesty couereth it selfe with lynesie-woollie, and greatnesse is attired with humility.

In effect, they beheld them in perplexity. Their poore company made them to be esteemed, at their hands, but of meane birth: the liuely and comely feature of their persons, and the beauty of their faces, aduanced their quality to heauen; and so they went floting in the vncertainty of their beliefe. The French Ladies would haue them to goe on horsebacke, because the fall of *Periander* would not as yet permit him firmly to walk a foot. *Felshire*, obliged by the stroke *Anthony* had receiued for her sake, alwaies walked by his side, speaking of *Robertin's* attempt, whom

whom they left dead and buried ; of the strange history of the Earle *Domicio*, whom his cousins presents had be-
reaued of iudgement, and after of his life ; and of the mi-
raculous leape of his wife, more worthy to bee admired
then beleueed. They came to a riuer, difficult to passe o-
uer : *Periander* would haue had them seek out the bridge,
but his counsell was not followed. And as in a flocke of
sheep, that which goes before, is followed by all the rest
immediatly, *Belarminia* no sooner entred into the water,
but all the other went after her, *Periander* beeing alwaies
by *Auristela's* side, and *Anthony* by *Felislora* & *Constance*.
Fortune would, that the swift stream of the water dizzied
the head of *Felislora* in such sort, that shee fell from her
horse into the middest of the Riuer ; after whom *Anthony*
cast himselfe immediatly, with incredible nimblenesse,
and set her like another *Europa* on the sand at the further
side of the riuer. *Felislora* thanked him for this second
seruice, and said vnto him, that hee was very courteous
for a Spaniard. VVhereunto *Anthony* made answere, that
if these courtesies did proceed from such dangers, hee
vvould somewhat esteeme them : but the cause that bred
them, killed in him the contentment which hee should
receiue, and made them lesse pleasing then if they had pro-
ceeded from some other fountaine.

Finally, hauing all passed the riuer ; they vvnt
to lye that night in a house of the Country vsed as an
Inne. That vvchic happened to them whilst they
were there, requireth a new stile, and a new Chapter.

CHAP. XVI.

How our Pilgrimes met with Louyse, the Polonians wife, and of other accidents worthy of this history.

THE first person that *Constance* met withall, vvvas a young vvoman of good countenance, vvho might be about the age of two and twenty yeares, attired very handsomely after the Spanish fashion; vvho approaching vnto *Constance*, said vnto her in the Castilian tóngue: Praised be God, vvho maketh me see people of my country, at the least I shall heare spoken *Vuestra merced*. By these vvords, then, vvou are a Spaniard, answered *Constance*. And vvhat if I be? said she againe: Indeed I am so, and of the best land in Castile. And of vvhat, replied *Constance*? Of *Talauera de la Reyna*, answered she. Shee had scarcely spoken this vvord, but it fell into the minde of *Constance*, that this must be the vvife of *Benedre* the Polonian, vvho had beene prisoner at *Madrill*, vvhere her husband had left her, at the perswasions of *Periander*: and discoursing in her imaginatiõ, in a moment, an infinit number of things vvvhich succeeded according to her thought, she took her by the hand, and brought her into the room vvhere *Amriscela* vvvas; vvhom taking aside vvith *Periander*, she said vnto them: You doubt vvwhether my Science of diuination be true or false; vvvhich cannot bee confirmed in speaking of things to come, vvvhich God onely knoweth: and if any other light vvpon them, it is cyther by hap hazard, or by experience in other like cases. But if I tell you matters past, vvvhich neuer came, nor could come to my knowledge; vvhat vvill you say? Will you see the triall? This faire vvoman here in your presence is of *Talauera*, vvvhó vvvas married to a Polonian, vvvhose name (if I be not deceived) is *Ortil Benedre*, vvvhom she offended by some light behauiour, vvith a young man, keeping

ping at an Inne, right ouer-against her house, and indu-
ced by youth, and her vnconstant minde, ran away with
him to Madrill, where they were both prisoners, and
where I beleeue shee hath vndergone many troubles be-
fore her comming hither, which I desire that she her selfe
should relate vnto vs: for though I diuine thereof also,
she will tell them with more particularities, and in better
fashion. O good God, said the young woman, vvho is
this Pilgrime that hath read my thoughts so well? Who
is this Diuineresse, that so perfectly knoweth the infa-
mous history of my life? It is true, that I am this aduultress,
this prisoner of whom you speake, condemned onely to
be banished for tenne yeares, because there was none to
follow the matter against me. I am at this present with a
spanish souldier, eating my bread with sorrow, and lea-
ding such a life, that euery minute I wish for death. My
first loue died in prison: This man, whose name I know
not, succoured me whilest I was in hold, got mee from
thence, and now leades me about in the world at his plea-
sure, and to my griefe, for I am not so ignorant, but I
well vnderstand what danger my soule incurreth by li-
uing thus like a vagabond: for Gods sake sirs, I pray you,
because you are Spaniards, because you are Chrillians,
and honest people of good calling, as I learne by your
outward appearance, deliuer mee from this souldiers
hands; and I shall be as much bound vnto you, as if you
had freed me from a Lyons pawes.

Auristela and *Periander* much maruelled at the prudent
discretion of *Constance*, which they seconded vvith their
owne, as being moued to fauor this young woman with
all their power. Shee told them that the Spanisch souldi-
er did not alwaies keepe her company, but went a dayes
journey before or behinde, that the officers of Iustice
might not discover them. All this falls out well, said *Pe-
riander*, we will finde meanes to content your desire: and
shee that was so well able to diuine of your life past, well

knoweth how to fit your turne in things to come. Goe not from vs: for your age and beauty are the greatest enemies you can haue in a strange country.

The young woman wept: *Auristela* and *Constance*, mollified with her teares, wept for company; which obliged *Periander* quickly to finde some meanes to get her thence.

Whilest they were in these tearms, *Bartholomew* came and said vnto them: My masters, come and see the strangest sight that euer you saw. He spake this as one put in a teare, that they all followed him, thinking to goe and see some great maruell: and in a place apart, not farre from that where they were, they saw a chamber all couered with blacke, the darkenesse whereof would not suffer them particularly to discerne what was there. And as they viewed it, there came forth an olde man attired in mourning apparell, who said vnto them:

Gentlemen, if you desire to see my Lady *Ruperta*, I will helpe you to a sight of her within these two houres, and she shall not see you: which will giue you cause to admire her perfection. Sir, answered *Periander*: this seruant whom wee haue heere, brought vs hither to see a maruell, and hitherto we haue seene nothing but a chamber hanged with blacke in token of sorrow, whereat wee nothing maruell. If you come againe at the houre I haue told you, answered the old man, you shall finde whereat to maruell: for you must know, that in this chamber is lodged the Lady whom I haue named, which not a yeare since, was married with the Earle Lambert a Scottishman; a marriage that cost her husbands life, and hath brought the woman to such tearms, that euery step she goeth, she is in danger to lose her owne. The cause whereof is, that *Claudius Rubicon* of Scotland, of an amorous behauior, but proud by reason of his wealth, was in loue with my Lady, whilest shee was a maide: who though shee hated him not, yet at the least she despised him, as was proued by

by

by her marrying of the Earle my master. *Rubicon* iudged the speedy resolution of my Mistresse, an vndermining of his honor; as though *Ruperta* had no parents to command her; nor expresse obligations, which had in a manner constrained her: besides, her age was more answerable to the Earles, then that of *Rubicon*, who was now olde, and had a sonne about twenty yeares olde; a braue Gentleman, and better conditioned then his Father. It then so happened, that my Lady *Ruperta* being gone one day to walke with her husband to their house in the Country, we met, at a time, *Rubicon* well accompanied, when we least thought vpon it. He saw my Lady, and her lookes awaked in him the remembrance of such wrong as he supposed shee had done him: so that vvrath was ingendred where loue had beene, with a desire to worke her some displeasure. And as the reuengements of those that haue loued well, surmount the offences which they haue receiued: *Rubicon* full of despite, impatience, and hardinesse, set his hand to his sword, and ranne at the innocent Earle (who, knowing nothing of his anger, had no leysure to preuent the dammage which he feared not) and thrusting his sword through his body, said vnto him; Thou shalt pay that thou owest mee: and if this be a cruelty, that which thy wife vseth towards me is greater; for her disdaines haue made me die, not once alone, but a hundred thousand times.

I was present when this vvas done, I heard the vvords, saw the blowe vvith mine eyes, touched the wound with my hands, and gaue eare to the complaints of my Mistresse, vvhich pearced the very heauens. We went to bury the Earle: and before he vvas laid in his tombe, my Lady appointed his head to be cut off. And when nothing was left but the bones, she caused it to be put in a little chest of siluer, whereon laying her hand, shee tooke this oath. But I had forgotten to tel you, that *Rubicon*, either through negligence, or cruelty, or (it may be) troubled with hor-

ror of this bloody murder; had left his sword in my masters body, whereon the blood yet to this day sheweth very fresh. I say then that shee spake these words: I unhappy *Ruperta*, to vvhom the heauens haue giuen the name of faire, make a vow to the same heauens, laying my hands on these sorrowfull reliques, to reuenge my husbands death with all my power and industry, though I should thereby a thousand times hazard this vvretched life; vvithout being astonished by any paines, or that any prayers shall be vvanting vnto those vvho are able to fauour me: And vntill I haue executed my desire of this, if not Christian, yet iust vengeance, I sweare that my apparell shall be alwaies blacke, my chambers mournfull, my linnen sadde, and solitariness it selfe my company. These reliques shall be present at my Table, to the end they may torment mee; that this head vvithout a tongue may bid mee reuenge his death: and that the blood vpon this sword may trouble mine, and not let me rest vntill I bee reuenged. Hauing so said, it seemed that her continuall teares were somewhat moderated, and some intermission giuen to her sighings. Shee is now in the way to Rome, to craue succours of the Princes of Italy, against the murderer of her husband; who threateneth, and yet is afraid of her, knowing vvell that a gnat may hurt more, then an Eagle can benefit. You may see her within these two houres, as I haue already told you: and if shee doe not make you maruell, eyther I know not my selfe to be here, or your hearts must be of marble.

Thus the olde Esquire ended his discourse: and the Pilgrimes, vvithout seeing *Ruperta*, began to wonder at her resolution.

CHAP. XVII.

The marriage of the faire Ruperta, and Crorianus, which is accomplished by a rare and strange adventure.

ANger, as some haue said, is a turning about of the bloud next the heart, vvhich is troubled by sight of the obiekt that hath offended a man; and reuiuing the same in the memory, aimeth at reuenge for the last end, contenting him that taketh it, vvwhether it be agreeable, or contrary to reason. Hereof the faire *Ruperta* is an euident instance: vvho vvvas so outrageously iniured, and so furiously passionated with desire to be auenged of her enemy, that albeit she knew he was already dead, yet she extended her choler vpon all his progeny, neyther would she leaue so much as one of them aliue, if her power had bene answerable to her vvill: for the wrath of a vvoman is not limited by any bounds. All of them vvvere there vvhen the houre came wherein they should see her: and without being by her perceiued, they found her exceedingly faire, attired with large mourning habits, and sitting at a table wherein was her husbands head in a siluer charger, the sword vvhich killed him, and a shirt yet bloody: all these sorrowfull tokens awaked her anger, vvhich had no need to bee waked, because it neuer slept. Shee rose vp on her feet, & laying her right hand on her husbands head, shee began to reiterate the vow vvhich the Squire had told them of, adioyning her accustomed oath with wordes more aggrauating the same. Teares & fire issued from her eyes, and sighes and smoake from her mouth: sometimes she brandished the murdering sword, and sometimes kissed the bloody shirt. Her sobs interrupted her vvordes, and her passions estranged her from her selfe. She was in the midst of the pitte of griefe, and as it vvwere at the gates of her pleasure (for those vvhich threaten,

content

content themselves in threatning) vvhhen one of her seruants came vnto her, like a blacke shadow, so much hee was loden with mourning apparell, vvho said vnto her; Madame, your enemies sonne is come hither with certaine of his men: consider if it please you vvwhether vvee shall tell him that you are heere, or that you are not here at all. Neyther the one nor the other, answered *Ruperta*; but giue my men sufficient instructions, that they name mee not vnawares, nor discouer mee vpon sette purpose: And saying this, shee tooke away the tokens of remembrance, commanding the chamber to be shut, and that none should speake with her:

The Pilgrimes returned, she remained pensue alone, muttering such like words:

See *Ruperta*, how the pittifull heauens haue brought into thy hands, like a simple beast to the sacrifice, the soule of thine enemy; for sonnes, especially hauing no more but one, are parts of their fathers soule. Vp *Ruperta*, forget thy selfe to be a vvoman, or at the least remember that thou art a vvoman iniured. Thy husbands bloud cryeth after thee; his head commeth vnto thee, saying: Vengeance my deare vvife, for they haue slaine mee that neuer offended them. The pride of *Holofernes* astonished not the humility of *Judith*; it is true, her cause and mine were different: she punished Gods enemy, and I vvill punish a man whom I know not if he be mine or not. The loue of her country put the sword into her hands, and I take it for loue of my spouse. But wherefore make I these extrauagant comparifons? What should I doe else, but shut mine eyes, and thrust the weapon of the murdering father, into his sonnes body? Whether he be guiltlesse or not, my vengeance shall be the greater, by how much his fault is the lesse: I shall purchase the name of being reuenged, whatsoeuer can happen. The desires vvwhich one would accomplish, are not stayed vpon inconueniences though mortall: let me bring mine to effect, though the
issue

issue doe cost mee my life. Hauing said this, shee found meanes to shut her selfe in the chamber of *Crorianus*, who was the sonne of *Rubicon*; whereinto one of his seruants, corrupted by gifts, gaue her ealie entrance; beleeuing neuertheless to doe his maister good seruice, in bringing to his bed so faire a woman as *Ruperta*: who, being placed where she could not be seene, and commending herselfe to the guidance of heauen, with wonderfull silence, attended her contentment which shee placed in the deare of *Crorianus*. Shee carried a sharpe-pointed knife for the instrument of her cruell sacrifice; which shee thought fitter for her designe, then any other kinde of weapons. Shee bare also a darke Lanterne, wherein burned a wax-candle: and waiting for the time of execution, she so held her winde that she scarcely durst breathe into the aire. What will not an angry woman effect? what mountaines of difficulties will not her desires make leuell? and what extraordinarie cruelties seeme not sweet vnto her?

In the end the houre came, *Crorianus* went to bed, and by trauell of his iourney fell asleepe; yeelding himselfe to rest without any suspicion of death. *Ruperta* gaue attentive eare if she could vnderstand that he slept: and aswell by the time that hee had beene laid since he went to bed vntill then, as also by some signes which none make but in sleeping, she was assured that hee was asleepe. In this assurance shee opened the Lanterne, whereby the chamber was light, and she looked where to set her feet, that she might goe to the bed without stumbling. Faire & pleasing murtheresse, execute your anger, satisfie your vengeance, extinguish and take from the world the enemy whom you haue before you, seeing you are able to do it. But beware, O faire, that you looke not vpon this faire *Cupid* whom you goe to discouer: for in a moment hee will defeat all the frame and building of your thoughts. Shee came neere; and with a trembling hand vncovered the

the face of *Crorianus*, who slept soundly ; and found in him the property of *Medusa* which conuerteth into marble. She found so much beauty, as was able to make the knife fall out of her hand, and inforced her to giue place vnto the consideration what a horrible crime shee was about to commit. Shee sawe, that the beauty of *Crorianus* put to flight the shadowes of death which shee would giue him, as the Sunne chaseth away the mists before his beams: and in stead of the bloody sacrifice which she purposed to make of his heart, shee made vnto him a burnt offering of her owne. Alas ! said shee, generous Knight, How much better shouldst thou be my husband then the object of my vengeance ? Wherein art thou culpable of thy fathers deed ? and what punishment may be giuen to him that is not faultie ? Cheare vp thy selfe & be merry, noble Knight ; let vengeance and cruelty remain shut vp in my heart : for when it shall be knowne, I shall get a better name in being pitifull, then in being thirstie of reuenge.

And in saying this ; wholly repenting, wholly troubled, the Lanterne fell out of her hand vpon *Crorianus* his breast ; who awaked, feeling the heat of the wax-candle which was then put out. *Ruperta*, finding herselfe in this darkenes in the chamber, would haue got forth, but knew not how to finde the doore. *Crorianus* called his men, tooke holde of his sworde, leaped out of his bed, and walking vp and downe the chamber, iustled against *Ruperta* : who trembling said vnto him ;

Kill me not, *Crorianus*, albeit I am a woman, who not an houre agoe would haue slaine thee, and could haue done it : yet now thou seest me in tearmes to pray thee that thou wouldst not take away my life.

With that, his seruants came in and brought lights, and *Crorianus* sawe and knewe this faire widow, as one should behould the bright Moone enuironed vvith white cloudes. What meaneth this, Madame, said hee

hee vnto her? are these the paths of vengeance vvhich haue brought you hither? will you haue mee to make amends for the outrages which my father hath done you? what shall I say of the knife which I see? what signe is this, but that you came hither to haue my life? My father is dead: and the dead cannot giue satisfaction for the wrongs they haue done. Those that are alieue may make a recompence: and I, that now represent the person of my father, will recompence you for the offence he hath done you, in the best sort that I can. But first of all let mee touch you: for I will see if you bee a ghost that are come hither to kill me, or deceiue mee, or better mine estate.

Let mine be worse, if heauen finde any meanes to impair it, if I came not the last day into this Inne without any remembrance of thee: Thou camest hither afterward, I sawe not thy coming in, but I heard thy name; which awaked my choler, and stirred me vp to reuenge. I agreed with one of thy seruants, that he should shut me this night in this chamber; and stopping his mouth with some gift, haue brought to passe that he spake not a word. I came in with this knife, augmented the desire I had to kill thee, issued from the place where I was; and by the brightnes of the Lanterne which I bore, I vncovered thy face: which so changed my affections, that good-vill sprung vp there where hatred was: the knife turned againe in my hand: my desire of reuenge vanished: I let fall the Lanterne, the fire thereof awaked thee: thou diddest cry out: I was in a confusion; from whence came that which thou hast seene. I will haue no more minde of vengeance, nor euer thinke vpon the wrong done vnto mee. Liue in peace: for I will bee the first that shall render good deeds for iniuries, if it bee well done to forgive thee that vvhich thou hast not committed.

* Madam, answered *Crevianus*, my father vvould haue married you, but you vvould not. Despite made him kill
your

your husband : they are both dead, and I am left for your seruice if you please. In stead of my death vvhich you haue desired, I offer you my life ; and beseech you to receiue me for your husband, if peraduenture you bee not some spirit that beguile mee : for great fortunes vvhich come vnlooked for, bring alwaies vvith them some suspicion.

Giue mee this hand, answered *Ruperta*, and you shall see, sir, that this body is not phantasticall ; and that the soule which I giue you is pure, simple, and veritable.

The seruants of *Crobianus* vv ere witnesses of these embracements and hands interchangeably giuen in marriage. Sweet peace this night triumphed ouer this cruell vvarrre, the field of battell was turned into a marriage-bed, peace vv as bred of anger, life of death, and contentment of displeasure. The day came, and found the married couple one in anothers armes : the Pilgrimes rose, with desire to knowe what the sorrowfull *Ruperta* had effected vpon the coming of her enemies ; in part vvhereof they were already informed. The report of this new marriage came to their hearing, and they went to the chamber of this late married couple, to wish them prosperitie of their marriage. As they entred into the chamber, they sawe issuing out of *Ruperta's* the antient squire, who had related her story vnto them ; bearing the charger wherein was her first husbands head, with the shirt and sworde which so oft times had renewed *Ruperta's* teares. He told them, that hee carried them into some place where they might not trouble the present reioicing, by remembrance of misfortunes passed. Hee murmured at the facilitie of *Ruperta*, and of all women in generall : and the least imputation hee laid vpon them, was, to call them variable and phantasticall. The married persons arose before the Pilgrimes came in : the seruants both of *Ruperta* & *Crobianus* made merry together : and this Inne was conuerted into a royall palace worthy of so high a wedding.

In

In the end, *Periander* and *Auristela*, *Constance* and *Anthony*, discoursed with the bridegroome and his wife, and tolde them part of their liues, at the least so much thereof as ought to be spoken.

CHAP. XVIII.

Of the comming of the Hermite Soldin, and how those in the Inne welcomed him.

THEY were in these tearmes, when at the gate of the Inne there entered a man, who by his long & white beard, appeared to bee more then fourescore yeares of age: hee was not attired like a Pilgrime, nor as a religious person, though hee resembled both the one and the other. He had his head vncovered, shauen, and bald in the midst; and on either side hung downe his long white haire: hee sustained his crooked body vpon a writen sheep-hooke which serued him for a staffe. In effect, hee shewed in all respects to bee a reuerend olde man: At whose feet the mistresse of the Inne kneeling as soone as shee sawe him, said thus vnto him;

Father, I will accompt this day amongst the happiest of my life, since I haue deserued to see you in my house: for you neuer come hither but for my profit. And turning towards the standers by, she proceeded, saying: Gentlemen, this mountaine of snowe, and this image of white marble which here you see mouing, is the famous *Souldin*; whose renowne is extended not onely through France, but through all parts of the earth.

Soft and faire, mistresse, answered the olde man, praise me not so much: for good renown is many times engendred by lying. It is not the comming in, but the going out, which makes men happie: and vertue, which hath vice for her end, is rather vice then vertue. Neuertheles,

I will confirme the good opinion which you haue of me, by an aduice I will now giue you : which is, to looke to your house ; because that from this marriage and reioycing, a fire shall be kindled which will consume it almost euery whit. Whereupon *Crobianus* said to his wife ; Without doubt this man should bee a Magician or Diuiner, seeing he foretelleth things to come. The old man ouerheard this word, and answered ; I am neither Magician nor Diuiner ; but haue knowledge in the Iudicialls : which science, well vnderstood, teacheth as it were to diuine. And my maisters, beleue me for this once : if you please, leaue this house, and come into mine in the wood hard by ; where, though you bee not so commodiously lodged, you shall be at the least in better assurance.

He had not yet ended his speech, ere *Bartholomew* entered into the chamber, crying, Sirs, the kitchen is on a flame, because the fire hath taken holde of the prouision of wood which was there next adioynng ; in such sort, that all the water in the sea vvil not quench it. This voice was followed by the like of other seruants in the Inne, and confirmed by noise and cracking of the fire vvchich they heard euen at the place where they were. This so euident a truth making *Soldins* words to be credited, *Perauder* said vnto him ; (in taking *Auristela* in his armes, before he tried if the fire might be quenched or not) Sir, lead vs into your house : for the danger of this heere, is too manifest. *Anthony* did the like with his sister *Constance* and *Felispore*, whom *Delesira* and *Belarminia* followed. The yong vvoman of *Talauera* tooke holde of *Bartholomewes* girdle, and he of his mules halter : and all together vvith the married couple and the hostesse, vvho knewe the prophecies of *Soldin* vvere not false, vvith him. The other which remained at the Inne, endeaoured to quench the fire : but the rage thereof made them quickly see, that they laboured in vaine. The house burnt all that day : and if the fire had surprised them in the night,

it

it had beene a miracle if any one of them had escaped. They came at last to the wood, where they found an hermitage; and within the same, a doore, which seemed to be the entrance of a Caue. Before they came into the Hermitage, *Soldin* said to all those which followed him: Sirs, these trees which you see, with their delightfull shades shall serue you in stead of couering, and the sweet graisse of this meadow for your bedding. He leade these Gentlemen into my caue, because it is necessary so to do, and not because they shall be better lodged: and immediately he called *Periander*, *Auristela*, *Constance*, the three French Ladies, *Ruperta*, *Anthony*, and *Crobianus*, and (leauing the other without) shut himselfe with them in his caue. *Bartholomew*, and *Louyse* of *Talamera*, seeing that they were not of the number of those whom *Soldin* had called, eyther for despise, or mooued by their flitting humor, agreed both together, one to forsake his maisters; and the other, the Ladies vnto whom she had testified so much repentance: wherefore they lightened the packe, of two Pilgrimes habits; and *Louyse* a horsebacke, and the gallant a foote, made their escape as they had layd their plot. It hath beene said before, that all actions, whether they be probable or not, ought to be related in an history, because the history must not bee found but to speake the truth, whether it appeare to bee such or otherwise. Vpon this ground the Author heereof saith, that *Soldin* went downe with all these Ladies and Knights by the stayres of this darke caue, and that in lesse then fourescore pases the heauen appeared cleere and bright, and they entred into a pleasant meadow, vvhich contented the eyes, and reioyced the most afflicted mindes: And *Soldin* placing himselfe in the midst of the company, said vnto them;

Sirs, this is no inchantment, and this caue serueth onely for a way to come vp afterward vnto this valley; which, a league from this place, hath another more ea-

sie and pleasant entrance. I haue builded this Hermitage,
 and with mine armes and continuall trauell haue made
 this caue, and gotten this vallie to mine owne behoofe,
 the fruits whereof nourish mee abundantly. Heere, ef-
 chewing warre, I haue found peace, farre from great men
 and the world whom I serued. Heere I see no Master to
 command mee, nor Lady to disdain me, nor seruant to
 displease mee: heere I am seruant and master of my selfe:
 and employing my soule in contemplation for which she
 was created, I bend my desires & thoughts directly vnto
 heauen. Heere I haue gotten perfection in study of the
 Mathematikes, obserued the course of the starres, and
 the motion of the Sun and Moone. To conclude, here I
 haue found things to make me glad, and others to afflict
 me; which although they bee yet to come, are neuerthe-
 lesse certain & veritable. And by only experience, which
 I haue gotten onely by time and solitariness, I say vnto
 thee *Crorianus* (and seeing I know thy name before I euer
 saw thee, thou oughtest to beleue that I vnderstand well
 what I speak vnto thee) that thou shalt enioy thy *Ruperta*
 many yeares; And thou *Periander*, I promise vnto thee a
 good successe of thy Pilgrimage, assuring thee that *Auri-
 stela* shall not long continue thy sister; nor that shee shall
 soone die vpon this occasion. Thou *Constance* shalt arise
 from the title of Countesse, to the estate of a Duchesse; &
 thy brother *Anthony* shall be aduanced to such a degree as
 his valor doth deserue. These French Ladies, albeit they
 attaine not to the end of their desires at this present, shall
 compasse others; whereby at one and the same time they
 shall be honoured and contented. The experience which
 you haue made of my words, hauing foretold you the fir-
 ing of your Inne, and knowing your names before I had
 seen you, or any other giuen me information, should ob-
 lige you to beleue me: and the rather when you shall find
 that *Bartholomew* your seruant, & the young Castilian of
 Talauera, are gone away with the bagage, & left you afoot.

Follow

Follow them not, for you shall not ouertake them; *Louyse* is more appertaining to earth then heauen, and will sooner follow her owne inclination then your counsell. I am a Spaniard: which obligeth mee to be courteous and veritable. In courtesie I offer vnto you all that these meadowes afford me; and with truth, the experience of all such things as I haue told you. And if you maruell to see a Spaniard in a strange land; know this, that there are places in the world more healthful for one then another; and this heere fitteth my turne about all others in the earth. The houses, granges, and villages round about are all Catholike; I receiue the Sacraments with them, and seeke what the fields yeeld for sustenance of my life, whereby I thinke to goe to the immortall blisse of him that is eternall: Let vs returne aloft, to refresh our bodies, as below we haue contented our soules.

CHAP. XIX.

How the Pilgrimes tooke their leaue of Soldin: and of the returne of Bartholomew, which had fledde away with the baggage.

THE dinner was made ready, with small expenses: which was no great nouelty for the Pilgrimes, who then called to minde the barbarous Ile, and that of the Hermites, where *Rutilio* abode; at which places they did eat the like fruits, and almost had the like diet. They also remembered the false Prophecy of the Ilanders, the predictions of *Maurice*, and *Chariffe* the Moore: which ioyned with those of *Soldin*, they thought they were compassed round with diuinations, and drenched to their very soules in iudiciall Astrology.

The dinner was short and sober: after which *Soldin* ac-

compained them to the gates; where they found that *Bartholomew* and the young *Castilian* were gone with their provision of necessities, the want whereof put them all in great care : for with their furniture, they had also carried away their money. *Anthony* was vexed more then they all, and would haue followed them : but *Soldin* told him that he should not put himselfe to that paines ; for that *Bartholomew* repenting his theft, would returne the next morning, and bring backe that which he had carried away. Moreouer, *Felslore* offered to lend him whatsoever he should need for expenses, both for himselfe and his company, till they came to Rome.

Whilest they were in these tearmes, they saw passe before them, eight men on horseback, amongst whom was a woman sitting on a Mule, attired in clothes of field Greene, euen to her hat, vpon which waued a plume of diuers rich feathers, hauing also a scarfe of Greene taffata before her face. They passed before the Pilgrimes and saluted them onely with bowing the head, and spake not a word, and were saluted with the like. But one of their company, being behinde, asked of the same pilgrimes, as he passed by, a little water ; which they gaue him, and demanded of him who those were that went before, and the gentlewomen whom they carried with them. Heereunto the passenger answered :

He which goes before, is the Lord *Alexander Castreucio*, a gentleman of Capua, & one of the richest men of Italy. Shee whom hee conducteth, is *Isabel Castreucio* his Niece, who was borne in Spaine, where her father lately died. Her Vncle now is conueying her to Capua, to be married, whereof in mine opinion shee is not vvell content. It is not then because she goeth to be married, said the squire of *Rupertia*, but because the iourney is long : for I believe there is no woman but is vvell content with such a matter. I referre my selfe heerein, said the passenger to her that is so affected : but I know well, that this woman

goes

goes in great sadnesse; and the cause thereof, shee ought best to know: but farewell, because they are already a good way off; and pricking after, hee left the Pilgrimes with *Soldin*. From vvhom being departed, they resolved to go out of France by Daulphinie; and in going through Piemont, and the estate of Milan, to come to Florence, and from thence to Rome. Following then this way, with purpose to make somewhat longer iournies; the next day betimes in the morning, they saw the fugitiue *Bartholomew* coming towards them, bringing with him his beast charged with the stuffe, and hee himselfe apparelled like a Pilgrime. All of them shouted out when they saw him, asking the cause of his running away, his habit, and of his returne. Whereunto, kneeling before *Constance*, and weeping, hee answered thus:

I know not how I came to runne from you: my habit, you see is a Pilgrimes: and my returne is, to restore that which I bore away. The stuffe is all vvhole, except two Pilgrimes habits; vvhwhereof I beare one, and the other hath made the vvench of Talauera to be a Pilgrime. And the Diuell take Loue, and the villain which taught it me: and that which is vvorfe, I detest and shun her, for I haue not any forces which doe not oppose themselues against those of her pleasure. Dismiss me if you please, and suffer mee to returne, for *Louyse*, stayes for mee: and know that I returne vvithout a penny in my purse, trusting in the good grace of my mistresse, more then in the nimblenesse of my hands, which were neuer addicted to theeuery.

Periander gaue him many reasons to hinder his wicked purpose: *Auristela* vsed many, so also did *Constance* and *Anthony*: but this vvas to preach to the wildernesse, & to vvasste their speech to the vvinde. *Bartholomew* wiped the teares from his eyes, left the prouision; and shewing them his back, left them all in maruell at his loue and simplicity. *Anthony* seeing him depart as fast as he could

runne, put an arrow in his boaw, vvvhich hee neuer drew in vaine, vvith purpose to stop him, and with one blowe to heale him of his loue, and of his folly. But *Felstlore* impeached him, saying; That he had punishment enough, to follow a foolish vvoman. You say true, Madame, answered *Anthony*; and seeing you giue him his life, vvho shall hee bee that can take it from him? Finally, they travelled many daies vvithout any aduenture worthy to be recited.

They entred into Milan, admired the greatnesse of the City, her wealth, and her trades-men, the abundance of her fruites, the greatnesse of her Temples, and industry of her inhabitants. They heard one tell their Hoste, that there was a disputation in the Vniuersity that day, to knowe whether Loue might be without ieaiousie. It may, said *Periander*: and to proue this verity, wee need spend no great time. I know not vvhat this Loue is, said *Anriscela*, but yet I know what it is to loue vvell. I vnderstand not this manner of speech, said *Belarminja*, nor the difference you make betweene Loue, and louing vvell. To loue vvell, answered *Anriscela*, may be without a vehement cause, vvvhich moueth the will: as a seruant may be loued which serueth well; an image or painting which liketh you, which will neuer cause you to be ieaalous. But Loue is a vehement passion of the minde, as I haue heard say, vvvhich may minister, if not ieaiousie, yet at the least, feare, yea such as may procure death: from which I thinke that Loue cannot bee exempted. Sister, said *Periander*, you haue spoken much, and yet very well, because there is no louer in possession of that which he loueth, vvho feareth not to lose it. There is no prosperity so great, which is not subiect to some ouerthrow, nor any mayle so strong which can stay the wheele of Fortune. And if the desire which vrgeth vs to conclude our voyage were not a lette vnto me, it may be I would make you see this day in the Academy, that Loue may be without ieaiousie, but

but not without feare. They abode foure daies at Milan: which being past, they went to Luques; a finall towne, but faire, which vnder the protection of the Empire and Spaine, conserueth her liberty. There the Spaniards are better entertained then in any place of the world: the cause whereof is this; that they command not there, but intreat: and because they tarry not there aboue a day, they giue no leysure to the inhabitants to know their naturall disposition, which euery where is esteemed arrogant. There one of the strangest aduentures happened vnto our passengers, of all that haue been declared in the procelle of this booke.

CHAP. XX.

The history of Isabell Castrucio, who feined her selfe to be possessed.

THe Innes of Luques are able to lodge a company of Souldiers: in one of which our passengers lodged, being conducted by the warders of the gate, who deliuered them to the Hostle by tale, to the end hee might deliuer them again vnto them in like manner in the morning when they should depart. At the gate, *Ruperta* saw a Physician who talked to the mistresse of the Inne, saying vnto her: I am not yet certaine whether this maide be out of her wits, or possessed with an euill spirit; and lest I should faile, I beleuee shee is both. But yet I haue hope shee shall recouer her health, so that her vncke doe not hasten to depart from this place. Iesus, then said *Ruperta*, are we come hither to alight at the lodging of Demoniacques? Vnto whom the Hostesse answered; You may come in without scrupulositie, Madame: and if you knew what is within, you would come hither a hundred leagues. Then they all alighted: and *Auristela* and *Constance*, which

had heard the words of the hostesse, asked her what it was that might be seene in this house, to induce them to come so farre? Come with me, answered the hostesse, and you shall see as much as I tell you. And in so saying, shee brought them into a chamber, where they saw on a bed, a very faire maide, seeming to be sixteene or seuentene yeeres of age: she had her armes tyed to the posts at the beds head, and two women looked for her legs to fasten them in like manner: To whom the sicke woman saide, that it was sufficient to tye her armes. And turning to the Pilgrimes: Figures of heauen, said she, Angels of flesh; without doubt I belieue you are come to restore mee to health: for other thing cannot be hoped for, from so faire a company, and so Christian a visitation. I coniure you by your beauty, cause me to be loosed; for with foure or fve bits which I will giue my selfe on my arme, I shall be satisfied: because I am not so madde as I seeme to be; and he that tormenteth me, is not so cruell but hee will suffer me to bite my selfe.

My poore Niece, said an olde man who was come into the chamber, and who is he that tormenteth thee, and whom thou saist will permit thee to bite thy selfe? Commend thy self to God, *Isabel*: & strive to eat, not thy own flesh, but that which thy Vncle will giue thee; who loues thee so dearely, that, that which liueth in the ayre, that which is maintained in the water, and that which is nourished in the earth, I wil giue thee; for I haue both means and will. Whereto the maide answered; Leaue me alone with these Angells: it may be the enemy the Diuell will flye from me, because he will not be with them: and making a signe with her head that *Anrifestela*, *Constance*, *Felifflore* and *Ruperta* should remaine, all the others withdrew themselues at the old mans request: of whom they knew that this maide was the damosell clothed in green, whom they found at their comming forth of the Caue of the wife *Soldan*; whom the seruant that had slayed behinde had

had tolde them her name to be *Isabell Castuccio* ; and had said that they went to marry her at Naples.

When shee sawe herselfe shut in, shee praied them to looke if there were any one besides the foure vvhich shee had chosen : and after they had assured her that there was no person else, shee sate vp in her bed ; and making a signe that she vvould speake, her voice vvvas interrupted vvith so great a sigh, that it seemed her soule should therewith haue beene plucked away : the end whereof was, to lie downe againe in her bed, and continue in a scund with so many signes of death, that the Ladies vvhom she kept vvith her, vvvere constrained to call for vvater, to bathe *Isabells* face vvho vvvas ready to giue vp the ghost. The miserable vncke came againe into the chamber, carrying in one hand a crosse; and in the other, a bunch of hyssope dipped in holy-vvater. With him came in 2 Priests ; whos, beleeuing that the diuell possessed her, did go from her but seldome. The hostesse also came in vvith vvater, vvvhich they threw vpon her face. Shee came againe to herselfe, and said vnto them :

These preparations are now altogether vnprofitable : I will quickly come forth, not vvhen you please, but when I will ; which shall be at the comming of *Andrew Marullus*, (the sonne of *Baptist Marullus*) who is now a student at Salamanca.

Vpon these words, all of them were fully confirmed in the opinion which they had, that *Isabell* was possessed of a diuell : for they could not imagine how shee knewe who was *Iohn Baptist*, nor his sonne *Andrew* ; and some went to tell him what the faire demoniaque spake of his sonne. Againe she praied them to leaue her alone vvith the foure abouesaid. The Priests, hauing said the Gospells, went forth with all the rest : and *Felislora*, hauing searched the chamber againe, and shut the doore, sayd vnto her, that shee should tell what shee would haue. That which I would haue, said shee, is, that you take away

way these bonds from me, which hinder and put mee to paine. Which done, shee late vp in her bed: and taking *Amriscela* with one hand, and *Ruperta* with the other, she made *Constance* and *Felslore* to sit downe on the same bed next vnto them; and with a lowe voice, & her eyes full of teares, spake vnto them in this manner:

Ladies, I am the vnhappy *Isabell Castruccio*, to vvhom my parents gaue nobilitie, fortune, riches, and heauen, beauty, though it be but little. My parents vvere borne in Capua, but they got me in Spaine; where I was born, and brought vp in the house of this mine vncle here being, who then abode at the Emperours Court. O God! wherefore doe I fetch so farre off the streame of my aduentures? Being then in mine vncles house, and left an Orphan by my parents vnder this mans tuition, there came to the Court a yong man, whom I saw in a church; and I marked him in such sort, that I could not bee at home in the house but I beheld him: for his fauour and comely proportion were so well engrauen in my soule, that I could not put them out of my remembrance.

Finally, I wanted not meanes to knowe his name, his birth, his businesse at the court, and the cause of his coming. And that which I had learned, was, that his name was *Andrew Marullus*, the sonne of *Baptist Marullus*, a Knight of this city, more noble then rich; and that hee went to studie at Salamanca. Now, in lix daies that hee staid there, I gaue him to vnderstand who I was, vvhath riches I had; and as concerning my beauty, he might see it at the Church. I wrote also, that my vncle would marry me with my cosin; to the end my goods might remaine in our familie (a man, as indeed the truth is, vnfitting to my birth and humour) telling him that occasion in me offered vnto him her hairie forehead; whereof hee should lay holde without giuing place to repentance, and that my facilitie should not giue him any subiect to despise me. After hee had seene mee I knowe not how

how often in the Church, he answered mee, that for my onely person, without the ornaments of nobilitie and riches, hee would make me Lady of the world if he could: and he besought me to continue firme in this resolution, vntill hee had brought to Salamanca a friend of his, of this towne; with whom hee was going to follow his studies. I promised him so to doe: for that my loue is none of these violent affections, which are soone engendred, and quickly die. He left me for that time, because hee would not disappoint his friend: and with teares, which I sawe him shed in passing by the street the daie that he went thence, he departed without leauing mee, and I followed him without parting from my house.

The next morning (Who can belecue this? that misfortunes haue snares so quickly to entangle such as are vnhappy) the next morning I say, my vnclie concluded vpon his returne into Italy; neither did it auaille me to any purpose to faine my selfe sicke, because my pulses and color declared that I was in health: and my vnclie would not belecue my fained infirmity; but rather in truth, that my being discontented at the marriage, made mee seeke deuices that I might not depart.

In this time I had meanesto write to *Andrew* vvhath was befallen me, and the necessitie of my parting; Neuerthelesse, that I would labour to passe by this city, where I meant to faine that I was possessed with a diuel; and by this inuention giue him means to leaue Salamanca, and come backe to Luques: where, in despite of my vnclie and all the world, hee may espouse me, because his fortune and mine relie vpon his diligence, if hee vwill shew himselfe mindful of the same. If the Letters be come to his hands (as I belecue they are, because the poste bid me make no doubt) he may bee heere within these three daies. For my part I haue done vvhath I can. I haue a Legion of diuells in my body; hauing an ounce of loue in my soule: for they are both all one when hope is farre away.

way. Beholde, Ladies, the history of my folly, and the cause which makes me sicke: my amorous thoughts are the diuells which torment me. I suffer hunger in hope to be satisfied, but my mistrust pursueth mee: for as they say in Castille; To them that are vnhappy, the crummes freeze betwixt the mouth and the hand. Order the matter so, my deere friends, that my lie may bee beleued: fortifie my discourse, and deale so with my vncke, that he may not carry me hence, certaine daies: It may be heauen will permit that with *Andrewes* coming my contentment shall accompany him.

You need not aske if the company were astonished at this discourse; which of it selfe carried with it admiration and astonishment, to put into their mindes vvhich heard them. *Auristela*, *Ruperta*, *Constance*, and *Felislora*, offered to fortifie her designs, and not to part from this place before they had seene the end, because that in reason it could not be long delaied.

CHAP. XXI.

The marriage of Isabell Castruccio, to Andrew Marullus.

THE faire *Isabell* very strongly restrained herselfe to counterfeite the Demoniaque: and her foure newe friends did no lesse, to fortifie the opinion of her disease; assuring by al the reasons they could, that in truth the diuell spake in her: to the end that so it may appeare, what loue is, which makes the amorous seeme to be possessed vvith diuels. Being in these tearms, the Physician returned in the euening to make his second visitation, and by chance brought with him *Iohn Baptist Marullus*, the Father of *Andrew* the amorous: vnto whom he said in entering into the chamber; Marke, *seigneur Marullus*, the paine

paine of this poore maid, if she deserue that in her angel-like body the diuell should haue his walking place. Neuerthelesse, one hope comforteth vs: which is, that hee hath rould vs he will quickly depart thence; and that the token of his going going out, should bee the comming of Signeur *Andrew*, your sonne, whom hee looketh for euery houre. I haue been so informed, answered Sir *Baptist*, and I would be glad that my sonne were the bringer of so good newes. Thanks be to God and my diligence, said *Isabell*: for without me, he should be at Salamanca, doing GOD knowes what. And let Signeur *Baptist*, who is there present, beleue that he hath a sonne, who is more faire then holy; and not so good a student as a Gallant. And ill may fare the braueries of young people which doe so much wrong to the common wealth: cursed be the spurres which haue no points; and the mules let to hire, which goe not in poast.

With these words she intermeddled others equiuocal, of double sense; which her Secretaries vnderstood one way, and the rest of the standers by, another: those interpreted them aright; and these, as extrauagant follies. Gentlewoman, then said *Marullus*, where sawe you my sonne *Andrew*? was it in Madrill, or in Salamanca? This was in Illescas, said *Isabell*, in gathering cherries on Saint *Iohns* day in the morning, at breake of the day. But to speake the truth (which is a miracle when I speak it) I see him alwaies, and carry him alwaies in my soule. Yet better it was, replied *Marullus*, that my sonne was found in gathering of cherries, then in seeking for lice, which is sometimes proper to schollers. Schollers that are Gentlemen, answered *Isabell*, seldome spend their time about such a search, but they scratch and rub themselves often; for these creatures doe not spare any: and they are so bold, that they as soone enter into a Princes breeches as into the bedding of the Hospitals. Thou knowest all, wicked spirit: it well appears that thou art old

old, said the Physician, speaking to the Diuell, which he supposed to be in the body of *Isabell*.

Vpon this discourse, as if the same Diuell had appointed it, came in the old *Castrucio*, her vncke, vvho with a merry countenance said vnto her: Niece, you shall giue mee a reward for the good newes I bring you, and shall accomplish the hope you haue giuen vs to be free at the sight of *Seigneur Andrew Marullus*, the sonne of *Seigneur Baptiste* who is here present; and now see that hee is ready to alight. Let him come, let him come, answered *Isabell*, this presumptuous *Ganimede*, and giue me his hand in the name of marriage; for I haue staid heere more firmly then a rocke amongst the waues, which beate thereupon vvithout remouing it. Then entred the young *Marullus*, who in his house had beene told of the sicknesse of *Isabell*, and how she expected his comming as a token of the Diuels departure. The young man, who had beene instructed by Letters from *Isabell* what he should do, if hee found her at Luques, ran to her lodging; & entring hastily into her chamber, began to cry out like a madde man; Out, out, place for valorous *Andrew*, Serieant Maior of all hell, if a Squadron be not sufficient. At this noyse euen those were astonished vvich knew the truth of the matter. But the Physician and his owne father said, that hee was as much possessed with a Diuell as *Isabell*, and they were not deceiued. Wee hoped, said the olde *Castrucio*, this young mans comming should be for our good, and I beleeeue that it vvill proue to our hurt. It shall not be so if he see me, answered *Isabell*: am not I the center where his thoughts rest? am not I the White whereat his desires doe ayme? It is true, my faire, answered *Andrew*, you are the mistresse of my vvill, the repose of my trauell, and the life of my soule: Giue mee your hand as my spouse, and draw me from the bondage wherein I am, into the liberty to be vnder your subiection. Giue me your hand once againe O my blisse, and aduance me from the basenesse of

Andrew

Andrew Marullus, to the greatnesse to be the husband of *Isabell Castrucio*, and let the Diuels which would alter so sweet a bond, be packing from this place; nor let men attempt to separate that which God hath ioyned together. You say true, *Seigneur Andrew*, replied *Isabell*, and without interpolation of any inuention or deceit, giue me your hand as my spouse, & receiue me for your own. The Vncle of *Isabell* being past himselfe, and almost in a swoon with astonishment, took *Andrews* hands, & began to say: What means this, my Masters? is this the custome of this country, for one Diuell to marry another? No, said the Physician, it must be in iest, to the intent the Diuell may goe hence; for it is not possible that this action could haue beene premeditated by any witte of man. But withall, said her Vncle, I will knowe from both their mouthes, what name we shall giue this marriage; whether of truth, or leasing. Of truth, answered *Isabell*, for that neyther *Andrew Marullus* is madde, nor I possessed with a Diuell: I will, and choose him for my husband, so that he accept & choose me for his wife; not as being frantike or possessed, but with all the iudgement which it hath pleased God to giue me. And saying this, shee tooke the hand of *Andrew*, and gaue him hers in the name of marriage. What meanes this, *Castrucio* said againe, is there any thing heere done in Gods name? How is it possible that my olde white hayres should be heere dishonoured? Nothing that is belonging to me can dishonour you, said *Andrews* father: I am noble, and though not exceeding rich, yet (withall) I am not so poore that I stand in need of any. I neyther began nor made an end of this busines: these two young folkes are married without my counsell: yet let vs see if that which is here done may proceed any further; for if it may be defeated, the riches of *Isabell* shall not be a cause that I would procure my sunnes benefit.

Two Priests were present, who said the marriage was good, presupposing that if they had begun it as fooles, they

they had confirmed it as wife. And we confirme it again, said *Andrew*, and the like said *Isabell*. Which her *Uncle* hearing, he let his head fall on his breast, and turning vp the white of his eyes, with a great sigh, fell into a deadly swoone. His seruants carryed him to his bed, *Isabell* rose from hers, *Andrew* brought her to his fathers house as his wife, and two daies after to the Church to solemnise the marriage, baptize his young brother, and bury his wiues vncl: To the end we may see how strange are the euents of this life, one baptized, others married, and another buried at one and the same time. *Isabell* neuertheless put on mourning apparell: for death intermedleth the marriage beds with graues, and funeralls with vveddings. Our Pilgrimes abode foure daies at *Luques* with the other passengers: during which time they were feasted by the married couple, and by *Baptist Marullus* their father. And here our Author endeth the third booke of this history.

THE



THE FOVRTH
BOOKE OF THE
trauells of *Persiles*,
and *Sigismunda*.

A Northern History.

CHAP. I.

*The continuation of the voyage of our Pilgrimes to Rome : and
the discourse betweene Periander and Auristela.*



It was often disputed among our Pilgrimes, if the marriage of *Isabell Castuccio*, contriued by so many deuices, could be firme. Wherein *Periander* maintained the affirmatiue, and said further, that this needed no further verification: but that which had discontented him, was the putting together of Baptisme, Mariage, and Buriall; & the Physicians ignorance, which considered not *Isabells* inuention, nor her vnles danger.

Z

Some-

Sometimes they dicourfed heereof, and sometimes they recited the perils that they had elcaped. *Crorianus* and *Ruperta* vvere very curious to know the estates of *Periander* & *Auristela*, *Anthony* and *Constance*: which they were not for the three french Ladies; whom they knew the first day they saw them.

In this curiositie, with more then indifferent iournies, they came to Aquapendent, a place nye Rome: at the entry vvhwhereof, *Periander* and *Auristela* going a little before, without feare to be heard by any person, *Periander* spake vnto her in this manner; You know, Madame, that the causes vvhich moued vs to forsake our country, and leaue our delights, were as well iust as necessary: Now the windes of Rome blowe in our faces: now the hopes which sustaine vs, boyle in our soules; and now I make account that I see my selfe in the possession which I haue so long hoped for. Consider, Madame, if you yet retain the will which you had, and if you will so doe after you haue payd your vow: vvhich I doubt not but you doe, because your blood royall was neuer ingendred between lying promises, nor betwixt double designses. For my selfe I can say vnto you, O fayre *Sigismunda*, that this *Periander* whom you see, is the same *Persiles* whom you saw in the King my fathers house: The very same I say who in the Palace of his father gaue you his word to be your husband, vvhich I will accomplish in the Deserts of Africke, if contrary fortune should beare vs thither.

Whilest *Periander* thus spake, *Auristela* earnestly beheld him, and maruelled to see that hee doubted of her faith: wherefore she said vnto him; If I haue had neuer but one vwill, O *Persiles*, and that I haue confirmed the same vnto you since these two yeares, willingly, and not by constraint; Assure your selfe that at this day it is as entire and firme as the first day wherein I made you Lord thereof: and that if the perfection thereof may bee augmented, it is increased by the traueills vvee haue passed toge-

together. Assure your selfe also, I vwill thankfully acknowledge, in such manner, the constancy, which you declare in yours; that in accomplishing my vow, I will bring to passe in such manner, that your hopes shall bee conuerted into possession. But tell me, vvhath shall vvee doe after that one and the same bond hath tyed vs vnder the same yoke? Wee are farre from our Countries, vnknowne to strangers, vvithout support or vvall to vphold the yuie of our discommodities. I speake not this through any defect of loue, or of courage: for I vwill suffer all those of the vvorld; provided I may bee vvith you. I say this, because the first necessity that befalls you vwill take away my life. Hitherto my soule hath suffered alone in it selfe: but heereafter I shall suffer in yours, and in mine; although I speake ill in separating two soules which are but one.

Consider Madame, like as it is not possible for any one to make his fortune of himselfe, though some say that euery one is an Artizan after the same is begunne, till the end, So I cannot now answere vvhat vvee shall doe, after that good fortune shall haue ioyned vs together.

Let vs first cleere the inconuenience of our diuision; for after vvee shall bee vnited, there are sufficient fields in the land to nourish vs, cabbins to retire vnto, and houses to couer vs: for there are no palaces adorned with gold that can equalize the contentment vvich two soules haue enioying one another, vvich as you haue said are but one.

Moreouer, vvee will not want meanes to make the Queene my mother know vvhere vve are; and shee also much lesse, to succour vs. In the meane time, this crosse of Diamonds vvich you haue, and your two inestimable pearles, shall support vs; but onely that I feare in pawning them, they vwill bewray vs: for how can any beleue that pawnes of so great value can bee couered

vnder a Pilgrimes cloake .

The approaching of the company brake off their discourse : which was the first they had together of their loues , because *Auristela* neuer gaue occasion to *Periander* to speake vnto her in secret, liuing otherwise as his sister, and hee as her brother in the opinion of all those which had euer knownen them; except *Clodio*, whose malice had entred so farre into their soules , that it peared so , euen to doubt of the truth. This night they came within a daies iournie of Rome : and in an Inne, where alwaies happeneth some maruell, this fell out vvhich I shall tell you, if it may haue such a name .

Being all set downe at a table, which the Hostes care and diligence of his seruants had abundantly furnished : A Pilgrime bearing a penne and inkehome on his left arme, and a booke of white paper in his hand, came out of a chamber of the Inne, who hauing saluted them as hee ought, said vnto them in the Spanish tongue :

This Pilgrimes habit which I haue taken , obliging those that weare it to craue almes, vrgeth mee to aske of you that which is so gainefull and new, that without giuing money or vware, you shall make mee rich. I am, Gentlemen, a curious man : *Mars* predominateth ouer one halfe of my soule ; and ouer the other halfe, *Apollo* and *Mercury*. I haue spent some yeares in the exercise of Armes, and others more mature in learning. I haue gotten some renowne in the Warres, and some estimation amongst the skilfull. I haue printed some bookes , vvhich the learned haue found good, and the ignorant haue not iudged euill : And as necessity sharpeneth the witte , mine (which I knowe not what part it hath of phantasticalnesse and varietie) is fallen into a newe and strange imagination, which is ; to make a booke at the cost and labour of an other, vvhereof the honour and profit shall bee mine. The booke shall be intituled, *The flower of Pilgrimes Aphorismes*;

Aphorismes; and shall be full of sentences deriued from one and the same truth: which I collect in this manner;

When I find any vpon the way, or at the Innes, whom I thinke to be a man of witte and quality, I pray him to write in this booke some notable saying if he knew any, or some sentence of worth: and by this meanes I haue gotten together more then three hundred Aphorismes, all worthy to be knowen and printed; not in mine, but in the Authors names, which haue set to their hands when they gaue them vnto me. This is the almes which I demand of you, and that which I vwill esteeme aboue all the gold in the world. Giue vs, answered *Periander*, some example of that vvhich you require, whereby vvee may direct ourselues: for as touching the residue, you shall be satisfied according to the ability of our wittes. A man and woman, *Pilgrimes*, passed heereby this morning (answered the *Pilgrime*) who are gone a great vway; to whom, because they were Spaniards, I opened my desire. The *Pilgrimesse* saide vnto mee that shee had no skill to write, and made mee put downe, with my hand, this sentence;

I loue better to be euill, with hope to be good, then to be good, with purpose to bee euill: and willed me to subscribe, The Pilgrimesse of Talanera.

The *Pilgrime* had no more knowledge in writing, and willed me to write these words:

There is no heavier burthen then a light woman: and I subscribed for him, Bartholomew Manchego.

After this sort are the Aphorismes which I demand: and those vvhich I hope for of this faire company, shall be such, that they will surmount the others, and be vnto them in stead of ornament and enamelling. Wee vnderstand you, said *Crorianus* (taking the *Pilgrimes booke* and penne) and for my part I vwill come out of this debt; vvith vvhich vvords he vvrote:

The souldier dead in the battaile hath a fairer look then hee that is whole by running away. And he subscribed,

Crorianus.

Periander immediatly tooke the pen and wrote;

Happy is the souldier, who knowes that his Prince beholdeth him when he fighteth: and he set downe his name.

Anthony wrote after him:

The honour that is gotten by the warres, is firmer then all other honour, though it were written in plates of brasse with steeld graners: and he wrote vnder,

Anthony the Barbarian.

The Pilgrime also craued the like almes of the Ladies: the first of whom was Ruperta; who wrote:

Beauty that is accompanied with honesty is true beantie; that which is not so accompanied, is nothing but counterfaiete.

Ruperta hauing signed, Auristela tooke the penne, and set in,

The best dower which a woman can bring, is honesty; because beauty may be lost by time, and riches by fortune.

Constance followed Auristela, writing;

A woman should choose her husband, not by her owne, but anothers aduice.

Felislora next Constance wrote thus:

The lawes of constrained obedience binde much, but those of pleasure much more.

Felislora hauing signed, gaue the pen to Bellarminia, who inserted this:

A woman ought to be as the Ermine, which will rather suffer her selfe to be taken then defiled.

The faire Delesire was the last, who wrote thus;

The empire of Fortune stretcheth ouer all the actions of the life, but principally vpon marriages.

You see that which our Ladies and Pilgrimes wrote in the Spaniards booke; who remained very well content: and Periander asked him if hee knew by heart any Aphorisme amongst those hee had written, and prayed him to

to shew it. The Spaniard answered; that hee would only tell them one, which had much pleased him, for loue of him that had subscribed it: The Aphorisme saide thus;

Desire not, and thou shalt be the richest man of the world.

And the subscription said, *Diego de Ratos, the old Cocker of Tordeyllas, a place of antient Castile against Vallidolid.*

The subscription, said *Anthony*, is longer then the Aphorisme, which seemes to me to be true and good; for it is certaine, that a man desires nothing but that which is wanting: and hee which desires nothing, wanteth nothing, and by consequence is rich.

The Spaniard told them, besides, other Aphorismes, wherewith they supped merrily all together, the Spanish Pilgrime being set at the table with them; who whilst they were at supper, said vnto them: I will not giue the priuiledge of my booke vnto any Stationary of Madrill vnder the price of two thousand Ducates: and there is not one of them but would haue it for nothing; or at the least, at so easie a rate, that the Author should haue nothing for himselfe. It is true, that sometimes they buy priuiledges, and print their bookes, whereupon in steed of being enriched, they ruinate themselues, losing their labour and cost: but this, heere, beares the profit and goodnes on the forehead.

CHAP. II.

How our Pilgrimes found Arnaldo Prince of Denmarke, and the Duke of Nemours.

THE Spanish Pilgrime might well intitle his booke, *The Pilgrime history of diuers Authors*; according

to the diuersitie of persons that composed it : amongst whom the subscription of *Diego de Ratos* the Cobbler afforded them no small occasion of laughter. But they had no lesse subiect to thinke vpon, by the sentence of *Bartolomeu Manchego* ; saying, that there was no heauier burden then a light woman : which was a token that that which he carried, in *Louyse de Talauera*, must by this time be of a grieuous waight. They spent all this euening in such conference : and in the morning leauing the Spaniard, a moderne and late authour of such a new booke, they had sight of the citie of Rome. The hearts of *Periander* and *Anrifesta*, leaped for ioy ; seeing themselves so nigh the end of their desires. Those of *Crorianus*, *Rupertia*, & the 3 ladies of France, felt almost the like motion, for the good successe which they promised to themselves of their voyage. And the like pleasure *Anthonie* and *Constance* receiued, because they were in sight of so great and miraculous a city, whereof they had heard so many wonders reported. -

The Sunne strooke the earth perpendicularly, beeing then in his Zenith ; by reason whereof, though hee bee further in appearance from the earth, then in any other houre of the day, he darteth his beames with more heat and violence. And being inuited by the shadowe of a wood neere by, which appeared on the right hand, they determined to goe thither, and passe the heat of the day, and peraduenture the night, because they had time enough to enter into Rome the day following. They effected their purpose : and as they entred into the vwood, the pleasantnes of the situation, the springs issuing amidst the flowres, and the riuers which watered them, confirmed their intent, there to spend the night. They vvent therinto so farre, that turning their eyes towards the high way, they sawe that they could not bee descried by trauellers ; and the diuersitie of places making diuers elections, to chuse, among a thousand delightful shadowes, that

that which liked them best. *Auristela* by chance looked vp, and sawe hanging vpon a shallow bough a pourtrait in a small volume, of an exceeding faire face: which, beholding nigher thereunto, she knew to be her picture; which, full of admiration and astonishment, shee also quickly shewed to *Periander*. At the same time *Crorianus* tolde them that all the grasse was bloody; and shewed his feet spotted with blood as yet all warme. The picture which *Periander* immediately tooke downe, and the blood which *Crorianus* shewed them, put them all into a confusion, and a desire also to search out the cause of the one and the other. *Auristela* could not deuise vwho could haue drawne her face: neither did *Periander* call to remembrance what the man, which he had found vvith the three French-women, had tolde him, how the painter which drew them, would also draw *Auristela* by hart, though he had seene her but onely once. The tracke of blood which they followed brought *Crorianus* and *Anthony* amongst the thicke trees which vvere hard by them; vvhere they found a Pilgrime that sate on the grasse, leaning his head against a tree, with his hands on his breast, from vvhence issued a great streame of blood: A sight vvwhich much troubled them; and chiefly when *Crorianus* comming vnto him, and wiping his face vvwhich was also bloody, knew that this was the Duke of Nemours. For the different habite wherein hee found him was no hinderance vnto *Crorianus* to knowe him; the Dukes image vvvas so fresh in his memory, and so great was the amitie vvwhich he bore him: who, vvithout opening his eyes vvwhich the blood had closed, sorrowfully pronounced these vvords;

Thou oughtest, vvho soeuer thou art, O mortall enemy of my rest, lift vp thy hand againe, and thrust through the middelt of my heart: for there thou hadst found the same pourtrait more luely and true, then that vvwhich thou madest mee take from my necke, and hang on this tree,

tree, that it might not serue me as a relique and buckler in this combate. *Constance* was present at this meeting : and being naturally pitifull, she ran to him to stanch the bloud which issued from his wound, without regarding the words he spake.

Periander and *Auristela* following the track of bloud on the other side, to see the fountaine from whence it proceeded, found stretched along amongst the rushes, another Pilgrime all couered with bloud, except his face which was cleane ; which, without taking paines to wash the same, they knew to be the shape of the Prince of Denmarke. The first signe of life which he gaue, was to remoue as if hee would rise vp, saying ; Thou shalt not carry it away, for the picture is mine, because it is that which was in my soule: thou hast stollen it from me ; & without euer offending thee, wilt take away my life.

The sight of *Arnaldo*, vnlooked for, made *Auristela* tremble as a leafe : and though the obligations which she owed him vrged her to approach vnto him, yet the presence of *Periander* hindred her ; who, no lesse thankesfull then obliged, tooke his owne selfe the hands of *Arnaldo*, and with a lowe voyce, that he might not discouer that which (it may bee) the Prince would haue hidden, said vnto him :

Returne to your selfe, my Lord, and you shall see that you are in the hands of your best and greatest friends ; & that heauen hath not so much forsaken you, but that you may promise to your selfe a better condition of your fortune. Open your eyes, O Prince, and you shall see your friend *Periander*, and your deare *Auristela* ; no lesse desirous then obliged to serue you. Tell vs your misfortune, and assure your selfe from vs, whatsoeuer our force and industrie can performe for your seruice. Tell vs if you bee hurt, who hath hurt you, and in what part of your body it is ; to the intent some speedy remedie may be applied thereunto.

Arnaldo

Arnaldo opened his eyes: and knowing those that were before him, he stedfastly looked on *Auristela*, to whom he said; It is not possible, Madam, but that you are the true *Auristela*, and not some image of hers: for there is no other soule but yours, which can hide it selfe vnder so faire a forme. You are *Auristela* without doubt, & doubtlesse I am also that *Arnaldo*, who haue alwaies desired to serue you. I come hither to seeke you out: for vnlesse it bee in you that are my centre, my soule shall neuer haue any rest.

Whilst these matters passed in this sort, *Crorianus* was informed that *Periander* had found another who was also hurt: which *Constance* hearing, after shee had stanchd the Dukes blood, she ranne to the second wounded man; and seeing that it was *Arnaldo*, shee became so confused and astonished, that she durst not beleue what she saw: neuerthelesse, her discretion ouercame her astonishment, and shee said vnto him, without entring into other discourse, that he should shew his hurts. Whereto *Arnaldo* answered, by shewing his left arme with his right hand; and making a signe, that there he was wounded. *Constance* stript his arme, and found it thrust through & through hard by his shoulder. She staied the blood which yet ran, and tolde *Periander* how the other wounded man vvas the Duke of Nemours, and that it vvas requisite to carry them to the next village, to be looked vnto; because the greatest perill imminent vpon them vvas losse of their blood. *Arnaldo* hearing the Dukes name, began to quake, and through his warme veines by this time emptied of blood, hee permitted colde ielousie to haue passage to his very soule: which made him say, without taking heed vwhat he spake; There is some difference betwixt a Duke and a King: but neither the estate of the one or of the other, nor of all the Monarkes in the vworld, are capable of the merit of *Auristela*. And then hee added; Let mee not be carried to the place vvhither they beare the Duke:

for

for the presence of enemies cannot heale their harmes whom they haue iniured. *Arnaldo* brought vvith him two seruants ; and the Duke, two others, who by the commandement of their maisters had left them alone, and were gone before to a place hard by to prouide them lodging. Let somebody also, said *Arnaldo*, looke if vpon one of the trees heere, there hangeth not the picture of *Auristela*, being the occasion of combate betweene the Duke and me. Let it be taken away, and giuen vnto me: for it is mine by right, and hath cost mee a great deale of blood.

The like words the Duke spake at the same time to *Crobianus* & *Ruperta*, and to the others which were with them. But *Periander* satisfied them both, saying that hee had it in his power as in trust, and that he would restore it vpon a better occasion to him to whom it should belong. Is it possible, said *Arnaldo*, that any doubt can bee made, that this pourtrait is not mine ? doth not heauen knowe, that the first time I sawe the originall, I engraue her in my soule ? Notwithstanding, let my brother *Periander* keepe it : for I well knowe that the ieaiousie, pride, or wrath of him that pretends to haue it, shall not preuaile against him. And let some carry me away fro hence ; for I faint. Presently they made hand-litters to carry the two hurt persons ; whose losse of blood, rather then the deepnes of their wounds, by little and little was taking away their liues. So they carried them to the place where their men had caused the best lodging to be made ready that they could finde ; the Duke not hauing as yet any knowledge that his enemy was the Prince of Denmarke.

CHAP. III.

A recitall of the combate betweene Arnaldo, Prince of Denmarke, and the Duke of Nemours.

THE three French Ladies were not without enuie, to see that the pourtrait of *Auristela* was more esteemed in the Dukes opinion then any of theirs, when the seruant who was sent to get them painted, told them that hee carried with them their pictures, with many iewells of great value; but yet he adored that of *Auristela*. These words much grieued their mindes: for such as are faire neuer take any pleasure in hearing report that other beauties excell theirs. And especially they would not haue them compared, because all comparisons are odious, but principally in beauties aboue all other things; vnlesse that amities, kinred, qualities, or greatnes can withstand the enuie that inflameth them, when any would make such comparison: What then shall we say of those which saw themselues put backe? He told them also, that the Duke his maiister comming from Paris in search of the Pilgrim *Auristela*, sate this morning at the foot of a tree, hauing her pourtrait in his hands, and speaking thereunto, as if it had beene herselfe: and that whilst he so remained, another Pilgrime was come so easily behinde him, that he might heare what he spake to the picture; neither could he or his fellow hinder it, because they were a little gone aside from the place.

In conclusion, said hee, wee ranne to warne the Duke that this man heard him. Hee turned his head, and sawe this Pilgrime hard by him; who, without speaking a word, came suddainly to the pourtrait, and stroue to snatch it out of the Dukes hands: who being surprized, and hauing no leasure to defend it as he would, said vnto him (as I vnderstood) these words; Thou robber of

a celestiall pledge, profane not thy sacrilegious hands with that which thou holdest: relinquish this table wherein the beauty of heauen is pourtraied; as well because thou deseruest it not, as also in regard it is mine. There is no such matter, answered the other Pilgrime; and if I cannot giue thee other vvitneses of this veritie, I will referre it to the triall of my rapier which I carry within this staffe. I am the true possessor of this incomparable beauty; because that in a country farre from this where we are, I bought it with my treasures, adored it with my soule, and serued it with so much care and trauell. The Duke, then turning himselfe vnto vs, imperiously commanded vs to leaue them alone, and that we should come and stay for them in this place, without being so hardie as once looke back to behould them. The like commandement the other Pilgrime gaue to two men which followed him; vvhich as it seemes are also his seruants. Yet for all this I somewhat disobeied his commandement: and curiositie causing me to turne my head, I sawe that the other Pilgrime hung the picture on a tree; and that immediately drawing a rapier vvhich he had in his staffe, he marched against my maister, who receiued him vwith like courage, vwith the same or the like rapier that hee carried in his staffe. Wee would haue returned to them to part them: but in the end I was of a contrary minde; saying that in regard they were alone, and armed alike, vwithout suspicion that any should aid them, it were better to leaue them, and proceed on our way in obeying them, then to anger them further in going about to part them. I knowe not if good counsell, or cowardise, staid our feet, and bound our hands, or if the brightnes of their swords not yet bloody blinded our eyes: It so fell out, that instead of going to separate them, we took our way to this place; vvhich hauing taken vp the best Inne vwith haste, and somewhat recovered our spirits, we returned with more iudgement and courage, to see how de-

destinie had disposed of our maisters : whom wee haue found in such estate, that without your comming, ours had bene altogether vnprofitable for them.

Consider what the Dukes man said vnto the French Ladies, and that which they felt as if they had bene his true mistresses ; each one blotting out of her imagination the hope she had conceived to marry the Duke : for nothing so soone defaceth loue out of the memory , as disdaine ; which hath the same power ouer vs, that sleep or famine hath : valour yeeldeth to the force of sleep and famine ; and loue, to that of disdaine. It is true, that this must be at his first birth: for after hee hath taken a long and full possession of the soules, disdaines serue him to no other purpose but for spurres, that hee may run more speedily to the execution of his thoughts.

The hurt persons were cured, and within eight dayes were ready to goe on in their iourney to Rome, from whence the chirurgians came that had healed them. In this time the Duke knewe that his aduersary was the Prince of Denmarke, and knew also his intention to be married to *Amistela*, which confirmed his delignes ; which were the same of *Arnaldoes*, thinking that shee, who was sought for to bee made a Queene, might vvell be a Duchesse.

In the end the day of their departure came : and the Duke at one side, and the Prince of Denmark at another, entred into Rome without being seene one of the other. The rest of our Pilgrimes hauing gotten vp on a small hillocke, from whence at their ease they might behould the holy city, they saluted the same, kneeling on the ground ; and came downe by the side of the hill, passed through our Ladies meadowes, and came into Rome by Del Popole gate, first kissing the threshold of the entrie. Before which, two men saluted one of *Crorianus* his men, and asked him if all this company had a lodging prepared where they were expected ; and if peraduenture they
had

had none, they would lodge them as Princes: for you shall know, said they, that we are Iewes: I am called *Zabulon*, and my companion *Abind*: our profession is to furnish houses with all moueables which are needfull for the quality of those that inhabit them: and according to the price which they will bestowe, so rich are the moueables which we giue them. To whom the seruant answered: One of my fellowes hath been since yesterday in this towne, with charge to prepare a lodging for my master answerable to his estate. Let me be killed, said *Abind*, if this be not the French man, which yesterday so well liked the house of our companion *Manasses*, which is furnished as a Kings Palace. Let vs then goe forward, said the seruant of *Crorianns*, for my fellow should stay for vs heere-by to conduct vs; and if the house which hee hath chosen bee vnfitting, wee will make vse of that vvhich you offer vs. Vpon this they went further: and in entring the City, the Iewes saw their companion *Manasses* with the other seruant of *Crorianns*; whereby they knew that the house which they had furnished, belonged to *Manasses*, and was ouer against the Portugall Arch: wherefore they guided our Pilgrimes thither, full of contentment and ioy.

As soone as the French Ladies entred Rome, they drew all the peoples eyes vpon them: for in regard it was one of the dayes of *Station*, this street of our Lady *del Popolo*, was replenished with multitudes. But the admiration, which by little and little beganne to enter into those that beheld these Ladies, infinitely increased in the mindes of all those which saw the incomparable *Auristela*, and the faire *Constance* which walked by her side, as two shining starres, which by two parallel lines make an equall course through the midst of heauen. But the perfection of *Auristela* appeared with such an aduantage, that it obliged a Romane, who in my iudgement should bee a Poet, to vtter these words: I will wager that the goddesse

VENUS

Uenus now returneth hither as in times past, to see the reliques of her deare *Aeneas*. Truly the Gouvernour hath done ill in not commanding the face of this mooving image to be couered; or peradventure hee will haue the wife to admire her, and others to worship her. With these praises they went forth vnto the house of *Marasses*, which was able to lodge the traine of a great Prince.

CHAP. IIII.

*Of the conference betweene the Prince of Denmarke and Perian-
der touching Auristela.*

THe comming of the French Ladies, and all the company of Pilgrimes was noysed this day through all the City; and aboue all, was published the extreame beauty of *Auristela*, euery one exalting and describing her, if not as she was, yet at the least as the tongues of the most excellent vvittes vvere able to praise her. In a moment their lodging vvvas enuironed vvith an infinite multitude of people, vvhom curiosity had gathered in a heape, to see so many beauties together: and this desire brought them to that extremity, that they cried out in the streetes; that the Ladies and Pilgrimes should come to the vvindowes, vvho then reposed themselues, and vvould not suffer themselues to bee seene. Amongst the rest vvvere the Princes of Nemours and Denmark in their Pilgrimes habits; vvho no sooner saw each other, but their hearts began to beate, and their knees to tremble. *Periander* hauing knowne them from the window, informed *Crorianus*: and they both together vvvent downe into the street, to hinder as much as they could, such misfortune as might bee feared of two so iealous louers. *Crorianus* passed at one side with the Duke, and *Periander* at the other with *Arnaldo*; vvho saide vnto him:

A a

One

One of the greatest obligations of courtesie which *Auristela* oweth mee, is, that I suffer this French Knight whom they call the Duke of Nemours, to bee as it were in possession of her picture: for though it bee in thy keeping, it seemes she likes well thereof, seeing I haue it not in mine. Obserue *Periander*, this euill which louers cal iecalousie (but ought rather name a desperate rage) hath enuy and contempt alwaies marching vvith her: and vvhen shee once getteth possession of a soule that is amorous, there is no consideration that can bring it to quiet, nor remedy that can profit it. And though the causes engendring the same, bee small; yet the effects are so great, that they at least take away the iudgement, but most commonly the life: and it vv ere better for the iecalous louer to die in despaire, then to liue in iecalousie. I counsell thee *Periander*, if he can giue counsell that hath none for himselfe, that thou consider, how I am a King, that I loue perfectly, and that by a thousand experiences thou art satisfied and assured, that I will performe by deeds, the words which I haue promised thee; to marry thy sister *Auristela*, without any other dower but her vertues and beauty: and that I vvill not seeke prooffe of the noblenesse of her stocke; because it is cleare, that Nature ought not to haue denied the goods of Fortune to those on whom she hath bestowed so much of her owne. Seldome, or neuer, great vertues shine in base subiects: and the beauty of the body is ordinarily a token of the beauty of the minde. And to speake one word, which at other times I haue spoken vnto thee; So it is, I adore *Auristela*, be she descended from heauen, or produced of earth: And because she is now at Rome, where shee assigned my hopes; bring to passe; my brother, that she may performe them vnto me. I will diuide with thee my Crowne and Kingdome, and suffer me not to die both mocked of the Duke, and derided of her whom I adore. To all these words, offers, and promises, *Periander* thus answered:

If

If my sister were partaker in the occasions of griefe which the Duke hath giuen you ; if I did not chastise her, at the least I would chide her : which should bee to her a great punishment. But being assured that she is guiltlesse, I cannot tell what answer to make you. As touching that which you say, that she hath assigned your hopes in this City, not knowing also how farre those hopes which she hath giuen you may extend, I am also ignorant how to answere you. For the offers which you made me heeretofore, and now make, I giue you as many thankses as I can possible, and take them at your hands as kindly as your estate and mine doth oblige me. For (be it spoken vvith humility) valorous *Arnaldo*, it may bee, that this poore Pilgrimes cloake, such as you see, is a cloud which couereth a Sunne. And content your minde for this present : yesterday we came to Rome: & tis not possible that in so short time so many discourses can be concluded, nor so many meanes found, which may reduce our actions to such happy end as we desire. In recompence of the counsell which you haue giuen mee, I will giue you another : namely, that you shunne as much as you can possible, to meete with the Duke ; because a disdained Louer, hauing weak hopes, taketh occasion to build them vpon despite, though it bee to the preiudice of that which hee loueth. *Arnaldo* promised him so to doe, offering him money and monies worth to sustaine the expense, both of himselfe and his company. The discourse, which the Duke had with *Corianns*, was different ; who resolved vpon this poynt, eyther to recouer the pourtrait of *Auristela*, or to make the Prince of Denmarke to confesse, that hee pretended nothing in that respect. He also prayed *Corianns* to doe so much with *Auristela*, that shee would receiue him for her husband ; seeing his estate was as great, and his bloud as noble as *Arnaldo's*, shewing himselfe no lesse passioned vvith loue, then with ieaoulisie.

Corianns offered to bee an intercessor for him, and

A a z to

to make appeare to *Auristela* the fortune offered vnto her in this behalfe; whereof hee promised to returne him a speedy answere.

CHAP. V.

*Of the misfortune happening to Bartholomew and Louyse:
and how our Pilgrimes deliuered them from the libbet.*

IN this manner the two ieaious riualls (vvhose hopes Iyvere founded in the ayre) departed, one from *Periander*, and the other from *Crorianus*, resolving before all other things, to repress their impetuosities, and dissemble their iniuries, at the least vntill *Auristela* had manifested her affection in fauour of the one or the other; vvhich was very far from this care; all her thoughts being as then intentiue to be instructed in such truth as was necessary for the saluation of her soule: for being borne in a country so farre off, and in such a land, where the verity of the Catholique religion is not in such perfection as is requisite, she had need to be refined in her shop of truth.

Vpon the departure of *Periander* from *Arnaldo*, a Spaniard came vnto him, who said: According to the tokens which haue beene giuen mee, this Letter is directed to you, at the least if you bee a Spaniard. And in so saying, he put a Letter into his hands, the superscription whereof was this:

To the most worthy Knight, Signeur *Anthony de Ville-seigneur*, otherwise named the Barbarian.

Periander asked him, who had giuen him this Letter. The Carrier answered, that it vvas a Spaniard who was prisoner in the Tower of Nonna, and condemned at the least to be hanged for murder, hee and a faire woman, his Loue, whom they call the Talauerane.

Periander quickly knew their names, and ghesse very nigh

nigh at their crimes. This Letter (said he to the Carrier) is not for mee, but for this Pilgrime who commeth to vs, seeing *Anthony* approaching; vnto whom he gaue it: and withdrawing themselues apart, after they had opened it, they found the contents thereof to be these;

The Letter of Bartholomew Manchego to the Illustrious Lord Anthony de Villaseignor.

HEE standeth ill that goeth ill. Of two feet though " one bee sound, a man cannot choose but halt, if " the other be lame. Euill companies know not how to " teach good customes: That of the Talauerane hath " brought me hither, that we both might be condemned " to bee hanged. The man which brought her out of " Spaine, found her in this City in my company. Hee " was angry to see her, and would beate her in my pre- " sence; and I that vnderstood not how to iell, & knew " my selfe vnapt to receiue iniuries, but to reuenge them, " auenged my *Louise*; and with sound stroakes of a staff, " killed him that would beat her. Being in the heat of this " quarrell, another Pilgrim came, who began to measure " my backe with the same ell wherewith I had measured " the other. *Louise* said that she knew that he which did " strike me, was a Polopian who had married her in Ta- " laueran: and fearing that in making an end with mee he " would begin with her, for the wrongs shee had done " him; she did no more but take her knife in hand, and " strooke it in his reines, giuing him such wounds that " he had no need of a Chirurgion. In effect, her louer " with blowes of a staffe, & her husband with strokes of " a knife, ended at the same time the course of their mor- " tall life. We were apprehended vpo the fact, & brought " into this prison, to our great sorrow. We haue confes- " sed our crime, because wee could not deny it; and by " that meanes haue auoyded the torture. The proceffe is " adiudged with more haste then wee desire, and we are "

" condemned to bee banished into another world. I say,
 " sir, that wee are condemned to death: whereat the T-
 " lauerane is so troubled, that she cannot beare it patient-
 " ly. She kisseth the hands of my Lady *Constance*, of Seig-
 " nior *Periander*, and of my Lady *Auristela*, and saith shee
 " would be at liberty to goe and kisse them in their hou-
 " ses. Shee saith also, that if the faire *Auristela* will vn-
 " dertake our liberty, she shall easily obtaine it; for what
 " can her perfection demand which shee shall not haue
 " granted, though she had businesse with Rigor it selfe?
 " Further she saith, that if you cannot procure our par-
 " don, you may at the least obtaine this fauor, to change
 " the place of our execution; and that in stead of suffering
 " death in Rome, we may goe and suffer in Spaine. For
 " she is informed, that heere they carry not criminall per-
 " sons to the libbet with conuenient authority: because
 " they make them goe on foot, whereby scarce any can
 " see them: and scarcely will any person say for them one
 " *Anc Maria*, principally, if they bee Spaniards whome
 " they lead to hanging. She would if it were possible die
 " among her friends in her owne country; where it may
 " bee, some of her kindred. would not faile to close her
 " eyes. I also say the same, because I am a friend to rea-
 " son; and in regard I am so vexed in this prison, that in
 " stead of the trouble which the flies giue, I would ac-
 " count it a good turne if I might be ledde to hanging to
 " morrow morning. I further aduertise you, Sir, that the
 " Iudges of this Country deny nothing to the Spaniards:
 " all are courteous, and friends in giuing and receiuing
 " things iust; and that when there is no party to demand
 " Iustice, they faile not to shew mercy: which now hath a
 " fit subiect in vs to manifest it selfe, if it reign in your ge-
 " nerous mindes; forasmuch as vve are in a strange coun-
 " try, put in prison, and eaten vp vvith diuers vncleane
 " animals, vvhich are the greater number, because they
 " are little, and are no lesse importunate then if they were
 great:

“great : and beyond all, the Solliciters, Attornies, & Notaries haue stripped vs naked already, and left vs in the Quintessence of necessity : from which, God deliuer vs of his goodnesse, *Amen.*

“Attending an answer we remain with as much desire to receiue a good one, as the Storkes chickens of the tower, in vvaiting for meate from their dams. And he subscribed;

The unhappy, Bartholomew Manchego.

They tooke as much delight at the style of the Letter, as the subiect thereof gaue them displeasure : and requiring the messenger to tell the prisoner, that hee should be of good comfort, and hope vvell of redreife, because that *Auristela*, and they all together with her, would further it, vvith all that gifts and promises were able to doe, they immediately sought out the meanes : vvhereof the first was, to cause *Crorianus* to speake vnto the Embassador of France, vvho vvvas his kinsman and friend, that by his fauour they might obtaine, that the Sentence might not be executed so loone, and that time might giue place to solicitations and prayers of their friends. *Anthony* determined also to write a Letter to *Bartholomew* for answer, and renew the pleasure which he had receiued by his writing. But making *Auristela* and *Constance* priuy to his intent, they aduised him not to write, lest hee should further afflict these poore afflicted persons, who peradventure would interpret his Letter at the vvorst, and beleue vndoubtedly, that hee might write vnto them in iest. Wherefore, laying the burthen of this busines vpon *Crorianus* and *Ruperta*, they laboured with so much diligence and care, that in sixe dayes, *Bartholomew* and the Talaucrane vv ere found in the open street : for vvhere eyther fauour or gifts are intermedled, sleepe-downe places become plaine, and the greatest difficulties are made easie.

During this time, *Auristela* found meanes to cleere her vnderstanding in all the points of religion vvhich were obscurely practised in her country; and making a perfect, generall, and true Confession, rested satisfied and instructed in whatsoeuer shee did desire. The great Penetentiarie briefly declared vnto her, the chiefe mysteries of our Faith; beginning at the enuy and pride of *Lucifer*, and at his fall, with the third part of the Angels which were throwen downe with him into the bottomlesse pitte, which fall made the seates in heauen to be empty. Hee told her what meanes GOD had vsed to supply those roomes; in creating man, and giuing him a reasonable soule, such as was capable of the glory which the wicked Angels had lost.

Hauiug discoursed of the creation of the world, and the mystery of the holy Incarnation, he touched by the way, the profound mystery of the holy Trinity: how the second of the three persons made himselfe man, that hee might pay for man as man, & satisfie God as God, the infinite sins which man had committed; for which God required an infinit satisfaction, which he could not haue of man that was finite, nor of himselfe, being vncapable of suffering, but onely by meanes of this hypostaticall vnion. He shewed vnto her the death of the Sauiour of the world, & his troubles from the manger to the crosse: hee exprest to her the force & efficacy of the Sacraments, & made her touch with her finger, the second planke to saue vs frō shipwrack, which is repentāce, without which, the way of heauen, closed by sin, cannot be opened. Hee made her also know the same *Ies. Chrif*t the liuing God, sitting at the right hand of his Father, and also liuing in his Saints, though hee bee aboue in his glory; whose spirit dwelleth in them, and he hath promised his holy presence to bee with them to the end of the world. Hee told her also of the second coming of the same Sonne of God, in his Maiesty and Glory; of the vniuersality of the

the Church, and of the power of his Ministers in retaining and forgiuing of sinnes.

Finally, he left nothing vnspoken, seruing to confirme *Auristela* and *Periander* in their beleefe: whose soules reioycing at this lesson, forooke themselues, mounting vp to heauen where all their thoughts were placed.

CHAP. VI.

The quarrell that fell betweene the Prince of Denmarke, and the Duke of Nemours at Rome, about the buying of Auristela's picture.

FROM thenceforth, *Auristela* and *Periander* beheld themselves interchangeably with other eies then they were accustomed: at the least *Periander*; to whom it seemed that *Auristela* had accomplished the vow, vvhich brought her to Rome, and that shee might freely marrie. But if *Auristela*, being halfe a Pagan, had loued chastitie, now she adored it since she was catechised; not as thinking she should offend in marying, but lest she should giue token of any effeminate thought; looking also if heauen would impart vnto her any light, how to behaue herselfe after she was married. For, to thinke to returne into her country, shee beleeued to be rashnes: because *Perianders* elder brother, to whom she had beene destinated, seeing his hopes beguiled, peraduenture would reuenge vpon her, and vpon his brother, the offence which he thought he had receiued. These terrors and imaginations made her somewhat weake and pensiue.

The French Ladies visited the temples, and vvent throughout all the stations in pompe and maiesty: for besides their owne meanes which they had, *Cyprianns* (who as is said was kinsman to the embassador of France) found meanes that they failed of nothing, to ap^e care according

cordova to the noble greatnes of their birth; leading alwaies *Auristela* and *Constance* with them, and neuer going abroad but halfe the people of Rome followed them. One day going along the street called Bancos, they sawe against a wall a pourtrait entire from the head to the feet, of a woman who had halfe a crowne on her head; and a world vnder her feet, seruing for the ground-worke or Base. And they had scarcely looked thereupon, but they knew that it was the face of *Auristela*, represented so liuely, that there was no difference from the naturall.

Auristela demanded whose the picture was, and if peradventure it were to be sold.

The master, who was an excellent Painter, answered that the pourtrait was to be sold, & that he knew not for whom it was made; but onely that another Painter, who was a friend of his, had caused it to bee copied out in France; who tolde him it was drawne vpon a strange damosell, vwho vnder the habit of a Pilgrime was going to Rome.

What meanes this, replied *Auristela*, that shee hath halfe a crowne on her head, and a world vnder her feet? These are phantasies of Painters, said the maister, or capricheos as they call them. It may be they meant heereby, that she deserues to beare away the crowne of beauty aboue all faire vvomen, vvhom she goeth treading vpon in this vvorld. But I say that you are the originall of this extract, and that you deserue in effect the vvhole crown, vvhich this hath but halfe and painted. Will you sell this picture, said *Constance*? To whom the maister answered; There are heere two Pilgrimes, whereof one hath offered mee a thousand crownes of gold: and the other tolde me, that hee will haue it at any rate whatsoeuer. I haue not yet set downe the price, because I thinke they doe but mocke: for the excesse of their offers maketh me suspect their words. Make no more doubt, said *Constance*: for if it bee those Pilgrimes which I suppose, they

they can double the price ouer and aboue, and giue you whatsoeuer they shall promise.

The two French Ladies, *Ruperta*, *Croxianns*, and *Periander* were all astonished to see the true figure of *Auristela's* face in this pourtrait. It was noised immediately amongst the people, that the originall of this painted table was in the caroach, which staid there to behould it; which made such a company gather together in a throng, that the horses could neither goe forward nor backward by reason of the preace which was made to see *Auristela*; who was constrained to couer her face, that being without hope to see her, they might suffer them to haue free passage.

The caroach was hardly gone, but *Arnaldo* came into the Painters shoppe in his Pilgrimes habit: and coming to the maister, said vnto him; I am he that offered vnto you a thousand crownes for this pourtrait: if you will sell it, come away with mee, I will satisfie you presently. To whom another Pilgrime replied, who vvas the Duke of Nemours; Maister, doe not bargain vvith me: but resolute with your selfe what you will haue, and I will giue it you all in ready money.

Gentlemen, answered the Painter, agree between you two, who shall carry it away: for mine owne part, I am very well content with the price, though I beleeue you will pay me rather in good will then effect.

All the street was full of people, who looked to see the end of this bargain: for it seemed vnto them a mockery, to see two poore Pilgrimes offer a thousand ducates for a painted table; In the presence of whom, the painter said vnto them: Hee which will haue it, let him come forth and giue mee earnest, and I will goe and take it downe, to carry to his lodging. Which *Arnaldo* hearing, he drew from his bosome a chaine of golde, with a jewell of Diamonds hanging at the end, and said vnto him; Take this chaine which is more worth then two thousand

and ducates, and bring me the picture. See, heere is one which is worth ten thousand (said the Duke, in giuing him a chaine of Diamonds) and come to my lodging with the table. Good God, said one of the standers by, what pourtrait, what men, and what iewels may these be that are heere? It seemes that it is enchantment. Wherefore, Maister, I counsell you, let the chaine bee seene and tried for the finenisse of the stones, before you deliuer your marchandise; for it may bee, both the one and the other are false. The Princes in the end were wearie to stand so long a cheapning: but lest they should make their thoughts apparent, they consented that the Painter should assure himselfe of the value of their pledges.

Whilst the people busied themselues; some, to behold the picture; others, the chaines; and others, the Pilgrims; euery one vainely enquiring after their names & estate; the Gouvernour of Rome, as he passed through the street, vnderstood newes of this popular assembly, demanded the cause, beheld the pourtrait & the chaines, & thought that these were other pledges then belonged to Pilgrims: wherefore hee committed them to the safe custody of a third person, carried the table to his owne house, and committed the Pilgrimes to ward. The Painter was bored through the nose, seeing his hopes vanished, the chaines in another mans hands then his owne, and his pourtrait in the Iustices power; where nothing comes in that goes forth with the same beauty that it entred.

In the end, his recourse was to *Periander*; to vvhom hee related all the successe of his bargain, and the feare hee had lest the Gouvernour would retaine his picture, which hee had bought in France of a Painter, that had drawne it vpon the naturall, in Portugall: which seemed likely to *Periander*, because he had procured *Auristela* to bee drawne, during the time hee remained at Lisbone. Herewith he offered the Painter a hundred crownes for his pourtrait, whether hee could get it backe againe, or

not:

not : whereupon he rested very well content, though the price were farre short of that which the other Pilgrimes offred.

This euening comming in company with other Spanish Pilgrims, they visited the Churches, where they met the Poet whom they had found at Badejos, in comming out of Lisbene, who of a Comedian was become a Pilgrime. They knew him, saluted him, and enquired of his adventures. All the answer he made them was, that the day before, he had been to visit a Priest of the Chamber, a curious and rich man, who had a cabinet of tables, the most extraordinary in the world : for therein vvas no shape of any person drawne, who heeretofore, or at this present liued ; but onely the tables were prepared for those that heereafter should excell in Poesie. Amongst which tables he had seen two, vvhich had written about them in one, *Torquato Tasso* ; and a little lower, *Ierusalem deliuered*. In the other was vvritten, *Duart* ; and lower, *The Crosse and Constantine*. I asked, said hee, of him that shewed them vnto me, vvhat these names imported : who answerd, that very shortly the light of a Poet should be discouered on the earth, vvwhose name should bee *Torquato Tasso* ; vvho should sing the deliuerance of Ierusalem, in the most heroicall and pleasing song of any other that euer had sung the same vnto this present. And that shortly after him should succeed a Spaniard, called *Francis Duart* ; vvwhose voice should fill the soure quarters of the vvorld, and suspend peoples hearts by his harmony, relating to them the finding out of the Crosse, vvith the vvvarres of the Emperour *Constantine* : A Poeme, truly heroicall, religious, and vvorthy the name of a Poeme.

Periander heereunto replied ; I can scarcely beleue that any vvould take vpon him the care, so soone to prepare tables to paint these personages : but hath hee not other besides these two, for other Poets that are yet to come ? Yea truly, answered the Poet : but I vvould not stay

stay to reade the titles, but contented my selfe vvith the two first. But I saw them so confusedly, that I know thereby that vve are in the Eue, of a great troope of Poets. God turne it to the best, answered *Periander*; But the yeare that abounds in Poets, is ordinarily scarce in victuals: For, giue me any Poet, and I vvill warrant him poore, if Nature goe not about to worke myracles. And vpon this propolition, that *There are many Poets*, it necessarily followeth Many are poore: and likewise from this, that *There are many poore*, it is a good consequence, *It is a deare yeere.*

Whilest the Poet and *Periander* thus conferred, *Zabulon* the Iew came vnto them; who told *Periander*; that this euening he would cause him to see, there, *Hypolita* of Ferrara, which was one of the fairest women of Italy. *Periander* promised him to go thither: which he neuer would haue done, if, like as *Zabulon* had informed him of the parties beauty, hee had also told him of her conditions. For *Perianders* great honesty would not suffer him to goe to base things, were they neuer so faire; It seeming that heerein, as in all other qualities, Nature had made her equall with *Auristela*: from whom he stole, to go and see *Hypolita*; whither the Iew brought him, rather by deceit, then for any affection that *Periander* had thereunto.

CHAP. VII.

Of the danger Periander fel into, in the house of the Courtizan Hypolita of Ferrara.

Many faults are couered by good education, pompous apparell of the person, and rich ornaments of the house; because it is not possible that good bringing vp should offend, or braue apparell displease, or that rich

orna-

ornaments of the house should not giue contentment. *Hypolita* enioyed all these; a Courtisan Lady, vvho in wealth was another *Flora*, and not inferiour vnto her in beauty, or courtesie; being well beloued of all that knew her, because she enchanted with her beauty, made her selfe esteemed for her riches, and adored for her courtesie. When Loue apparelleth himselfe with these three qualities, he breaketh hearts of brasie, openeth purses of yron, and warmeth affections of marble: chiefly if flattery bee intermedled; a fit attribute for those who with deceitfull glances will expose their good parts to the view of the world. Neuerthelesse, not any of these things auailed with *Periander* in comming into *Hypolita's* house: But as Loue is wont to build his Engines on the harts that haue least care, he erected one that was maruellous, not vpon the affection of *Periander*, but of *Hypolita*; which had before seene him in the street, and so grauen his comely shape in her soule vpon the first sight, that to view him the better at her ease, and to haue entire possession of him whom shee had onely seene, shee had intreated *Zabulon* to bring him to her house: which shee had so well furnished, hanged with tapistrie and adorned, that it rather seemed a marriage-bed, then a receptacle for Pilgrimes. *Hypolita* had with her a friend, named *Pirrhus*, a Calabrian, a hackster, impatient, and wicked, all whose wealth consisted in the poynt of his sword, in the agility of his hands, and in the craft of *Hypolita*; vvho oftentimes obtained of her louers, that which shee desired, without imparting her fauors vnto them. But that which most augmented the benefit of *Pirrhus*, was the nimblenesse of his feete, which he more esteemed then that of his hands.

This fellow then being in *Hypolita's* house at such time as *Periander* and *Zabulon* came in, *Hypolita* tooke him aside, and said vnto him: My friend, get thee hence, and take with thee this chaine, which this Pilgrime sent mee this morning by *Zabulon*. Take heede what thou doest,
answered

answered *Pyrrhus*; for this Pilgrime as farre forth as I can vnderstand, is a Spaniard: and to take this chaine at his hands, which at least is worth an hundred crownes, before hee hath touched any thing of thine, I thinke it a great nouelty. Take the chain to thy selfe, sayd *Hypolita*, and leaue the care to mee to gouerne this Spaniard, and neuer make rellitution.

Pyrrhus tooke the chaine, which *Hypolita* had caused to be bought that morning to giue him: and hauing this bone in his throat, hee replied not a vvord, but departed from the lodging with more then an ordinary pase. *Hypolita* beeing ridde of this man, came to *Periander*, and with a maruellous good grace, cast her armes about his necke, saying: Of a certaine I will now see if the Spaniards be as valiant as they make themselves to be.

When *Periander* saw this boldnesse, he thought all the house fell vpon him; and gently putting her backe vvith his arme, thus spake vnto her:

Pilgrimes, though they bee Spaniards, are not bound to bee more valiant then others: but aduise your selfe vvherein you haue need of my valor, vvithout preiudice of eyther of vs, and you shall be obeyed without reply to the contrary.

Seeing you promise mee, answered *Hypolita*, to doe what I shall tell you without preiudice of any, enter with me into this Chamber, for I vvill shew you a Cabinet in particular.

Although I be a Spaniard, answered *Periander*, I am yet partly a coward, as are many others; and feare you more alone, then an army of enemies: Cause that somebody may conduct vs, and leade mewhere you please.

Hypolita called two of her maides, and vvith *Zabulon* vvho vvvas present at all these things, commanded them to be their guides into the Hall; which (as afterward *Periander* affirmed) vvvas the best furnished that euer he saw. There *Parrhasius*, *Apelles*, *Zenxis*, and *Thimantus* had their perfe-

perfectest workes bought with the treasures of *Hypolita*, accompanied with those of the deuout *Raphael of Urbim*, and of the Diuine *Michael Angelo*; in which riches, the wealth of a great Prince ought to appeare: for Kingly buildings, proud Palaces, magnificent Temples, and excellent paintings, are the proper and true ensignes of Princes magnanimity; and proofes in effect, which in despite of time, shew forth the magnificence of passed ages. O *Hypolita*, I wish that among so many portraicts, thou hadst onely one that might haue represented chastity vnto thee, and mooued thee not to tempt that of *Periander*: who in confusion and maruell went about looking what would bee the issue why shee shewed him these things; it seeming vnto him, that whatsoeuer hee had heard of the Gardens of *Hesperides*, or of the Magician *Falerina*, vvere nothing neere the pompe wherewith this hall was beautified. But in regard his heart vvas disquieted, and as it were betweene two preeses, these things appeared not so faire as they were: but contrariwise, vexed to see so many delights oppose themselues against his pleasure; putting apart all courtesie, he stroue to get out at the hall dore, & steale away. *Hypolita* perceiuing it, layd hold of his lether cloke which he wore; and as she endeouored to slay him, and he againe to escape, shee cried vnder his cassocke, the crosse of Diamonds, which till that time had beene saued from so many dangers; the brightnes wherof no lesse blinded her eyes, then loue had blinded her iudgement. And seeing that hee went away cleere, in despite of the sweet force wherewith shee would stay him, shee fell vpon an imagination, which if she had a little better fortified, it had not been well for *Periander*. Who hauing left his cloke in the hands of this new Egyptian, & coming into the street without cloak, without hat, and without staffe, to triumph ouer an enemy who could not be vanquished but by flight; she went to the window, and with great cries began to call to the people, saying:

stoppe my friends, stoppe this thiefe, who comming into my house as a Pilgrime, hath robbed me of a iewell that is worth a city. By fortune there were two of the Popes guard in the street, who had power to apprehend malefactors vpon the deed; who at the bare speech of *thiefe* abusing their authority, tooke *Periander* prisoner; and hauing found the crosse of Diamonds at his bosome, tooke it away, & marked his clothes with the signe of the crosse, to shew that he had stollen that which they had taken frō him. *Periander* seeing himselfe crossed without a crosse, said to the Guard which had apprehended him, in their owne language, that hee was not a theefe, but an honest man, and of quality; that this crosse was his owne, that *Hypolita* was vnable to make any so rich, praying them to bring him to the Gouvernour, before whom hee hoped briefly to iustifie the truth of the fact. With these words vttered in their owne tongue, which is wont to reconcile those that know not one another, and some money which he offered them; the Guard let *Hypolita* cry while shee list, and brought *Periander* before the Gouvernour. Which when *Hypolita* saw, shee went from the window, and scratching her face, said to her seruants. Alas my friends! what haue I done? I haue afflicted him whom I thought to velcome, offended him whom I vould serue, and made him to bee taken prisoner as a theefe, vvho hath stollen away my soule. See, what kinde of vvelcome is this, to make a free-man to bee imprisoned, and to defame his honour! And telling them how the Popes Guard led the Pilgrime to prison, commanded her Caroch to be made ready, for shee would goe and declare his innocency, and charge her selfe with that vvhich shee had spoken contrary to truth: for her heart vvould not suffer to see the apples of her eyes to bee beaten, and shee had rather to appeare a false accuser, then cruell; because nothing could excuse her cruelty, but Loue would excuse her accusation, who manifesteth
and

and bewrayeth his desires by a thousand follies, and doeth ill vnto those very same persons whom hee wisheth vwell vnto.

When shee came to the Gouvernours house, shee found him with the crosse in his hands, examining *Periander* vpon the fact; who seeing *Hypolita*, said vnto the Gouvernor: Sir, this Lady which cometh heere, saith that I haue robbed her of this crosse which you hold. I will confesse that it is true, if she can tell me what materialls the crosse is of, what it is worth, and of how many Diamonds it is made: for if the Angells haue not informed her, or some other spirit that knoweth it, shee cannot come to know so much, because she neuer saw it but once vpon my breast.

What answer makes the Lady *Hypolita* hereunto, said the Gouverneur, couering the crosse, that shee might not take the markes thereof. *Hypolita* answered; In saying that I am amorous, blinde, and foolish: This Pilgrime shall be discharged, and labide the punishment vvhich my Lord Gouverneur will impose vpon mee. And thereupon she told from point to point al that which had happened betwixt her and *Periander*. The Gouverneur marvelled not at this loue; for amorous and wanton follies are peculiar to such kinde of subiects: but he wondred at the boldnes of this woman, whom he sharply rebuked; & intreating *Periander* to forgiue her, he restored to him his crosse, and set him at liberty, without any letter written concerning this cause, which was no small good hap. The Gouverneur would knowe who the Pilgrimes were, who had giuen so faire chaines in earnest for the portraict of *Auristela*, & who this *Auristela* & himselfe vvere. Whereunto *Periander* answered: This *Auristela* is my sister, this pourtraict is her resemblance. The Pilgrimes which haue giuen these pledges, can giue others besides of farre greater value; this Crosse is mine, and when time and place shall serue, and that necessity shall compell mee to declare

my name, I will tell it; for to manifest the same at this present, is not at my will, but of my sister. I haue bought this same portraict of the painter who had it in possession, without inhanſing the price in the buying, which is grounded rather in phantaſie and wilfulneſſe, then vpon reaſon. The Gouvernour ſaid that he would haue the picture at ſuch price as it coſt, that by his meanes might be added to the maruels of Rome, one thing that ſhould aduantage it aboue the moſt excellent tables which made it famous. I will beſtow it vpon you, answered *Periander*, becauſe I thinke in giuing it to ſuch a maſter, I doe thereunto all the honour that is poſſible to be done. The Gouvernour thanked him, and at the ſame time enlarged the Pilgrime Princes, redeliuered their chaines, and reſerued the portraict for himſelfe; becauſe it was reaſonable that ſomewhat ſhould fall to his ſhare.

CHAP. VIII.

How Hypolita, the Conrtizan, inchanteth Auristela, through the meanes of Zabulons wife the Jew.

H*ypolita* returned to her houſe with greater conſuſion then repentance, and no leſſe penſiue then amorous: for though at loues beginning, diſdaines may extinguiſh it, yet thoſe of *Periander* did more ſtrongly kindle hers, and more liuely enflamed her deſires. It ſeemed vnto her, that a Pilgrime ſhould not be of ſuch hard braiſſe, but that he ſhould be mollified by the good intertainment which ſhee purpoſed to make him. And reaſoning in her ſelfe, ſhee ſaide: If this Pilgrime were poore; hee would not weare ſo rich a croſſe, whereof the Diamonds evidently declare the value. For which cauſe this ſtrong rocke is not poſſible to be taken by famine, but there are other
ſtrata-

stratagems and policies to be put in practice. Might it not be possible that this young man hath his minde placed elsewhere, and that this *Auristela* is not his sister? O my God, it seemes that in this poynt I haue lighted vpon the meanes of my redresse: Goe to then, let *Auristela* die: let vs discover this enchantment: let vs see, the sorrow and feeling which this heart of rockes will haue: let vs put this designe in practice: let vs take this sunne from *Perianders* eyes; and see if vpon failing of her beauty, this first cause of his loue, his loue may faile: for it may be, in giuing vnto him that which I shall take from him, in depriving him of *Auristela*, it may come to passe that hee vvill change his humour, and become as pleasant and amorous, as hee is now cruell and sauage. At the least I will make a triall; holding my selfe to the common saying, that It is no hurt to assay such things as discover some tracke of profit.

Being something comforted in this imagination, shee came to her house, and there found *Zabulon*; whom shee made acquainted with her purpose, knowing that hee had a wife, who in reputation, and effect, was the greatest forceresse in Rome: and first hauing made vvay by gifts and promises, prayed and coniured him to doe so much with his bedfellow, not that she should alter *Perianders* minde (for she knew well, that it was impossible) but that shee should make *Auristela* sicke, and vvithin a certaine terme kill her, if need should require (vvhich *Zabulon* said was easie to the power and science of his wife) hee receiued I know not how much for the first payment, and promised that the next morning *Auristela's* health should beginne to empaire. *Hypolita* not onely filled *Zabulon* with gifts and promises, but adioyned threatnings in case he put not his word in execution: for presents and threats induce a lew to promise and execute all things impossible.

Periander made relation to *Crobianus*, *Ruperta*, *Auristela*,
B b 3

Stela, and *Constance*, of his imprisonment, the loue of *Hypolita*, and the present which he had made vnto the Gouernour of *Auristela's* picture ; who was not well content with the courtifans loues, because she had heard say, that this was one of the fairest women of Rome, the most liberall, the richest, and discreetest. And iealous louers make a mountaine of a mouse, though it bee no bigger then a Flies foot : and when discretion taketh hold of the tongue that it dares not complaine, it fethereth and tormenteth the soule in the straight bonds of silence, making it euery moment to seeke some issue to relinquish the body. It hath beene said before, that the best remedy of iealousie is, to heare the excuses and iustifications of those that cause it : which when they are not receiued, let them no further make reckoning of life ; which *Auristela* would sooner haue lost a thousand times, then frame one onely complaint of *Perianders* fidelitie.

This night was the first that *Bartholomew* and the Talaerane woman went to visit their masters : and though they were out of prison, yet they were not free ; but tied in harder chaines then before, namely, marriage, which they had contracted together : for the death of the Polonian had set *Louyse* at liberty, & his destiny had brought him to Rome in Pilgrimage ; where he found that which he sought not, in stead of returning to Polonia, as *Periander* had aduised him being in Spaine.

This same night, *Arnaldo* came to see all these Ladies, and tould them what things had befallen him in coming backe to seeke them, after he had appeased the troubles of his Kingdome. Amongst other things hee tould them, that he came backe by the Hermits Iland ; vvhêre he found not *Rutilio*, but another Heremite in his place, who informed him that *Rutilio* was at Rome. Hee sayd also, that hee had beene at the fishers Ile, and had there found *Seluyana* & *Leonia* at liberty with their husbands, being in health and merry ; as also all those who had embarked

barked with *Periander*. He also related, how hee heard say that *Policarpus* was dead, and that *Synfrosa* would not marry. That the barbarian Ile was repeople, and how the inhabitants confirmed themselves in beleefe of their false prophecie. Also that *Maurice*, his daughter *Transilla*, and *Ladislus*, his sonne in lawe, had left their country, and retired into England. He said also that hee had seene *Leopoldus*, who, to leaue a successeur in his Kingdome, was married, and had pardoned the two traitours whom he led prisoners when *Periander* and the fishermen met him: to whose courtesie he acknowledged himselfe to be greatly obliged. And amongst the names which hee was constrained to mention in his discourse, he sometimes touched those of *Perianders* parents, and sometimes those of *Auristela*; which moued their hearts, and reduced to memory, as well their high estate, as their misfortunes. He told them that in Portugall, and principally in Lisbon, their pourtraits were much esteemed, that they had left France full of their reputation, and that *Crobianus* had gotten a renowne to be generous and prudent in the choice he had made of his wife. That in Luques they talked of nothing else, but the strange policie of *Isabell Castrucio* with *Andrew Marullus*: whereby in counterfainting a diuell, she now led the life of an Angell. He declared how the fall of *Periander* was held for a miracle; and said also, that he had found a yong Pilgrime, who was a Poet, who would not come forth with him, for that he would goe at his ease; and was composing a comedy of the adventures of *Periander* and *Auristela*: which he knew by heart, by meanes of a Table which he had seene in Portugall where they were painted, & that he had a firme purpose to marry *Auristela* if shee would.

Auristela thanked him for his good will; and thereupon offered to giue him a suit of apparell if his were torne: because the desire of a good Poet deserued a good paiment.

Hee also said, that hee had bene in the house of *Constance* and *Anthony*, and that his parents and grand-fires were in good health; and onely troubled for the absence of their children, and because they heard no newes of them; desiring their returne, at least of *Constance*, to marrie her with the Earle, who herein would follow the wise election of his brother: whereat all the company were exceeding glad, especially *Auristela* and *Periander*, who loved her as their sister.

Arnaldo related also vnto them, how in France he had found *Renatus* the French Knight, vanquished in combating for a good cause, and afterward victorious by the conscience of his enemy. Fewe matters remained in effect of those we haue recounted in the proesse of this history, vvherein hee had bene present, but hee brought them to memory, not forgetting the pourtrait of *Auristela*, which *Periander* kept backe against the Dukes vwill and his, and vvhich hee much desired to recouer out of his hands; although lest he should anger *Periander*, hee said he would dissemble the vvrong vvhich was done him in this behalfe. I would haue rendred the same vnto you before now, said *Periander*, if I knew that it were yours. Fortune and the Dukes diligence gaue it vnto him: you tooke it from him by force, or at the least by surprise: vvhwherefore you haue no occasion to complaine. Louers are bound not to iudge their causes by the measure of their desires, neither should they satisfie them to reasons preiudice. Neuerthelesse, I will take a course, that you resting contented, the Duke shall be satisfied, by giuing the pourtrait vnto my sister *Auristela*; to vvhom it belongs rather then to any other. *Arnaldo* paid himselfe vvith this reason, and *Auristela* herselfe was heerevvith pleased. Heereupon his discourse ended: and the next day morning began the enchantments and witchcrafts of the malicious *Julia*, the wife of *Zabulon*, to work on the bodie of *Auristela*.

CHAP. IX.

Of the dangerous sicknes of Auristela : and how the Duke of Nemours tooke his leaue of her.

Sicknes assailed not the health of *Auristela* face to face, for feare lest so many beauties should terrifie her deformity: but she tooke her by the backe, shaking her so often that morning, that she was constrained to keep her bed all that day. Immediately shee lost her appetite, the liuelineesse of her eyes began to die, and weaknes and decay (which in continuance of time are accustomed to happen vnto sick persons) extended themselues in a moment, ouer all the senses of *Auristela*; working the like effects vpon *Perianders*, who was troubled by reason of this accident, more then the rest; fearing with others all mischiefes possible, and especially such as vnhappy persons haue cause to feare.

It was not aboue two houres after shee fell sicke, but the naturall roses of her cheekes were of a leaden colour; the carnation of her lippes, wanne; and the pearles of her teeth, blacke: it seemed that her very haire had altered the colour, and the naturall position of her face vvas turned. Yet for all this, *Periander* found her nothing the lesse faire; because hee beheld her not on the bed where she lay, but in his soule where he had imprinted her.

The astonishment passed vnto the French Ladies: and the care, which all of them together had of *Auristela's* health, was so great, that themselues had need of some to take no lesse care of them. They called the Physicians, made choise of the best, at the least those which had the best renoune: for a good opinion makes the Physicke worke the better, and there are Physicians as well as soldiers who are fortunate. But neither their sufficiencie, nor good fortune auailed to any purpose: which made

Anthony

Anthony and *Constance* to despaire; and comfortlesse *Periander*, more then they all.

The Duke then, whose loue was engendred from the beauty of *Auristela*, as soone as beauty began to faile in her, loue beganne to die in him: for it was necessary that it should haue taken deepe root, to be extended vnto the graues brinke. There is nothing so faire, which in dying is not leathsome; and that which cometh neereſt therevnto is paine: wherefore, to loue things which are ill fauoured and in paine, seemeth to be supernaturall and miraculous.

Auristela in the end grew euery houre weaker & weaker, depriuing those that knew her of all hope of her recovery. Onely *Periander* abode firme, onely amorous, and alone with bould courage opposed himselfe to contrary fortune, and to death it selfe, threatening him in the person of *Auristela*. The Duke of Nemours waited fiftene dayes, to see if *Auristela* should amend: and in all that time not one day escaped wherein he asked not counsell as concerning her health; yet was viable to get any assurance of the Physicians, because they knew not precisely the cause of her griefe. Which when the Duke perceiued, and that the Angelicall brightnes of *Auristela* was conuerted into darkenes, one day going to see her in her bed where shee lay sicke, hee thus spake in the presence of *Periander*:

Forasmuch as fortune, Madam, hath beene so contrary vnto me, as to cut off my hope which I had to espouse you; before that despaire bring mee to tearmes of losing my soule, as it hath reduced mee to the point to lose my life, I am resolued to prouide for my fortune by some other meanes. My mother hath recalled me, and hath already prouided for me a wife: I will obey her, and vvith sorrow for your euill, beare away the memoriall of your beauty. And in saying this, some teares appeared in his eyes. *Auristela* either could not, or would not answer,

swer, because she would not faile in her words before *Periander*: but putting her hand vnder her pillow, shee drew forth the picture which *Periander* had deliuered vnto her, and rendred the same vnto the Duke: who in thankefulnesse for so great a fauor, kist her hands. But *Periander* reaching forth his, tooke the same, and said vnto the Duke: If it please you, my Lord, I most humbly beseech you to lend it vnto me, to accomplish my word which I haue giuen, which is no way hurtfull vnto you, but much to my preiudice if I doe not accomplish it.

The Duke, full of courtesie, gaue it him, making great offers to employ for him, his goods, his honour, and his life, and more if it were possible. And thereupon hee departed from them, thinking to see them no more at Rome; A discreet Louer, and it may be the first which made good vse of the occasion offered vnto him.

All these things might haue wakened *Arnaldo*, and made him consider on how weake a foundation his hopes were built, and that his voyages were badly enterprized, seeing already that death walked vpon *Auristelas* gowne: Also hee was in a great wauering, whether hee should follow the Duke, if not in his iourney, at the least in his intent, and returne into his kingdom of Denmarke. But Loue in his generous minde would not suffer him to leaue *Periander* without any comfort, and his sister *Auristela* at the poynt of death: whom he visited, renewing his first offers; with resolution to attend the time that should better his fortunes, in despite of all defiances that might befall him.

CHAP. X.

Auristela is delivered from the charme of Iulia: and of the discourse which shee held with Periander.

H*ypolita* receiued very great contentment, when shee saw the inchantments of the cruell *Iulia* were so apparent in preiudice of *Auristela's* health: for in lesse then eight daies, they had brought her to an estate so much different from that she was wont to haue, that now shee could no more be knowne but by the Organe of her voyce, which held all the Physicians in suspence, and made them all maruell that saw her. The French Ladies also were diligent about her health: whereof they had no lesse care, then if they had beene her sisters, especially *Felislora*, who loued her with a particular affection.

To be brieue, *Auristela's* infirmity came to this extremity: passing the limits of the own iurisdiction, it entred into the bounds of the next neighbours, and as *Periander* was neerer then any, so hee was the first that it encountered: not because the poyson or witchcrafts wrought in him directly as in *Auristela*, for whom they were made; but by reason that the paine which hee felt for her sicknesse was so great, that it caused in him the same effects that she had, and brought him to such weakenesse, that all beganne to doubt his life, no lesse then *Auristela's*. Which, *Hypolita* seeing, and that shee killed her selfe with her owne sword, touching with her finger from whence *Perianders* euill did proceed, she cured him, in recouering *Auristela*, who now weake and discoloured, looked for nothing so much as death: which shee prepared to receiue as a Christian, strengthening her selfe by the Sacraments, as one well instructed in the Catholike Religion. And so vvith necessary diligence, and the greatest deuotion possible, shee discovered the integrity of her life, declared

clared how apt shee was to take forth such lessons as had beene taught her at Rome; and resigning her selfe into Gods hands, qualified all motions in her spirit, and forgot all kinde of loue, greatnesse, and kingdomes.

But *Hypolita* perceiuing, as wee haue said, that if *Auristela* died, *Periander* would not be long aliue, shee had recourse to the Iewesse, praying her to moderate the charms which consumed *Auristela*, or to take them away all together; because she would not be so cruell at one blowe to destroy three liues: for if *Auristela* died, the like would happen to *Periander*; and if *Periander* should die, it were impossible for her to liue.

The Iewesse who had made *Auristela* sicke, onely at the request of *Hypolita*, vpon her intreaty made her well, as if sickenesse or health had beene in her hands, or as if all the euills, called the euills of punishment depended not on the will of God, who for chastisement of our faults, oftentimes permitteth sorcerers with charmes, enteredmedd with poysons, to kill whom they please, and at such time as they list, without that any helpe of man can auoyd this mortall effect; for that none knowes the cause, there being no other remedy in healing such euills, but in Gods mercy.

Auristela then ceased to empayre (which was the first token of her recouery) the sunne of her beauty began to shine againe vpon the East of her face, the roses againe began to appeare on her cheekes, and ioy to smile in her eyes; the shadowes of her melancholy vanished, the organ of her voyce returned, the corall of her lips reassumed the red colour, and her white teeth became pearles as they were before. To be short, in a small time shee was againe all faire, wholly pleasing, and perfectly well: and the like effects happened to *Periander*, to the French Ladies, and the residue, whose ioy and sadnesse went steppe by steppe with *Auristela's*; who thanking heauen for whatsoeuer shee had receiued from thence, eyther in health

health or sicknes, one day sent for *Periander*; and betwixt them two alone, spake vnto him in this manner:

My brother, since it hath pleased God that wee haue already liued two yeares together, as brother and sister, I desire that this felicity may proceed further, onely to be concluded by the date of our liues: for fortune if it bee durable, is the better: and it lasteth the longer, if it bee honest. Our soules, as you knowe, and as heere I haue beene taught, are alwaies in continuall motion; and cannot rest, but in God who is their centre. In this life the desires are infinite, and like linkes holding one another, doe make a chaine; which sometimes leadeth to heauen, and sometimes to hell. If you thinke this language to be none of mine, & that it surmounteth the capacity which my yong years and education could afford: knowe, that experience hath painted greater matters in the white paper of my thoughts; and principally this, that the chiefest glory is, to see and knowe God: and all the meanes which guide vs to this end, are iust and holy; as charity, chastity, virginity, and others. As touching my selfe, I am of this minde, and beleue assuredly, your loue towards me to be so great, that your will is answerable to mine. I am heire of a Realme: you knowe already, that my mother sent me to the King, your fathers house, to bee in security from the warres which she feared. From this first voyage hath ensued that which I haue made with you, and that in such subiection to your will, that I haue not transgressed the same in one onely point. You haue beene my father, my brother, and my stay; and finally, my protecting Angell, my keeper, and my master; seeing you haue conducted mee into this city, where I haue beene taught to be a Christian. I would now (if it were possible) goe directly to heauen without straying, without trouble, and without care: and this cannot be, if you will not restore that part of my selfe which I haue giuen you, namely my word and affection to bee your wife.

wife. Render vnto me, my Lord, this word, and I vwill strue to loose the affection, though it be by force : for to obtaine so great riches as heauen, all that is in the earth ought to be left, euen the parents and husbands. I vwill not forsake you for another: he for whom I leaue you is God, who will giue himselfe vnto you ; and by this recompence, the losse which you shall make in me, shall be infinitely surmounted. I haue a young sister whose beauty is not inferior to mine, if I may say I haue any : you may marry her, and possesse the kingdome that to mee belongeth ; and so making my purposes happy, you shall not be deceiued in your owne. Wherefore, my brother, hold you downe your head ? Wherefore looke you on the earth, when I speak vnto you of heauen ? Do these words displease you ? Doe my desires seeme vnto you out of the way ? Tell me, that at the least I may knowe your will : it may be that I will moderate mine, and search some issue for your pleasure, that may be conformable vnto mine. *Periander* hearkening to *Auristela* with profound silence, made a thousand discourses in his imagination, all which resolued on the worst he could doe: which was to thinke that *Auristela* wished him no good; and that this change of life which she intended, was to none other ende but to finish his, in regard she knew that he liued not, but in hope to espouse her. This thought ouercame him with such violence, that rising from the place where hee sate, and taking occasion to entertaine *Felislora* and *Constance* that then came into the chamber, he went forth without speaking a word, and left *Auristela*, if not a Repentant, yet at the least, pensiue and amazed.

CHAP. XI.

How Periander departed from Auristela; and of that which ensued thereon,

WAters inclosed in a narrow vessell, the more they haillen to get forth, the more slowly they issue out; because the first, forced by the second, shut vp the passage, and so all of them are at a stay. The like happeneth to the words which an afflicted louer conceiueth in his minde, which running to the tongue all at once, hinder the vtterance, and cause that the discourse knowes not where to begin wherby his imagination might be vnderstood: and so oftentimes by silence he speakes more then he would. This was verified by the small acceptance that *Periander* made of that which *Auristela* had said: for beeing full of discourse, great with conceptions, and heaped with diuers and confused thoughts, hee went out of the chamber, without answering a word vnto that which *Auristela* had spoken vnto him. *Anthony* and his sister came vnto her, and found her like one newly awaked from a dead sleepe, saying to her selfe: It was ill done of me; but what skills it? Is it not better that my brother should know my intention? Is it not better for me to leaue the crooked paths, to follow the right way, which plainly sheweth vs the happy end of our iourney? I confesse, that the company of *Periander* shall be no hinderance vnto me to goe to heauen: but I know well that I shall better goe alone, and that I owe more to my selfe then to all others: and the interest of heauen must be preferred before parents; how much more *Periander*, who is nothing of kinne to mee?

Take heed, sister, said *Constance*, how you discouer such matters as may put you to trouble of minde. If *Periander* bee not your brother, the familiarity which you haue

haue with him is very great: and if he be, you ought not to be offended at his company. *Auristela* then comming to her selfe, and hearing vvhhat *Constance* said vnto her, would couer her fault, but knew not how: because that to solder the cracke of a lye, many others must bee told, vvhich leaue the truth in doubt, & giue life vnto mistrust. I know not, sister, answered she to *Constance*, what I haue said, nor if *Periander* be my brother or not; but I know well at least that he is my soule, and that I doe not liue nor breath but in him, containing my selfe neuerthelesse within the bounds of my duty, as a noble sister of a noble brother. I vnderstand you not, said *Anthony*: but seeing by your words it is a matter indifferent vvhether *Periander* be your brother or not, tell vs who you are if you may. For whether he be your brother or otherwise, at the least you cannot deny, but you are of a noble house, and bloud: and my sister and I haue not so little experience, that we should be astonied at any thing you tell vs; because that although we but now come out (if I may so say) from the Barbarian Ile, the trauels which you haue seene vs vndergoe haue beene our Masters in many things, and giuen vs knowledge of many affaires, especially in matters of Loue, which beare their declaration in themselves. What inconuenience is it, if *Periander* be not your brother, or if you be his wife? and that you haue shewed your selues chaste before heauen, and the eyes of all the world vntill this present? It is not requisite that all sorts of loue should be rashly attempted, nor that all louers haue their contentment lodged in enioying their mistresses, otherwise then with the powers of their soule, or the iust lawes of marriage. This being so, once more Madam, I beseech you to tell vs who you are, and vvhich is *Periander*, vvhich as farre forth as I could perceiue at his going from hence yesterday, seemed to haue fire in his eyes, and a bit on his tongue.

Alas, vnhappy that I am, replied *Auristela*, how much

C c

better

better had it beene to haue deliuered my selfe to eternall silence! because in holding my peace I had taken away the bit which you say he seemed to haue. Wee are vndiscreet, insupportable, and prattlers. I liued at quiet whilst I held my tongue: I haue spoken, and I haue lost my content. And to finish the losse thereof, and to the end the tragedy of my life may be concluded all at once, I desire you to know that *Periander* is not my brother, nor my husband, nor my loue, at least of those that running along the race of their pleasures, endeouour to stay themselves vpon the honour of such as they loue. I am a Kings daughter, and inheritor of a Kingdome: wee are equall in birth; in estate I haue some small aduantage; in affection, nothing at all. Heerewith our wills are answerable, and our desires behold each other with chaste effects. It is onely Fortune which troubles our hopes, and confounds our purposes. And because the nooze which *Periander* beareth at his throat wil stop my breath, I will tell you no more at this present: but I would pray you to helpe me in seeking him out; for since hee is gone without licence, he will not returne without search.

Let vs goe after him, said *Constance*, and we shall soone finde him; for the snares wherein Loue bindeth louers, will not suffer them to goe very farre from that vvhich they loue: you shall shortly see him, and shortly will ensue your contentment, if you contemne the scruples which enuiron you. Scorne them, and be married to *Periander*: for in espousing him, you shall stop the mouth of all such as would speake euill.

Auristela rose vp, and in the company of *Felislora*, *Constance*, and *Anthony*, vvent in search of *Periander*: and now they knew shee was a Queene, they beheld her with other eyes, and serued her with a greater respect.

Whilst *Periander* was sought for on the one side, hee laboured to goe farre from those that sought him on the other. Hee went out of Rome all alone, and a-foot, vn-

lesse

lesse vve should tearme company, bitter solitarinesse, and his sadde and continuall sighes vvwhich hee made, that ioyntly with his diuers imaginations neuer forlooke his thought. Alas (said hee to himselfe) faire *Sigismund*, a Queene by birth, fayre by the priuiledge and fauour of Nature her selfe, discret about discretion, and no lesse pleasing then discret: Alas, how little should it cost thee to hold me as thy brother? seeing that by mine actions, and by my thoughts I haue alwaies vvitnesst my selfe to be so. If thou wilt bee lifted vp to heauen alone, and as a mistresse, vvithout hauing thine actions depend on any other but God onely, and thy selfe, in a good time be it; neuerthelesse I vvould thou shouldst know, that thou canst not vvithout sin vvndertake the way which thou desirest, vnlesse thou thinke that a murderer is not a sinner. Hast thou so long time concealed this thought, to discouer it now, thereby to plucke vp my loue by the roots, and my soule vvithall? Farewell, I leaue thee for thine owne: abide in peace, my blisse, and knowe that the greatest thing which I could doe for thee is to forsake thee.

The night ouertooke him in these plaints: and vvithdrawing himselfe a little out of the way vvwhich ledde to Naples, he heard the noyse of a small brooke running amongst the trees, on vvwhose bank hee fell downe vvpon the grasse, imposing silence to his tongue, but not to his sighings.

CHAP. XII.

Wherein is declared who Auristela and Periander were.

IT seemes, that good and euill are so little distant one from the other, that they are as two lines concurring; which albeit they issue from different and seuerall beginnings, end neuerthelesse in one and the same point. We haue left *Periander* vpon the brink of a small brooke, in the brightnes of a cleare night: the trees alone bore him company, and a sweet and fresh aire dried vp his teares, the winde carried away his hopes of redresse, and hee remained with imaginations and feeling of his euill. When a strange voice came to his eares, whereunto hearkning with attention, he heard that it proceeded from two persons talking together (and that which put him into great admiration, was, that their speech was in the language of Norway) hee fitly placed himselfe behinde a tree, in such sort, that he and the tree made one selfe same shadow, held his breath, and vnderstood that one of them said thus:

Trouble your selfe no more to perswade me, that the whole day at Norway is diuided into two halues: for being led by my misfortunes, I haue remained there a time, and knowe, that the one halfe of the yeare is day; and the other halfe, night: and that so it is I knowe, but the cause why it is so I knowe not.

To whom the other answered: If wee come to Rome, by meanes of a globe I will make thee touch with thy hand the cause of this maruellous effect, which is as naturall in that climate, as it is naturall heere for the daie and night to consist of foure and twenty houres. I haue said also, that in the furthest part of Norway, almost vnder the pole Artique, is the Ile which is houlden the furthest
of

of the world on that side, whose name is Thule. *Virgil* calleth it Thule in this verse:

— AC TMA NANI.C

Numina sola colant : tibi seruiat ultima Thule.

This Ile is as great, or little lesse then England ; rich and abundant in all things necessary for mans life. More forward vnder the same North, about three hundred leagues from Thule, is the Ile called Frisland, discovered within these foure hundred yeares ; and is so great, that it makes a mighty Kingdom. The King of Thule is *Maximin*, the sonne of the Queene *Eustogonia*, whose father not long since is passed into a better life : who left behind him two sonnes, whereof the one is this *Maximin* before named, who is inheritour of the Kingdome ; and the other, a generous Prince called *Persiles*, extreame rich in natures gifts, and cherished of his mother aboue all that can be spoken. And I knowe not how to expresse vnto thee the vertues of this *Persiles* : wherefore it is better to leaue them as they are, then to lessen them by the insufficiency of my wit. For though the loue I beare him, because I was his schoolemaister, and haue brought him vp from his infancy, might induce mee to speake many things : yet it seemeth better to bee silent, then saie too little.

Periander heard all this: who iudged immediately, that he which spake of him in so good tearmes, could bee no other then his master *Serafides* ; and that hee which gaue care to him was *Rutilio*, by his voice, & the words which from time to time he answered him. I need not tell you whether hee wondered at this meeting, and especially, when he heard *Serafides* thus proceeding :

Ensebia Queene of Frisland, had two daughters, of extreame beauty ; principally the eldest, called *Sigismunda* : for the other is called *Ensebia*, as her mother. All the beauty which nature diuideth into all parts of the earth, was ioyned and gathered together in the perfection of

Sigismunda. And I knowe not for what intent her mother *Eusebia*, taking occasion from the warres which her enemies were minded to wage against her, sent her to Thule into the power of *Enstoquis*, to the end she might be brought vp in her house, far from the perils and troubles of the warre. Although for mine owne part, I iudge that this was not the principall occasion why shee vvas sent; but to the end the Prince *Maximin* might bee enamoured of her, and take her to wife. For vvhath could be hoped from her extreame beauty, but that shee should change hearts of marble into wax, and ioine together extreames farthest asunder? as indeed the Prince hath beene so surprized with her loue, that I knowe he is ready to die for her sake. But at such time as shee arriued at Thule, *Maximin* was absent; vnto whom *Enstoquia* sent the pourtrait of *Sigismunda*, and the embassage of her mother: whereunto hee answered, that they should entertaine and keepe her to be his wife.

This answer serued as an arrow to pearce through the entrails of *Perfiles*: after hee heard it, he knew not how to heare any thing that might please him: he lost the gallantnes of his youth, shut vp in silence all the discourses which made him famous and welbeloued of euerie one, and aboue all came to lose his health. Hee was visited by Physicians: but as they could not knowe the cause of his euill, so they could not finde out the remedy. For in regard the pulses doe not shew the griefe of soules, it is difficult, and almost impossible to knowe their sicknesses. His mother, seeing her sonne at the point of death, not knowing what killed him, oftentimes praied him to tell her the cause of his griefe, the effects wherof he felt. And so much preuailed the perswasions and cares of this sorrowfull mother, that vanquishing the firme resolution of *Perfiles*, he confessed vnto her how he died for *Sigismunda*, and that hee was fully determind to yeeld himselfe to death, before hee went against the respect vvhich he

hee did owe vnto his brother.

This confession reuiued in the Queenes heart the ioy that was dead ; who gaue him hope of remedy, though it were with the expenſe of *Maximins* pleaſure : becauſe that to preferue the life , greater reſpects are to bee put back then the anger of a brother.

Finally, *Eufſoquia* ſpake to *Sigismunda*, ſhewing her what a great loſſe it were if *Perfiles* ſhould die ; a ſubiect in whom all the graces of the world kept their abode : whereas it was farre otherwiſe in *Maximin*, whoſe rough manners in a ſort made him odious.

Sigismunda, young, alone, and perſwaded, answered, that ſhe had no other will, nor other counſeller then her honour : on condition this were preferued, they might diſpoſe of the reſidue. The Queene embraced her, informed *Perfiles* of her answer, and agreed with him that they two ſhould abſent themſelues from the Ile before his brothers returne ; to whom they would ſay for excuſe when he ſhould not finde *Sigismunda*, that ſhe had vowed to goe to Rome, to be inſtructed in the truth of religion, which in theſe Northerne parts was a little erroneous. So, furniſhing them with iewels and bleſſings, the Queen diſmiſſed them, *Perfiles* hauing firſt ſworne to *Sigismunda* not to contradiſt her will in any reſpect.

Two yeares after, the Prince *Maximin* returned to his Kingdome, from the warres wherein he had continued in daily employment againſt his enemies ; hee enquired for *Sigismunda* ; and, knowing the cauſe of her voiage, reſolued to follow her. When his father knew his reſolution, he tooke me aſide, recommending to me the health, life and honour of his ſonne *Perfiles* ; and made mee to depart in ſearch of him, and to giue him warning vvhath the Prince *Maximin*, his brother, intended. Who after, went thence in two great ſhips ; and entring the ſtraights of Gibraltar, after many ſtormes hee arriued in the Ile of Tinacria, and from thence at the citie of Parthenope. He

is now sicke heere, hard by, in a place called Terrachina. As for me, from Lisbone where I landed, I haue learned newes of *Perfiles* and *Sigismunda*: for they can bee no other but a Pilgrimesse and a Pilgrime, of whose beautie there is so great talke: and if they be not *Perfiles* and *Sigismunda*, they must needs bee two Angels in humane shape. If, said the other, you had named them as vvell *Periander* and *Auristela*, as you call them *Perfiles* and *Sigismunda*, I could giue you good newes of them; because I haue knowne them many a day, and haue passed many dangers in their company. Straightway hee beganne to relate those which they had suffered in the Barbarian Ile; and certaine others, vntill it was day.

Periander, not desiring that they should finde him there, left them alone, and returned backe to seeke out *Auristela*, to tell her of the comming of *Maximin*; and take counsell what was best to be done to eschew his indignation; accounting it as a miracle, to haue been informed after such a sort. And so, filled with new thoughts, he turned the hopes of his desires wel-nigh lost, vnto the eyes of his repentant *Auristela*.

CHAP. XIII.

The continuation of Perianders and Auristela's history, received by Serafides, Perianders Governour, to Rutilio.

A*uristela* hauing spoken (as wee haue said) vnto *Periander* (and being satisfied in herselfe by declaring her will vnto him, with assurance of the Empire vvhich shee had ouer his) in stead of the answer shee looked for, had occasioned him to depart out of Rome without bidding her Farewell: whereupon happened vnto him that which we haue declared. He knew *Rutilio*, who tould his master *Serafides* all the history of the barbarous Iland, & the

the suspicion he had, that *Amistela* & *Periander*, were *Perfiles* & *Sigismunda*. He told him also that without doubt he should finde them at Rome; whither, he knew before, they travelled vnder the name of brother and sister. Hee often demanded of *Serafides* the manners and conditions of the people inhabiting these Ilands so remote. *Serafides* told him, that beyond Thule which is commonly called Island, and is holden the vttermoſt in all the Northerne seas, there was yet another Ile named Frisland, no lesse then Sicily; which was discovered in the yeare one thousand three hundred and fourescore, by *Nicholas Temo* a Venetian, and till then vnknowne to all antiquity; wherof *Eusebia* the mother of *Sigismunda* was queen. There is, said hee, another Ile besides, in greatnesse not much lesse, and almost alwaies couered with snowe, named Groenland, on a point whereof is founded a Monastery of Saint *Thomas*: wherein there are religious persons, both French, Spanish, Italian, and Latines; vvhich teach their language to the chiefeſt of the Ile, to the end they may be vnderſtood in ſailing among these nations. Vpon the top of a ſmall mountain is a wonderful ſpring, vvhich yeeldeth forth ſuch aboundance of vvater, & the ſame ſo hot, that it goes to the ſea, and not only melts the ſnowe, but beſides vvarmeth it in ſuch ſort, that an incredible quantity of diuers kindes of fiſhes reſort thither: the fiſhing vvhereof nourisheth the monastery and the Iland men, vvho draw from thence all their reuenuewes. This fountaine engendreth alſo certaine ſtones, vvhereof is made a mortar as hard as marble, vvherewith they build their houſes.

I could fully declare vnto thee other matters concerning thoſe Iles, vvvhich make the beleefe of ſuch as knowe them not, to vvauer, and yet they are very true. All this vvvas aftervvard recounted vnto *Periander* by *Rutilio*, like as *Serafides* had told him. *Periander* ſaw himſelfe ouer againſt Saint Paul's Church; vvvhich is one of the moſt ſtately

stately temples, and (in a manner) the greatest of all Europe; where hee met a troope of people, partly a-foot, partly on horsebacke: and drawing nigh, hee knew that these were *Auristela*, *Felislora*, *Constance*, and *Anthony* her brother, with *Hypolita*; who, hauing vnderstood the absence of *Periander*, followed the steps of *Auristela*, by the counsell which was giuen vnto her by the wife of *Zabulon*.

Periander saluting this faire squadron, and reading in *Auristela's* face that her deuotion was past, her rigor qualified, and her eyes and heart more smiling and more amorous then euer, declared vnto her before all the company, what had befallen him this night with *Seraphides* and *Rutilio*. He said, how his brother, the Prince *Maximin* was sicke at *Terrachina*, hauing an intent to be conueyed to Rome, that hee might cause himselfe there to be more commodiously heeled, and to search for her vnder another name then hers. Hee asked counsell as well of *Auristela* her selfe, as of the rest of the company, what was best to bee done; for hee hoped not for any good acceptance from the froward conditions of his brother.

Auristela fell in a swoone at these newes vnlooked for: and in a moment all hopes vanished, as well to keepe her virginity, as to enioy the company of her well-beloued *Periander*.

All the other, debating in their imagination what counsell they might giue vnto *Periander*, the amorous *Hypolita* offered to bring him and his sister to Naples, and spend with them a hundred thousand ducats which her goods were worth.

Pirrhus the Calabrian, who was present, heard this offer, which was as much as if he had heard the irreuocable sentence of his death. For amongst *Ruffians*, it is not disdaine, but profit that breedeth ielousie, which at that instant possessed the soule of *Pirrhus* with a mortall hatred

tred against *Periander*; whose courtesie and perfection, though they were great, as wee haue said, yer seemed more perfect vnto him, then to all others: for it is the proper effect of ieaiousie, to make the actions of riualls seeme great and stately in the eyes of them that are ieaious. *Periander* kindly thanked *Hypolita* for her courtesie, but he receiued not her offer. The rest had no leysure to counsell him in any thing, because at the same time arriued *Serafides* and *Rutilio*; and the one and the other had no sooner beheld *Periander*, but they ranneto cast themselues at his feet, weeping both for tender affection and ioy. All the assistants were attentiu, and partakers of the pleasure of this greeting: Onely in the heart of *Pirrhus* melancholy had residence, which pinched him with hotter tonges then if they had beene of fire: and the griefe which he felt to see the honor done to *Periander*, came to such extremity, that without regard what he did, being blinded with passion, he laid hand on his sword, and betwixt the armes of *Serafides* thrust it with so much fury and strength into the right shoulder of *Periander*, that pearcing through and through, hee made the point come out at his left. The first which saw the blowe, was *Hypolita*; and her selfe was the first that cryed out, saying: O traitor, what hast thou done? why hast thou slaine him that so little deserued death? *Serafides* opened his armes, by this time red and warme vvith blood that was shed, and *Periander* fell into *Aurissela's*: whose voyce failing for her throat, breath for her sighes, and teares for her eyes, shee fell in a trance on the other side, her head hanging on her breast, and her armes stretched out on eyther part.

This blowe more deadly in shew then in effect, troubled the hearts of all the assistants, robbing the colour from their faces; and there painting Death, who by losse of *Perianders* blood entred into possession of his life, and by his end threatned the life of the rest, especially of *Aurissela*,

ristela, who had her soule already betwene her teeth. *Anthony* and *Serasides* cast themselves vpon *Pirrhus*; and hauing taken him in despite of his strength and fiercenelle, sent him to prison: and the Gouvernour, within foure daies after, sent him to the gallowes, as an assassinare; and by his death assured the life and liberty of *Hypolita*.

CHAP. XIII.

How the Prince Maximin, at his death, caused Sigismunda to be espoused to his brother Persiles.

THe certainty which we haue to enioy our pleasures is so incertaine, that none can promise vnto himselfe, therein, one onely poynt of stability. *Auristela* repenting that she had declared her minde vnto *Periander*, and seeing him departed, ranne after him, thinking that he vvas in repenting, to turne his vwill vvhither shee would; for shee imagined the same to bee the key of her fortunes vvheele, and the Sphere vvwhich mooued her desires: neyther vvas she deceiued, forasmuch as he was fully determined neuer to digresse from hers. Neuerthelesse, behold the guiles of vnconstant Fortune. *Auristela* in so small an instant as wee haue seene, perceiued her selfe a great way distant from that which shee had touched so neer at hand. She thought to laugh; but wept: she thought to liue; but dyed: shee beleeued to enioy the sight of *Periander*; and behold, the Prince *Maximine*, his brother before her eyes; who, followed with many Caroches, and an infinite number of people accompanying him, entred into Rome by the way of Terrachina: and passing before those which stood round about *Periander*, *Serasides* came to his Caroché, saying: O Prince, I hope but for a bad reward for the newes which I bring you. The wounded

ded man whom you see in the armes of this faire maide, is your brother *Perfiles*; and she the incomparable *Sigismunda*, found by your diligence in so rigorous a season, that they haue taken from you the occasion of welcoming them, and giuen you another to bury them and lament in their behalfe. They shall not die alone, answered *Maximin*, for I will beare them company; and putting his head out of the Caroach, knew his brother though hee were bloody. Hee knew also *Sigismunda*, though she had lost the colour of her face; for the sudden amazement which made her lose it, tooke not away her perfection: she was faire before her mishap, and most faire after it; for accidents oftentimes giue an encrease of beauty. He suffered himself to fall from his Caroach into the armes of *Sigismunda*, no more *Auristela*, but Queen of Friland, and in his imagination also of Thule. *Maximin* was come to Rome, beleeuing to finde there better Physicians then those of Terrachina, who foretold him that he should die before he came thither; more true and experienced in this, then in the science of healing.

Obserue then how before the Church of Saint *Paul*, in the midst of the plaine field, horrible death grappled with *Perfiles*, and buried *Maximin*: who, seeing himselfe at the last gaspe, with his right hand tooke his brothers left, and put it to his eyes; and taking his right hand with the left, ioyned the same to *Sigismunda's*, and said with a troubled & dying voyce: Close vp, O my brother, these eyes in a perpetuall sleepe; and with this other hand take fast hold of *Sigismunda's* with consent of marriage, vvhich I desire thee to giue her: and hereof, let the blood which thou sheddest, and the friends standing about thee be witnesses. The Kingdome of our Father is left thee, thou shalt inherit that of *Sigismunda*: soone mayest thou be whole, and long enioy them.

These vvords of his, so kinde, so ioyfull, and so sadde, reuiued the spirits of *Perfiles*; who, obeying his brothers
com-

commandement, closed vp his eyes ; and betwixt sorrow for his death, and ioy for his marriage, gaue his hand to *Sigismunda*. *Maximin*, being dead, was carried into *S. Pauls Church*, and *Perfiles* was conducted to Rome in his Caroach, that his hurt might be cured, where hee found no more *Delesire*, nor *Belarminia*, who were gone into France with the Duke. Vee need not aske how sensible this new and strange mariage of *Sigismunda* vvas to *Arnaldo* : how much hee sorrowed for the time which hee had bestowed without profit in her seruice : but that which most pearced his soule, was, that hee had despised the counsell and reasons of the foule-mouthed *Clodio* ; whereof hee made now so manifest a prooffe, to his extreame griefe. He became so confounded and astonished, that hee was minded to depart from Rome without speaking to *Perfiles*, or to *Sigismunda* : but considering what personages they were, the excuse they had, and that this aduenture was onely referued for them, he resolued to see them. He was receiued with all the excuses and complements that they could make : and something to aswage his griefe, and leaue him the lesse occasion to complaine, they offered him in marriage the infant *Eusebia*, sister of *Sigismunda* ; whom hee accepted with a good heart, and would haue gone with them into their Kingdome, had it not bene for his desire to returne to his owne, to make his Father acquainted with his marriage : for it is reason that children should submit their wills to those of their parents. He assisted, in curing the wound of his brother in law that should be : and leauing him sound, went into Denmarke to provide & prepare for his spouses entrance. *Felislora* determined to marry with *Anthony*, because shee durst not liue amongst the kindred of the man whom he had slaine. *Crorianus* and *Ruperta* hauing ended their pilgrimage, returned into France, well bearing in minde how to relate the successe of the feined *Auristela*. *Bartholemew Manchego*, and the Castilian *Louyse* vent to Naples,

ples, where it vvas reported that they made a wicked end, because they had not liued well. *Perfiles* left his brother at *S. Paul*, tooke with him all his seruants, returned to visit the temples of Rome, made great cheere to *Constance*, to whom *Sigismunda* gaue her crosse of Diamonds, and kept her company till she was married with the Earle her brother in Law: And hauing kissed the Soueraigne Bishops feet, accomplished her vow, and giuen rest to her minde, shee liued in the company of her husband *Perfiles*, til she saw in her nephews a long and happy posteritie.

*The end of the Travells of Perfiles and
Sigismunda.*

FINIS.

Book 1. The first part of the life of
the said woman, who was reported to be
a virgin, and was not lived well, as she
was reported to be, but she was a
woman of low estate, who was
in the city of Rome, made great
noise to whom she was given her
and her company till she was married with the
her brother in law: And having killed the
said brother, she was accomplished her
and given to her husband, as she
in the company of her husband
to the law in her
and her husband and her
by the law.

1111

C 4918
56479 SL

REPRODUCED FROM THE COPY IN THE
HENRY E. HUNTINGTON LIBRARY

FOR REFERENCE ONLY. NOT FOR REPRODUCTION